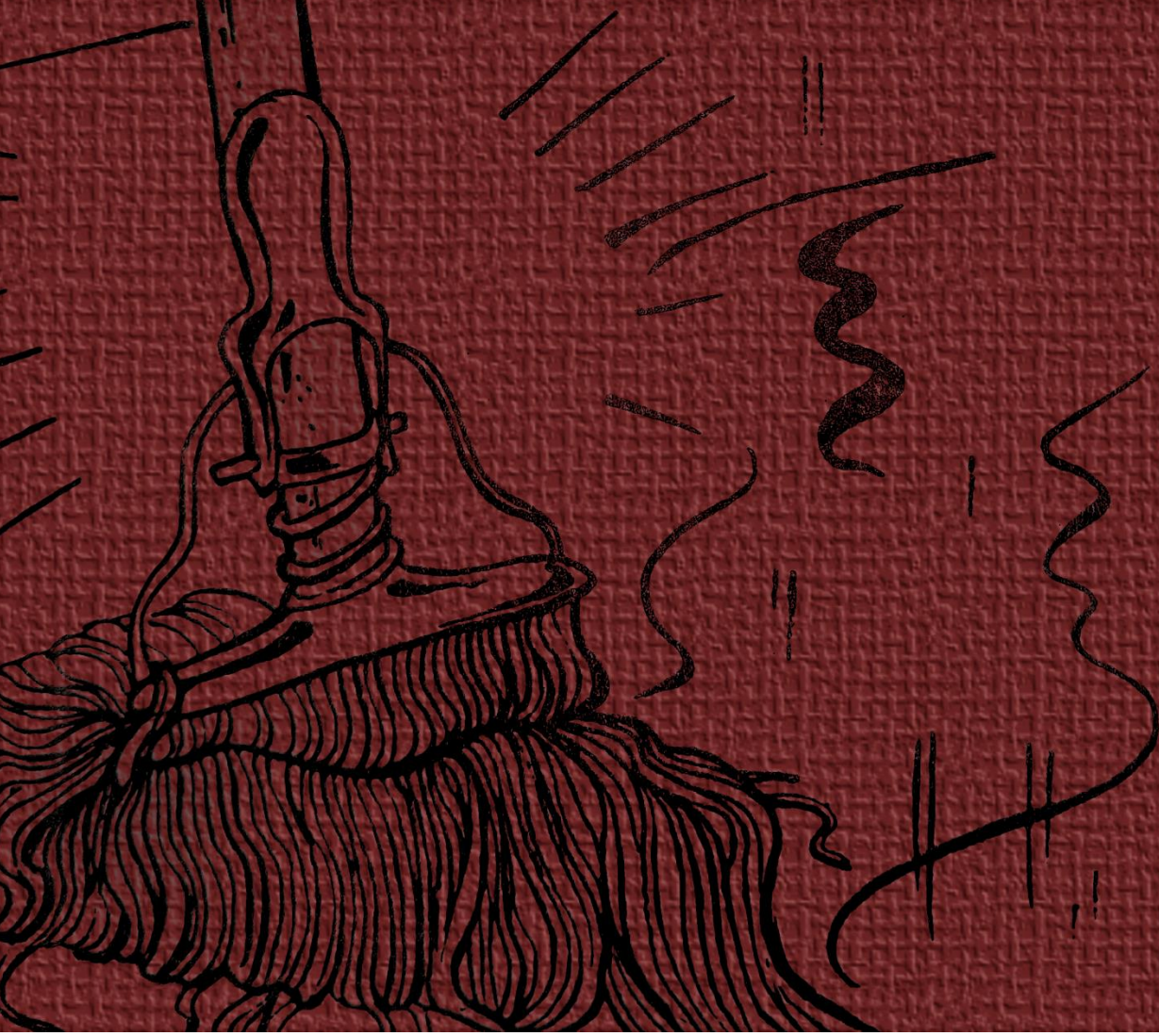


The Mop!

By Moses David



The MOP!



THE MOP VOLUME 1

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Page	Category
1	1. Administration & Organization
11	2. Alcohol
14	3. Astrology
18	4. Automobiles
20	5. Backsliders & Prodigals
31	6. Boldness/Shyness
35	7. Change
40	8. Chastening
48	9. Children
68	10. Choice & Decision Making
76	11. Christmas
80	12. Churchianity & Organised Religion
90	13. Comfort
111	14. Communion
119	15. Conviction/Compromise
126	16. Creation
134	17. Criticism & Gossip
140	18. David
146	19. David Is
161	20. David Prophecies
180	21. Death/Life
191	22. Devil's Devices
199	23. Diligence in Business
211	24. Discipleship
216	25. Doubts
220	26. Education, Godly
228	27. Education, System
233	28. Endtime, The
235	29. Exorcism & Spiritual Problems
244	30. Eyes
246	31. Faith & Trust
265	32. Faithfulness
269	33. Family, Our
281	34. Fasting
284	35. Fear, Freedom from
291	36. Fellowship
295	37. FFing
307	38. Fight the Good Fight
321	39. Finances
327	40. First Place
332	41. Foolishness & Shallowness
337	42. Forgiveness & Mercy
345	43. Forsaking All
349	44. Freedom
353	45. Fruitfulness
358	46. Future, The
401	47. Giving
411	48. God

416	49. God's Way vs. Man's Way
424	50. Government & Materialism
444	51. Habits
445	52. Happiness & Joy
453	53. Healing
475	54. Health
479	55. Heaven/Hell
490	56. History
492	57. Holy Spirit
500	58. Home
502	59. Honesty/Dishonesty
508	60. Human Nature
511	61. Humility/Pride
527	62. Humour
529	63. Inspiration & Enthusiasm
534	64. Jealousy
540	65. Jesus
546	66. Jews
565	67. Judgement
570	68. Kindness & Courtesy
572	69. Kings & Supporters
581	70. Law of Love
588	71. Law vs. Grace
594	72. Leaders & Shepherds



Let all things be done decently and in order (1Cor.14:40).

1. What's everybody's business is nobody's business.
2. We can only do so much, so we have to do it where it counts & where it will go the furthest & accomplish the most!
3. Any general who doesn't know what ammo he's got or who's got it or where it's at is insane & he's going to lose the war!
4. The job of leadership is to put everybody to work at a job they can do, & keep them working & make sure it's done.
5. Leaders shouldn't do anything someone else can do!--Only the things that no one else can do but you! Otherwise you'll be busy doing everyone else's job but your own.
6. Be definite in your instruction & counsel & they will be definite in carrying it out!
7. You've got to keep your feet on the ground, even if your head is in the clouds!--And keep your heart right there in between to keep the balance!
8. To accept good advice is but to increase one's ability.
9. Being a good executive means you assemble your people and share with them and listen to them.
10. When it comes to things that are practical, the leaders ought to listen to their helpers!
11. Once you have given approval or okayed a project, you need to leave your co-workers alone and let them carry it out the way they think best.
12. If God Himself won't do all the thinking for us and expects us to do some for ourselves, then who are we to try to make all the decisions, do all the thinking, give all the orders, and carry them all out besides?
13. The job of the executive is to merely be the guy who keeps things moving and the power that must keep pushing.
14. A good executive should let his people do the work, recommend the work, initiate the work, and by all means carry out the work!
15. Any smart executive is going to pump people power!--He's not going to try to be the power!
16. The government must cooperate with the people, and the people must cooperate with the government.
17. No side is always all right and the other all wrong.
18. Every job of any kind has to have a boss, or you have chaos!
19. Training of men is the chief job of any executive & the best way to train men to do your job is to have them help you with your own work.
20. As General Patton once put it: "Don't tell a man how to do a thing. Tell him what you want done, & he'll surprise you by his ingenuity."
21. Deadlines can be lifelines!
22. Learn to organise, deputise & supervise.
23. Not all that matters is the man: The man must also have a plan.
24. The whole secret of freedom from anxiety of not having enough time lies not in working more hours but in the proper planning of hours.
25. You can spend days planning & thinking & programming, but if you aren't listening to God, it's a waste of time.
26. Where no counsel is, the people fall: but in the multitude of counsellors there is safety. Pro.11:14.

27. Without counsel purposes are disappointed: but in the multitude of counsellors they are established.
Pro.15:22.

28. Plan your work--work your plan.

29. Next to knowing all about your own business, the best thing is to know all about the other fellow's.

30. A company is known by the men it keeps.

31. Don't let your committee become a group that keeps minutes & loses hours.

32. A lot of people get through thinking before they think things through.

33. If you ask enough people, you can usually find somebody who'll advise you to do what you were going to do anyway.

34. Too many meetings are held each month for no better reason than that it has been a month since the last one.

35. Shorthand is a device used by secretaries to make you wonder what you really said.

36. It's "meticulous" when someone points out a spelling error in a memo. It's "nit-picking" if you wrote the memo.

37. An optimist is a guy who marries his secretary & expects to continue dictating.

38. Everybody's out litnessing & having fun, but the secretary's work is never done.

39. Any good secretary knows more about her boss's business than he does, and she should!

40. A good inspired secretary can make a great man out of almost anybody.

41. What's everybody's job is nobody's job.

42. God help us to avoid trying to operate any sinking ships or any ships that are bigger than we can handle.

43. The Lord is a very great Employer. He has this whole World at our disposal, so if work runs out in one place, we can always go to someplace else, since He's a multinational corporation & He has works all over the World.

44. It's a big job to do the initial organising & getting things in shape, but then it doesn't take too much work to keep it flowing smoothly.

45. When you've got a winning team of good staff members who know how to work together and who get along well together with as little personality friction as possible, try to keep'em together.--Nothing succeeds like success!

46. The formula for success is simply putting the right people in the right jobs, & then sitting on the sidelines & being a good cheerleader.

47. Don't spread yourselves out so thin that you risk losing some of the ground you've already gained.

48. Two men can do three times as much as one man.

49. Many hands make light work.

50. I use not only all the brains I have, but all I can borrow!

51. It is best for the chief executive to simply pump out the material: The counsel, the suggestions, the discussion--to pump it out of his people.

52. I believe in people power!

53. Pump people power!

54. Every government has to heed the voice of its minority as well.

55. When you can't say "no" for yourself, then you have to engage the help of others to say no for you.

56. Keep it small and simple!--And then almost anybody can run it, even the small and simple-minded!

57. Light is the task where many share the toil.

58. Keep work piled ahead of you. This puts on the pressure & forces you to work nearer your top capacity.

59. Plan your work, set goals, avoid distractions, work with foresight, read material that will help your work. Do the unpleasant job first. Make yourself work. Decide trifles quickly. Start vigorously & promptly, work for quality, use your spare time, make it a habit to do two things at once, train others to help you, work for the Lord & others, take on more work, expand your abilities, require production from yourself. Learn to like your work by making it a habit. Then you can play at your job.--It's fun!

60. If you really want to know how to get organised, this is the way: pray and let God lead first.

61. There's a place for everybody, & everybody ought to be in their place!

62. We want to have the right people in the right places for the right job.

63. I believe in people power!--It's just as necessary as paper power!--Because if we don't learn to lead people, our paper power will be nothing!

64. Nothing is particularly hard if you divide it into small jobs.

65. If I had the slightest doubt about it or hesitancy about any kind of a deal at all, let me tell you, I wouldn't sign one jot or one tittle on a contract.

66. I am a believer in punctuality, though it often makes me very lonely.
67. Every good king is surrounded by many counsellors who advise & counsel him what to do!
68. Don't neglect to communicate! No army can operate without communication! No body can move without coordination!
69. Technical perfection, Beloved, isn't what we need!--What we need is more heart, not just mere office efficiency.
70. You must realise how important it is to set down specific rules & a check-&-balance system so people can't make costly mistakes.
71. Every one of you leaders should be training two or three other people to do your job, sharing your secrets & formulas with them!
72. You're going to get more done if you will spend more time in that room alone with God, away from the maddening mob & with your paperwork.
73. Good business management & organisation as well as the Spirit is the life's blood by which this outfit operates.
74. Without the Spirit we're nothing, without the Lord we're nothing. No matter how good our business management & ability & leadership & organisation might be, without the Lord we'd be an empty shell, a bunch of dead machinery like some of these churches!
75. You didn't know this was a business? Well, it's a big business, a very important business, the most important in the whole World!--It's the Lord's business!
76. There's no reason why we shouldn't run the Lord's business just as well, if not better, than the World does theirs.--And that requires organisation & financing & management & salesmanship & equipment & personnel, & we ought to have the best. And I think we do, for the job we have to do!
77. We're not trying to cut down on the work & the ministries & the results, but we're trying to increase efficiency & effectiveness & fruitfulness in order to accomplish more with less to get a bigger job done.
78. We're trying to accomplish more with fewer people working more efficiently & effectively & fruitfully & profitably by doing a better, more efficient, more effective job, working harder with fewer to get more done, because indeed the labourers are few.
79. I keep a project chart on every project, every Letter, everything I'm doing & exactly what stage it's in.
80. I don't fret about the future, I don't worry about it. I just try to plan for it.
81. Records, stats, project charts & diaries are important.
82. If someone is doing the best they can & that is not good enough, we'll have to find somebody who can do better.
83. Every job requires a man first! You've got to find your man or woman, somebody who's got the vision & the faith & the burden for it.
84. Whenever it comes time to make a major move, it's also usually time to re-think the job you're doing & your personnel.
85. We have to get the army organised & together or how can it ever fight the battle if the trumpet gives an uncertain sound or they don't even know who's supposed to blow the trumpet or call the shots!
86. I like to set my sights high & aim at a goal that I know would be good if we could ever attain it. There's no use bringing our goals down to the level of little faith.--We should try to raise our faith to the level of higher goals.
87. Your organisation should have a check & double check system which makes sure that no stone is left unturned, & no item neglected, no job left only to one person's discretion without supervision.
88. You cannot neglect the seemingly more insignificant phases of your operation, not even one tiny member of the body, or the whole body will suffer.
89. We should never become so swamped in statistics that we lose an appreciation of the value of the individual.
90. An army whose communications are poor, with some sectors out of touch, is either not ready, or sorely weakened, for a new invasion.
91. Somebody's got to be responsible for every single job.
92. Schedules are always one of your major problems! The Lord Himself drew up a weekly schedule for us the very first thing after Creation!--"Six days shalt thou labour, & on the seventh, thou shalt rest"--(Ex.34:21)--A very good plan for us all!
93. Volunteers are always willing-spirited & always volunteering, whereas the slothful are always willing to loaf. So a schedule makes it fair or everyone & gives each person their proper training & experience.

94. In a schedule, every moment of time must be budgeted exactly, & every person must get his fair share of both burdens & blessings, so that none shall be overworked, overburdened, neglected in training, or permitted to waste time or do less than his share!

95. You should study carefully the qualifications, talents, skills, training, education, experience, & personal preferences of your co-labourers in the Lord, & try to give them not only the kind of work they're best fitted for, but also that which they would prefer & like & choose to do.

96. You ought to be willing to stand back & size up the situation & say, "I can do this, but I can't do that. I must do this, but I must not do that. This is my calling, but not that. These are my talents, but not those. This is what God wants me to do, but not that."

97. You need to create a machine that can run itself with you at the wheel & sometimes at the controls, an organisation that will operate on its own without you, so that things will carry on whether you're there or not.

98. Everybody's got his own job & everybody should have some say so, some authority.

99. I'm for the simplification of reporting & the cutting down of reports & the reading of them as much as possible.

100. Look at that garden out there. Apparently God's got this World pretty well organised but He put man in the Garden to tend it & keep it. (Gen.2:15)

101. We have found out that the more opinions we get on work projects, the better.

102. Every army needs some type of organisation, planning & attack so that we don't fall over each other by having too many in some places & not enough in others, so that we will spread out & recognise the needs on various fronts & shift personnel according to the need. As in any battle, as every commander knows, we must keep our eyes on all fronts & send help to those that need help & are weak, & take it from those that are strong.

103. What kind of an army would it be that was simply going by the old rulebook established centuries ago, without any immediate, present, direct communication with some kind of leadership such as its Commander-in-Chief right now?

104. Without personal, immediate, day-to-day, moment-by-moment direction from above, what kind of an army are we going to have?--What kind of a mess with every man doing as he pleases & what he thinks should be done & going his own way with no coordination, no organisation, no central leadership, no plan, no counsel, no communication & no specific direction?

105. The more we can push administration down to the local level, the better off the whole Family will be. Because when the Crash or the war or whatever is going to come next hits, they'll be able to carry on without us, & all we'll have to worry about is trying to get the Word to them.

106. Much more is able to get done by committee or small group more efficiently, so the less people you involve who really have no part in these deliberations, the better.

107. Meetings are often prayerful & inspirational as we study the situation, & a lot of what we do & say is sort of thinking on our feet.

108. In order to save the body, you sometimes have to cut off one finger at a time!--Because it's better to preserve the head & some of the body than try to keep the whole thing & have it starve to death.

109. It's not good to have just one man responsible for a job, since he's bound to make mistakes sometimes. At least one person ought to be checking on him! You can call it spying if you want to, but it's double-checking & it's much more foolproof than being proud.

(See also No. C, 22, 24, 26, 47, 50, 53, 54, 55, 58, 59, 60, 67, 76, 106, 107, 112, 129, 141, 155, 175, 176, 178, 210, 253, 297, 328C, 329C, 357, 580, 650, 653, 657, 659, 660, 663, 674, 683, 696, 832, 862, 871, 886, 888, 889, 896, 903, 932, 1046, 1050, 1051, 1070, 1093, 1115, 1212, 1276, 1320, 1323, 1417, 1433, *HH5*.)

110. Exo. 18:21 Moreover thou shalt provide out of all the people able men, such as fear God, men of truth, hating covetousness; and place such over them, to be rulers of thousands, and rulers of hundreds, rulers of fifties, and rulers of tens.

111. 2CH.19:6 And said to the judges, Take heed what ye do: for ye judge not for man, but for the Lord, Who is with you in the judgment.

112. PSA.112:5 A good man sheweth favour, and lendeth: he will guide his affairs with discretion.

113. PRO.11:1 A false balance is abomination to the Lord: but a just weight is His delight.

114. ISA.10:1 Woe unto them that decree unrighteous decrees, and that write grievousness which they have prescribed.

115. ACT.6:2-4 Then the twelve called the multitude of the disciples unto them, and said, It is not reason that we should leave the Word of God, and serve tables. Wherefore, brethren, look ye out among you seven men of

honest report, full of the Holy Ghost and wisdom, whom we may appoint over this business. But we will give ourselves continually to prayer, and to the ministry of the Word.

116. Act.14:23 When they had ordained them elders in every church, and had prayed with fasting, they commended them to the Lord.

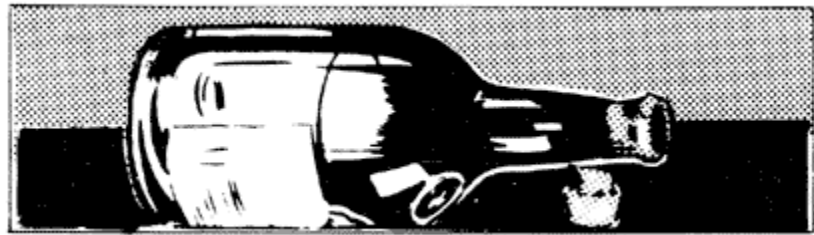
117. 1CO.12:28 And God hath set some in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities of tongues.

118. 1CO.14:26 How is it then, brethren? when ye come together, every one of you hath a psalm. hath a doctrine, hath a tongue, hath a revelation, hath an interpretation, Let all things be done unto edifying.

119. 1Co.14:40 Let all things be done decently and in order.

(See also EXO.18:13-26; NUM.11:16,17,24,25; DEU.1:9-17; ACT.6:2-6.)

2. ALCOHOL --{page 11}--



And wine that maketh glad the heart of Man, and oil to make his face to shine, and bread which strengtheneth Man's heart (Psa.104:15).

1. For medicinal purposes the Bible says take a little wine "for thy stomach's sake". It's also good for the hiccoughs & for a breath sweetener & antiseptic.

2. Too much wine invents nothing, it only tattles. It lets out secrets.

3. There's nothing like a little beer or a little wine to loosen your tongue & make you too glib & talk too much.

4. Champagne at night means real pain in the morning!

5. A glass of wine can make you talk silly, a glass of champagne can make you act silly & a glass of whiskey can make you be silly.

6. Alcohol preserves everything except secrets.

7. The best way not to drink too much is not to drink any!

8. For lovemaking, wine is great for women.--it gets rid of inhibitions. It's bad for men--it decreases performance.

9. We cannot have drunken officers & drunken soldiers who are apt to endanger the whole Family or Army & lay themselves open to a surprise attack of the Enemy that could virtually massacre their Unit or efforts, & wipe them out as far as their usefulness to the Lord is concerned!

10. If you are going to drink, then you can't very well fight as a soldier in the Lord's Army! You're more apt to be fighting with your fellow officers & soldiers instead.

11. If you are a soldier fighting for the Lord, I would say, "If you fight, don't drink, if you drink, don't fight!"

12. If there is any danger of your being excessive, simply forbid it altogether or ration it very carefully in certain amounts only, & have a stiff disciplinarian who can handle the bottle! Either that, or eliminate it altogether!

13. Excessive drinking has always been against our rules & policies. Anybody who breaks these rules can't be allowed to stay in the Family or in the Home, because he becomes an actual threat & danger to the Home.

14. Any Home that has a problem drinker, or anybody in the Home who is not willing to obey & be cautious & conservative in their use of wine, I think that, after sufficient warning, they'll have to be asked to leave.

15. I recommend that no Family Member have more than 8 ounces, or 25 centilitres of normal table wine per day, which is equivalent to 4 ounces of sherry or one shot of whiskey, or a great big mug of beer. That's all it ought to be, & you'll all feel better for it. That should be the Family ration in every Home, & if you manage to get any more or sneak any more, then you're breaking the Family rules & disobeying me & displeasing the Lord & you are going to be judged for it & rewarded accordingly & punished for it, I'm sure, by the Lord, & you will suffer for it. So please don't do it, or you're out!

16. Saint Paul said, "Drink a little wine for thy stomach's sake..."(1 Tim. 5:23), & I think "a little" means the less the better.

17. The major part of the alcoholic problems of the skidrows of the World would be solved by putting a drinking fountain on every corner! A lot of it is just plain simple thirst!

18. Perhaps you can double you ration in special parties, celebrations, etc., just don't start celebrating every night, please!

19. I suggest that nobody in the Family drink whiskey or any other strong drink unless they dilute it a great deal.

20. When Saint Paul said "a little wine", he meant "a little", not "a litre!"

21. Let's cut down on the drinking, & if you don't know how to cut down, maybe you'd better just cut it out altogether!

22. I suggest in any Home where somebody has a drinking problem, that they all quit & have no alcoholic beverages in the house whatsoever! We'll have to penalise the entire Home, & they'll all have to suffer with you who are guilty or help you who have a problem so you won't even have any in the house, & you can't even find any to steal!

23. Moses & David bless the wine that cheers the heart of David--that giveth his spirit freedom & openeth his mouth, that he may speak the Words of God!

(See also No. 856, 954, 1134, 1406.)

24. 1SA.1:14 How long wilt thou be drunken? Put away thy wine from thee.

25. PSA.104:14,15 He causeth the grass to grow for the cattle, and herb for the service of man: that he may bring forth food out of the earth; And wine that maketh glad the heart of Man, and oil to make his face to shine, and bread which strengtheneth Man's heart.

26. PRO.20:1 Wine is a mocker, strong drink is raging: and whosoever is deceived thereby is not wise.

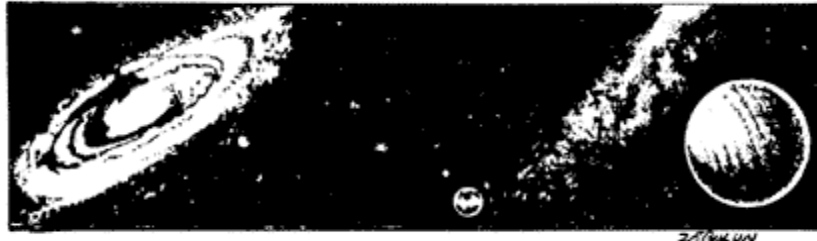
27. PRO.23:20,21 Be not among winebibbers. The drunkard and the glutton shall come to poverty.

28. HAB.2:15 Woe unto him that giveth his neighbour drink, that putteth thy bottle to him, and makest him drunken also, that thou mayest look on their nakedness!

29. EPH.5:18 And be not drunk with wine, wherein is excess; but be filled with the Spirit.

30. PHI.4:5 Let your moderation be known unto all men. The Lord is at hand.

31. 1TI.5:23 Drink no longer water, but use a little wine for thy stomach's sake and thine often infirmities.



Canst thou bind the sweet influences of Pleiades, or loose the bands of Orion? (Job 38:31).

1. I believe in the influence of the planets as a part of God's machinery to control the physical World & its system!
2. Life is a voyage on which you choose neither vessel nor weather, but much can be done in the management of the sails & the guidance of the helm.
3. You can overcome your environment & your heredity if you've got the guts & the faith & the push & the drive & the determination to do something about it!
4. Those people with astrological signs where intellect rules with so much self-discipline, self-control & mind over matter, are inclined & tempted to be the victims of the greatest sin of all, pride & self-righteousness!
5. Your personality is influenced by your ancestors, your zodiac & your environment, but it is up to you & the Lord what you do with it.
6. With a lot of self-determination & discipline & the Lord's help, you can pull yourself out of a real hole as far as your background or astrology is concerned!
7. Don't tell me you can't get along with someone because your astrological signs aren't compatible!--Jesus is greater than your signs & can overrule all of that!
8. If you can get people to believe in astrology, then they've got to believe in God!
9. You're born with certain characteristics according to your sign, but it is up to you how you use them & what you do with them.
10. In every (sun) sign there is a good side & a bad side...& what you are depends on which side you choose!--Whether you choose to be good or evil.
11. The influence of the stars is a part of His physical Creation and can be completely overruled and overcome by the spiritual power of His Spirit.
12. Stars are God's machinery to pass out personality!
13. Up in the stars, I think you'll find,
That life down here is all designed!
14. Astrology is a tremendous proof of the existence of God & a Divine Plan!
15. The heavenly spheres that God has made operate like the wheels of a great clock with perfect precision, virtually unvarying in course & speed & degree, so that these things can be calculated to the split second: Sunrise & sunset, phases of the moon, moonrise & moonset & tides & eclipses of the moon & the sun.
16. Anything that glorifies the marvels of God's Creation is not very much marvelled at or emphasised in school any more because it's too good proof of a Designer & Creator & Builder & Architect of the Universe! So they don't teach you the marvels & the wonders & the plan & the design--the intricate precision & the marvellous planning & perfection of everything--working just like clockwork, right on time!
17. These marvellous creations of God, the major astral bodies & solar systems such as the Solar System of our Sun & its planets & their moons & the Earth etc., as well as the stars & the constellations, have not changed for thousands of years since God first created them!
18. God's Creation is here to stay! His Earth, Sun, Moon & Stars & all of His marvellous wonders of His astronomical Creation are here forever!--They're going to endure as long as His Throne, which is forever, & they will still be of use to God in some way.

19. The Bible talks about the "sweet influences of Pleiades", one of the constellations, & "canst thou guide Arcturus & his sons"--which seems to be a wandering constellation, but travels throughout the heavens on a distinct orbit or path which scientists can calculate but can't guide, & still misses all the others! How about that! (Job.38:31,32.)

20. God made it so the heavenly bodies work perfectly & stay put where they belong & only orbit where they're supposed to be, in the paths they're supposed to follow, & at the speed they're supposed to go, so that they don't bump into each other & don't collide--except for some of the Devil's meteoric showers & some of God's signs, the comets.

21. Those constellations are out there as signs & influences upon the Creation of God. I was convinced as I saw the Heavenly City, its interior & those great revolving crystals that seemed like control centers etc., that all of these things are created for a purpose, for the governing of God's Creation & the control of God's Creation!

22. "Readest thou what sayest the stars? Knowest thou not that I am He that hath created them, and I see more than they can tell thee? Readest thou the stars? Readest thou the life of this My Aquarius that I have poured forth as water unto the World? Kiss thou his stars!"

23. God has ordained the stars & the planets to control & influence our lives & at least our personalities, if not actual events! You can certainly determine pretty much what a person is going to be like by the month in which he was born, believe it or not. Genesis 1:14 tells us that God made the stars & planets primarily for signs, and for seasons (not just Summer & Winter seasons, either!), and for days, and years...as well as for lights!

24. And did you know that "the stars in their courses fought against Sisera?" (Judges 5:20) Ecclesiastes 3:1-8 explains that God has a set time for everything.

25. It was even the proper reading of a star that led the Wise Men to Jesus' Birthplace, & Luke says that in the last days, "there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars" of the end of things, & the coming of the Lord! (Lk.21:25.)

26. We can admire God's glorious creation & we can wonder at its marvels, even the way God influences us according to His Will by the stars, a part of His great machinery for controlling the Universe & us.

27. Anyone full of the Spirit of God & in direct communication with the Creator can do ten times better than those who try to find out His purposes merely by reading His Creation, as Daniel 1:20 makes very clear.

28. It's amazing, & makes you praise God all the more for His wonderful Creation & how He runs it! Why not? If He didn't apportion personality characteristics like the balance in His Creation & other of its miracles by some scientific means, or spiritual means, if you prefer, then we might have all wound up like a bunch of robots, exactly the same, like some kind of identical, assembly-line productions!

29. In order to vary the kinds & types of people that He wanted living on Earth, & to properly proportion their personalities throughout all the varied hues of the spectrum of characteristics of the human race, as well as perhaps even the guidance of animal & vegetable creatures & their distribution & balance, why couldn't God use a very "scientific" system of control & apportionment for distribution & ordination & foreordination by means of some instrumentalities of His Own Creation, such as the stars!

30. Your sign is either positive or negative. You can choose the positives or the negatives, the good or the evil. You can choose the good & eschew the evil. That's what God has left up to your choice. And that's the evil the Devil brought into the garden, the choice of the knowledge of evil.

(See also No. 107, 123, 1307, 1308, 1309, 1310.)



The chariots shall rage in the streets, they shall jostle one against another in the broad ways: they shall seem like torches, they shall run like the lightnings (Nah.2:4).

1. The driver's seat is one of the most responsible and dangerous positions in the world! Take it seriously, and ask God for help!

2. The automobile did away with the horses. Now it's working on the rest of us.

3. The driver is safer when the roads are dry; the roads are safer when the driver is dry.

4. Don't drive as if you own the road; drive as if you own the car.

5. Drive carefully! Remember: it's not only a car that can be recalled by its maker.

6. Two of the best known finishes for automobiles are lacquer & liquor.

7. Seat belts are not as confining as wheelchairs.

8. Drive carefully: watch the car in back of the one in front of you.

9. Rhyme for pedestrian safety:

Bill looked, Joe didn't.

Bill is, Joe isn't.

10. Some rights are worth dying for. The right of way is not one of them.

11. Automobiles have killed more people than were killed in all of the wars of the World put together!

12. The best way to inspire courteous treatment by other motorists is to drive a police car.

13. If you drink don't drive, If you drive don't drink.

14. The trouble with a good many cars today is that the engine won't start & the payments won't stop.

15. Fast, reckless driving often leads to slow, soft music.

16. Sign on entering St. John, Indiana, USA: "Drive Carefully. See St. John, Not St. Peter."

(See also No. 150, 285, 807, 812, 831, 851, 921, 1024.)



The backslider in heart shall be filled with his own ways (Pro.14:14).

1. Backsliders don't have a chance, because they have run out on God!--They're strictly on the Devil's territory & he can attack them all he wants & give them what they deserve, what the mercy of God would have spared them from.

2. Don't take a Jonah on board or you'll sink.

3. When you look back you'll go back! You'll go the direction you're looking!

4. Backsliders are your stray sheep, they're prodigal sons & God still loves them.

5. If you hold one little thing back from the Lord, you're on your way to backsliding.

6. People can do less damage on the outside than on the inside.

7. God hates to see people's backs!

8. Judas never expected nor intended to betray the Lord, he just chickened out & went back & got mixed up with the wrong crowd!

9. As long as you've got any idea there's some place to go back to, you'd better go!

10. The Prodigal Son lost his birthright and inheritance, but he did not completely lose his place as a son.

11. God's law of progress is: If you don't keep on getting more, you'll lose what you've got!--If you're not progressing, you're backsliding!

12. A personal problem within can be a greater threat than enemies without.

13. Backsliders seldom ever backslide alone!--They almost always take others with them!

14. Backsliders become your very worst enemies and the most diabolical traitors to your cause!

15. The bird whose pinion was once broken, by the grace of God will fly even higher than before.

16. The worst things I've ever seen happen to people, were to people who went back on the Lord--backsliders!

17. There is no such thing as standing still! You're either progressing and have the products to prove it, or backsliding to oblivion!

18. There's no worse enemy than a former friend!

19. A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump, and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees! One rotten apple can spoil the whole barrelful if allowed to remain, and one gangrenous member can kill the whole body if not either healed or cut off!

20. Better an open enemy than a false friend.

21. Once you have the truth & reject it, then you are guilty, not just weak.--No longer an innocent weaker brother, but a guilty weaker brother.

22. It's so easy to make legitimate, logical, reasonable, acceptable excuses why you couldn't make it, & why you shouldn't be expected to make it, & in most cases most people will accept your excuses, because most people don't have faith either, & in excusing you, they're excusing themselves.

23. If you'll even start God's way, if you'll even turn toward Him & start trying to find your way home, the Father will come running toward you & take you in His arms.

24. I'd rather fight a dangerous enemy without than a pacified enemy within.

25. It's easier to fight the outside devils than the one that worms his way in through your own weaknesses & faults & failures. He can do a hell of a lot of damage outside, but he can do a hell of a lot more damage inside!

26. The quickest way to find out God's will is to get out of it, sad to say.

27. There's no stopping place when you backslide!

28. Once you start going the wrong direction there is no place to stop!
29. It doesn't matter how much you give a backslider, they always murmur.
30. It's like Achilles' heel: the weakness is always there, but you never see it until you put the pressure on!
31. I've never heard of a successful backslider yet, have you?
32. The backslider never wants to backslide alone.
33. The double-hearted and double-minded live in a constant state of indecision!
34. When people desert God, He deserts them.
35. One bad apple can spoil a whole barrelful! Better no apple at all than a bad apple spoiling others.
36. Backslider: saved from flame but not from shame.
37. Help us not to even look back, Lord, much less go back!
38. You'd better watch where you're going, or you'll go where you're looking!
39. It's better to have a defector, a spy, an unreliable traitor out of our midst than living with us!
40. Our worst enemies are those who come from our own ranks.
41. Saul's problem was that he was always being sorry, but never changing. He wasn't truly repentant, he wasn't sorry for the right reasons. He was just sorry he had done it because it was a serious, stupid mistake & he had been caught. He did not correct the causes & never had a definite change of mind or heart. True repentance is a complete change of direction!
42. When your bad points begin to outweigh your good points, then it destroys your usefulness and your effectiveness.
43. Don't think you can even get away with thinking about your former System home or loved ones! It's a dangerous business to even keep up close correspondence with a family that's not giving all or forsaking-all for God, except just enough to keep them pacified & from becoming a danger to God's work. Watch out about that!--Give'm the works, tell'm all, & if they don't follow, don't keep wasting your strength & wasting your time & casting your pearls before swine!
44. If you go back, you've lost the birthright, you've lost your inheritance, you've lost the blessing, you've lost the joy, you've lost everything but your Salvation, if you're saved. Still, I don't believe anybody that's genuinely saved can permanently go back. I believe sooner or later they'll come back to the Lord & His Service, unless God has to kill them & remove them to keep them from being a stumbling block.
45. You can't go back alone, Beloved. Everybody that goes back affects somebody, discourages somebody, disheartens somebody, puts another nail in somebody's coffin.
46. The worst enemies we ever had & still have were once one of us. They make the Devil's own best tools. They are ideal for the Devil's witnesses. They were amongst us but they were not of us, & this is why they went out from us.
47. Are you living in the Word & Work & Love of the Lord & Family so deep you could never think of leaving? Are you so busy for Him & others that you've no time to hear or ponder the Devil's doubts, lies & temptations?
48. God bless you & keep you from falling into the same temptation which led Satan himself astray--pride, jealousy, covetousness, possessiveness.
49. It's so sad & so pitiful, these Sauls, the failures, the disappointments to God! They must truly break the heart of God like they break my heart.
50. You can't keep complaining & criticising & murmuring & bellyaching about things & keep God's Holy Spirit on you for your job, you just can't do it. Like Saul, the Spirit left him & he was so damn hard & cold he didn't even know it was gone! He didn't even know he had lost it, think of it!
51. That is the most miserable person in the World, the traitor, the betrayer, backslider! He can't even stand to live with himself any more, much less with either the Family or the System.
52. Nearly every backslider is convinced they're right. They have rejected & resisted the Truth so long & they're so thoroughly deluded & so thoroughly deceived themselves they even believe their own lies!
53. When you're out of fellowship with God & disobedient, you want to run the other direction & get as far away from the Lord & His people as you possibly can. Just the sight of them convicts you!
54. That's what they all say, every backslider, almost every one I ever heard: "I'm not going back on the Lord, I'm not going back on the Family."
55. How God hates people that look back! It seems like He's almost better able to stand gross horrible outright sins than for the Christian or His own Children to compromise & look back & shilly-shally & get lukewarm & double-minded! He just can't stomach it!
56. Backsliding is not usually a sudden last-minute decision, it's something that you have been contemplating a long, long time.

57. A lot of backsliders have quit just a minute too soon, just before the Lord was about give them the crown, they flunked out. For God's sake, I hope you don't flunk out just when you almost have got the victory & the Lord's about to reward you & give you the anointing & the crown! I hope you don't fail!

58. I wouldn't trust a defector further than you could drag an elephant by the tail.

59. I think one of the saddest verses in the Bible is the one about "Demas hath forsaken Me, having loved this present World!" Now let's face it, that's why they do it. They love something more than the Lord's Work & His Family.--Really something more than the Lord.

60. To me the most shocking thing about Saul & about Judas & about any backslider is their lack of fear of God.

61. Nobody loves a traitor! The System will lure you back, will even exalt you for awhile, pay you 30 pieces of silver to do the dirty work, & when it's done, they will spit in your face & never have anything more to do with you! Who is going to trust a traitor?

62. Every time I got in such a fix & I realised I was in the wrong place I repented of it like that!--Quick!-- And I ran back to the will of God as fast as I could go! And I think that is the only thing that saved my neck, literally!--"For he that being often reproved & hardeneth his neck shall be suddenly destroyed & that without remedy!"

63. When you start failing God, backsliding & going against the Lord, everything goes wrong. It reminds me of what Hamlet said, "When troubles come, they come in troops!"

64. I am firmly convinced that you don't have to worry about some people's loyalty. If they love you & are loyal to you they're going to listen to you & not anybody else. Jesus said so! He said, "My sheep hear My voice & they follow Me & a stranger they will not follow!"

65. God punished King David, spanked him for awhile, but then brought him back, & his latter end was greater than the beginning, thank You Lord! Because he learned his lesson, because he repented, because he was sorry, because in his humility he confessed his sin.--And you have the beautiful 51st Psalm as a result.

66. Thank God there are a few cases in the Bible of repentance. Like David & some others. They made some big mistakes but they had big repentances.--So they had big forgivenesses. PTL!

67. Living the life the Enemy has to offer is nothing but agony, death & constant dying for that which is not worth dying for!

68. "The men whose opinions thou lovest shall destroy thee & the Beast whose honour thou favourest shall devour thee. For why dost thou not return unto Me, O thou backsliding daughter? Why dost thou not repent of thy spiritual whoredoms?"

69. If someone forsakes the Lord & His work for something they would rather have, for some other god before Him, God is fed up with them, disgusted with them, & usually won't use them for hardly anything or bless them at all, so they have to go back to the System, back to the World & the Devil to even earn a living to support the god that they worshipped instead of the Lord.

70. In a few outstanding cases of backsliding in the Scriptures & in church history where there was a tremendously great repentance, there was a great forgiveness!--But usually at the same time there was a great punishment.

71. A backslider is nothing but a troublemaker! He's given himself over to the Devil, he's yielded to the Devil, he's going the Devil's way instead of God's way & he's dangerous to have around!

72. When people fail the Lord & they fail us, they apparently have no idea what a big failure that is & how bad it is & how far they are on their way down!

73. Anybody who chooses his family over a job for the Lord is a backslider!

74. Backsliders make God sick at His stomach & He vomits them out!--God's vomit, the backsliders!

75. God have mercy & protect us from backsliders! They're the worst enemies of all & the worst reproach to God's work & the worst possible testimony!

76. If you're out of touch with the Lord, there's only one other one that you can get in touch with & that is the Devil!

77. Everybody can make it, it's up to them. If you don't make it, it's not God's fault.

78. Either you're getting better & better, or you're getting worse! There's no such thing as standing still. You're either going ahead, or you're going backwards, one or the other!

79. When people just insist on having their own way & they're going to go ahead Hell, or high water, & do it themselves anyhow, sometimes you just have to let'm do it.

(See also No. 71, 140, 312, 313C, 383, 395, 641, 756, 759, 763, 772, 778, 830, 880, 952, 954, 967, 1014, 1040, 1045, 1049, 1056, 1058, 1089, 1202, 1651, 1652, 1653.)

80. GEN.19:26 But his (Lot's) wife looked back from behind him, and she became a pillar of salt.

81. DEU.28:63 And it shall come to pass, that as the Lord rejoiced over you to do you good, and to multiply you; so the Lord will rejoice over you to destroy you, and to bring you to nought; and ye shall be plucked from off the land whither thou goest to possess it.

82. JOS.24:20 If ye forsake the Lord, and serve strange gods, then He will turn and do you hurt, and consume you, after that He hath done you good.

83. 2CH.30:9 For if ye turn again unto the Lord, your brethren and your children shall find compassion before them that lead them captive, so that they shall come again into this land: for the Lord your God is gracious and merciful, and will not turn away His face from you, if ye return unto Him.

84. EZR.8:22b The hand of our God is upon all them for good that seek Him; but His power and His wrath is against all them that forsake Him.

85. JOB.14:7 For there is hope of a tree, if it be cut down, that it will sprout again, and that the tender branch thereof will not cease.

86. JOB.34:26 He striketh them as wicked men in the open sight of others.

87. PSA.37:31 The law of his God is in his heart; none of his steps shall slide.

88. PSA.44:20,21 If we have forgotten the Name of our God, or stretched out our hands to a strange god; Shall not God search this out? for He knoweth the secrets of the heart.

89. PSA.51:3 For I acknowledge my transgressions: and my sin is ever before me.

90. PSA.78:41 Yea, they turned back and tempted God, and limited the Holy One of Israel.

91. PSA.119:176 I have gone astray like a lost sheep; seek Thy servant; for I do not forget Thy commandments.

92. PRO.14:14 The backslider in heart shall be filled with his own ways.

93. PRO.15:10 Correction is grievous unto him that forsaketh the way: and he that hateth reproof shall die.

94. PRO.26:11 As a dog returneth to his vomit, so a fool returneth to his folly.

95. PRO.28:10 Whoso causeth the righteous to go astray in an evil way, he shall fall himself into his own pit: but the upright shall have good things in possession.

96. ECC.7:10 Say not thou, What is the cause that the former days were better than these? for thou dost not enquire wisely concerning this.

97. ISA.30:1,2 Woe to the rebellious children, saith the Lord, that take counsel, but not of Me; and that cover with a covering, but not of My Spirit, that they may add sin to sin: That walk to go down into Egypt, and have not asked at My mouth; to strengthen themselves in the strength of Pharaoh, and to trust in the shadow of Egypt!

98. ISA.54:7,8 For a small moment have I forsaken thee; but with great mercies will I gather thee. In a little wrath I hid My face from thee for a moment; but with everlasting kindness will I have mercy on thee, saith the Lord thy Redeemer.

99. JER.5:6 Wherefore a lion out of the forest shall slay them, and a wolf of the evenings shall spoil them, a leopard shall watch over their cities: every one that goeth out thence shall be torn in pieces: because their transgressions are many, and their backslidings are increased.

100. JER.7:24 But they hearkened not, nor inclined their ear, but walked in the counsels and in the imagination of their evil heart, and went backward, and not forward.

101. JER.15:6 Thou hast forsaken me, saith the Lord, thou art gone backward: therefore will I stretch out My hand against thee, and destroy thee; I am weary with repenting.

102. JER.24:7 And I will give them a heart to know Me, that I am the Lord: and they shall be My people, and I will be their God: for they shall return unto Me with their whole heart.

103. DAN.9:9 To the Lord our God belong mercies and forgivenesses, though we have rebelled against Him.

104. HOS.4:17 Ephraim is joined to idols: let him alone.

105. HOS.6:1 Come, and let us return unto the Lord: for He hath torn, and He will heal us; He hath smitten, and He will bind us up.

106. HOS.14:4 I will heal their backsliding, I will love them freely: for Mine anger is turned away from him.

107. JOE.2:12,13 Therefore also now, saith the Lord, turn ye even to Me with all your heart, and with fasting, and with weeping, and with mourning: And rend your heart, and not your garments, and turn unto the Lord your God: for He is gracious and merciful, slow to anger, and of great kindness, and repenteth Him of the evil.

108. MAT.5:13 Ye are the salt of the Earth: but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be trodden under foot of men.

109. MAT.13:22 He also that received seed among the thorns is he that heareth the Word; and the care of this World, and the deceitfulness of riches, choke the Word, and he becometh unfruitful.

110. LUK.8:13 They on the Rock are they, which, when they hear, receive the Word with joy; and these have no root, which for a while believe, and in time of temptation fall away.

111. LUK.9:62 And Jesus said unto him, No man, having put his hand to the plow, and looking back, is fit for the Kingdom of God.

112. LUK.15:32 It was meet that we should make merry, and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is alive again; and was lost, and is found.

113. LUK.17:32 Remember Lot's wife.

114. JOH.6:66,67 From that time many of His disciples went back, and walked no more with Him. Then said Jesus unto the twelve, will ye also go away?

115. JOH.15:6 If a man abide not in Me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned.

116. GAL.4:9 But now, after that ye have known God, or rather are known of God, how turn ye again to the weak and beggarly elements, whereunto ye desire again to be in bondage?

117. GAL.5:7 Ye did run well; who did hinder you that ye should not obey the truth?

118. EPH.4:18,19 Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart: Who being past feeling have given themselves over unto lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness.

119. 2TI.4:10a For Demas hath forsaken me, having loved this present World.

120. HEB.3:12,13 Take heed, brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief, in departing from the living God. But exhort one another daily, while it is called To day; lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin.

121. HEB.5:11 Of whom we have many things to say, and hard to be uttered, seeing ye are dull of hearing.

122. HEB.6:4-6 For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the Heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost, And have tasted the good Word of God, and the powers of the World to come, If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put Him to an open shame.

123. HEB.10:26,27 For if we (continue to) sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins, But a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries.

124. HEB.11:14,15 For they that say such things declare plainly that they seek a country. And truly, if they had been mindful of that country from whence they came out, they might have had opportunity to have returned.

125. 2PE.2:20-22 For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the World through the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein, and overcome, the latter end is worse with them than the beginning. For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after they have known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them. But it is happened unto them according to the true proverb, The dog is turned to his own vomit again; and the sow that was washed to her wallowing in the mire.

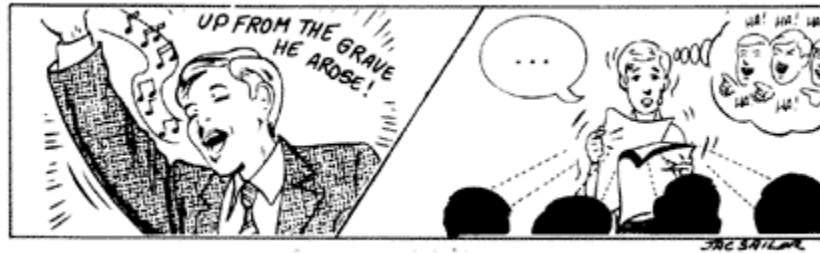
126. 2PE.3:17 Ye therefore, beloved, seeing ye know these things before, beware lest ye also, being led away with the error of the wicked, fall from your own stedfastness.

127. 1JO.2:19 They went out from us, but they were not of us; for if they had been of us, they would no doubt have continued with us: but they went out, that they might be made manifest that they were not all of us.

128. JUD.4,5 For there are certain men crept in unawares, who were before of old ordained to this condemnation, ungodly men, turning the grace of our God into lasciviousness, and denying the only Lord God, and our Lord Jesus Christ. I will therefore put you in remembrance, though ye once knew this, how that the Lord, having saved the people out of the land of Egypt, afterward destroyed them that believed not.

129. REV.2:4,5 Nevertheless I have somewhat against thee, because thou hast left thy first love. Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the first works; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will remove thy candlestick out of his place, except thou repent.

(See also DEU.8:11-14; DEU.13:4-11; DEU.30:1-10; DEU.32; JOB.22:23-30; ZEC.10:6; MAL.3:7; MAT.4:7-19; LUK.15:11-27; 1CO.10:1-13; HEB.6:4-8; HEB.10:26-29,38.)



The wicked flee when no man pursueth: but the righteous are bold as a lion (Pro.28:1).

1. "Shy" is just "I" with a "sh" before it. Shyness is really I-ness. The shy person is so busy thinking about himself that he says "sh" to any other subject.
2. If you never stick your neck out, you'll never get your head above the crowd.
3. He who begs timidly courts refusal.
4. He that is overcautious will accomplish little.
5. When you're Christ-conscious you're not self-conscious!
6. The roots of shyness are really in pride.
7. Stand upright, speak thy thought, declare
The truth thou hast, that all may share.
Be bold, proclaim it everywhere!
They only live who dare!
8. Silence is golden except when it comes to witnessing--then it's just plain yellow.
9. Don't let the little guy in brass buttons scare you off! Refuse to talk to him, demand to see the boss!
10. Bravery never goes out of fashion.
11. No one can make you feel inferior without your consent.
12. For strength & stamina in body & soul, Drink in the Word to make you bold.
13. If you're bold & go in prayer & in the power of the Lord & act like you know what you're doing & just go ahead & do it until they tell you not to, people figure you must have the right to do it.
14. If you seem to know just what to do, others seldom question you!
15. The question not asked cannot be answered.
16. Dare to be bold! Dare to think, act, live & teach differently from the vast robotic, narcotic, conventional, pretentional, conformist, performist, zomby-bomby so-called "silent majority" of the supposedly average & "normal" systemites! They will hate you for daring to challenge their authority, but God will love you.
17. What is shyness, bashfulness & timidity? It's a combination of two things--fear & pride! You are worried about people's opinions of you. You fear the opinions of men. (Eph.6:6,7; Prov.29:25.)
18. Shyness is basically fear, which is the opposite of faith. So to overcome fear you must have more faith.
19. When you have more faith, you have more boldness & more courage, more faith to trust God.
20. After receiving the Holy Spirit, I had a boldness, a sort of a fearlessness, a greater courage, which I think was God-given. It didn't matter whether they thought I was good or bad, as long as I knew I was right & doing the right things & saying the right things. As long as I knew I was in the Will of God, & was doing God's Will, then the Spirit of God gave me this boldness.
21. Whatever you do, when questioned, don't stall around & beat around the bush & lower your eyes like you're ashamed of something! Look them straight in the eye & with forceful, forthright, obvious conviction & sincerity, take the offensive & sock it to them with the Truth!
22. Face the fear of Man in the power of His Spirit on the promises of His Word, & you cannot fail! Praise God!

(See also No. 337, 983, 1006, 1032.)

23. GEN.32:24,26 Jacob was left alone; and there wrestled a man with him until the breaking of the day.... And he said, I will not let thee go, except thou bless me.

24. PSA.119:6 Then shall I not be ashamed, when I have respect unto all Thy commandments.

25. PRO.28:1 The wicked flee when no man pursueth: but the righteous are bold as a lion.

26. PRO.29:25 The fear of Man bringeth a snare: but whoso putteth his trust in the Lord shall be safe.

27. EZE.3:9 As an adamant harder than flint have I made thy forehead: fear them not, neither be dismayed at their looks, though they be a rebellious house.

28. MAR.8:38 Whosoever therefore shall be ashamed of Me and of My Words in this adulterous and sinful generation; of him also shall the Son of Man be ashamed, when He cometh in the glory of His Father with the holy Angels.

29. ACT.4:13 Now when they saw the boldness of Peter and John, and perceived that they were unlearned and ignorant men, they marvelled; and they took knowledge of them, that they had been with Jesus.

30. ACT.4:29 Grant unto Thy servants, that with all boldness they may speak Thy Word.

31. ACT.5:28. Saying, Did not we straitly command you that ye should not teach in this Name? and, behold, ye have filled Jerusalem with your doctrine, and intend to bring this Man's blood upon us.

32. ACT.9:29 He spake boldly in the name of the Lord Jesus, and disputed against the Grecians.

33. ACT.18:9,10 Then spake the Lord to Paul in the night by a vision, Be not afraid, but speak, and hold not thy peace: For I am with thee, and no man shall set on thee to hurt thee: for I have much people in this city.

34. ROM.1:16 For I am not ashamed of the Gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto Salvation to every one that believeth; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.

35. EPH.3:12 In Whom we have boldness and access with confidence by the faith of Him.

36. EPH.6:19,20 And for me, that utterance may be given unto me, that I may open my mouth boldly, to make known the mystery of the Gospel, For which I am an ambassador in bonds: that therein I may speak boldly, as I ought to speak.

37. 1TH.2:2 But even after that we had suffered before, and were shamefully entreated, as ye know, at Philippi, we were bold in our God to speak unto you the Gospel of God with much contention.

38. 2TI.1:8 Be not thou therefore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me His prisoner: but be thou partaker of the afflictions of the Gospel according to the power of God.

39. 2TI.2:12 If we suffer, we shall also reign with Him: if we deny Him, He also will deny us.

40. 1JO.4:17 Herein is our love made perfect, that we may have boldness in the Day of Judgment: because as He is, so are we in this World.



Because they have no changes, therefore they fear not God (Ps.55:19).

1. God doesn't change, but He's constantly changing methods & modes & tactics & even people! If you're without changes, then you fear not God!
2. When anything begins to hinder more than it helps, it's time to abolish it!
3. When you're through changing, you're through.
4. If you want to put the World right, start with yourself.
5. The Love Revolution has got to keep turning & changing & moving every minute with something new.
6. Let him that would move the World first move himself.
7. A new broom sweeps clean.
8. We may change our methods but we don't change the basic principles.
9. We've performed a lot of operations, but thank God the patient always recovered!
10. Nothing is going to always be--nothing but the Lord & His Love & Salvation.
11. All changes are difficult & sometimes costly, but if they're good changes, in the long run they pay off!
12. If you get bored, move the furniture around in your room! It's like starting a new life!
13. We're not afraid to change, we're not afraid to stop doing something unfruitful & to start doing something else!
14. If you stop changing, you're finished!
15. If you're not changed, you don't have Jesus, because He changes people! No matter how good you are, He'll make you better!
16. You have to change people in order to change the World!
17. Every major move or revolution we've had looked like it was going to kill us, & sometimes it almost did, but we've always come out better than before!
18. Our basic message & beliefs have never changed, but God is constantly changing methods adaptable to the times or the situations.
19. True repentance is not just being sorry--it is "metanoia"--a complete change of mind & heart.
20. Anyone that doesn't move & keep changing is dying or already dead.
21. We're not just out to change the World--we're creating a totally new one!
22. That's what makes this a revolution, when we don't mind changing whatever's necessary.
23. If you don't like the way things are going, stick around two weeks & everything will change.
24. Don't get stuck with either a name, a method or a message that you can't change from day to day with whatever God has for you that's new--new wine, new message, new method, new way!
25. Changes & revolutions in men, methods & materials cost at first, but in the long run they save a lot more!
26. It costs to change! At first it costs more than it saves.
27. We are the crystalliser, the catalyst, the ones that put people on the spot & drive them to a decision!--whether they want to wake up or go back to sleep again!
28. Everyone needs a change once in a while. Any situation can get to one's nerves after a while until you could almost scream!
29. If you can't change your mind you'll never revolute!

30. Times and things and methods and we and God's new plans and ways are constantly changing and revolting, like a wheel speeding toward the goal of the new and leaving the old far behind!
31. You'd better move now--with the life of God, or you'll be left behind in the death of this world!
32. I'm not afraid to turn around & go the other direction a bit if we've been going this direction too long!
33. Changes are good for you! They make you really depend on the Lord!
34. You may not be able to change the whole World, but you can change your part of the World.
35. If you have changed one life, you have changed a part of the World, & you have proven that there is hope that it all can be changed!
36. If you have even changed your life by the power of God's love, you've changed a whole universe, the universe of your body & the sphere in which you live.
37. He who shall introduce into public affairs the principles of primitive Christianity will revolutionise the World. (Ben Franklin)
38. We take any name we need--whatever name they want to call us.
39. As long as you can continue to change, you will survive!--But if you solidify and freeze, you're doomed to a tomb!
40. We need to keep exchanging and sharing and changing and moving in order to grow and woo and win to His Way!
41. There's nothing new under the sun, but a lot of good ol' fashioned ideas have to be revived every now & then that are pretty new to the present.
42. Too rigid a daily schedule may not give God a chance to change it.
43. There's no standing still! You're either climbing and getting to the top, or you're sinking and drifting to the bottom.--Progressing or backsliding!
44. We are very adaptable! We can adapt ourselves to any country, any situation.
45. We may change tactics, but it is all for the same purpose: to win the war!
46. God moves. He is a moving God. He is never still. He is always effecting change in every sphere of Creation.
47. Leave things alone that are running well, don't change horses in the middle of the stream.
48. Lord help me to change the things that need to be changed, & not to change the things that don't need to be changed, & especially Lord, help me to know the difference!
49. If you can't keep thinking up better ways of doing it, then you're dead!
50. The Lord always has something new up His sleeve!
51. Nothing is permanent except the Lord! Only He changes not.
52. If there is one thing you can be sure of in this life, it's change.
53. There is no such thing as standing still in your spiritual life!
54. There comes a time when the birdlings have to be shoved out of the nest. There comes a time when the kids need to grow up. Their parents can't take care of them forever when they've got new children coming along.
55. Don't get blobitis yourself! Keep moving, turning, changing, and revolting every single day!--And you will, if you pray and ask God what to do today!
56. God's new order must rise upon a clean, new foundation--the Personality, Power & Truth of Jesus Christ.
57. You have the Lord & He's your security, He's always the same & always with you wherever you go! No matter if all things change & everything goes, you still have the Lord!
58. Every thing, every place & everybody changes but God--He is always with you!
59. You cannot change the World of Man without changing his mind, & you cannot change his mind unless you change his heart, & you cannot change his heart without the inspiration of God's Spirit!
60. Just because we did it that way yesterday, doesn't mean we have to do it that way today! If you can find some easier, quicker, shorter, better, faster way to do it, do it!
61. Sometimes conditions change directions.
62. The only things you can be sure of are the Lord, hard work, suffering, constant change & joy!
63. If you don't like the way things are, change'm!
64. His Word never changes, the Lord never changes, the Gospel never changes, Salvation never changes, Christ doesn't change, but God keeps moving everyday!
65. There's nothing permanent with us except God & His Love & the Family!--Nothing has to be permanent except the Lord!--Only He changes not. (Mal.3:6.)
66. But we change plenty!--And we change according to need, according to situations, according to the individual case or what's good for the Family, what's good for the Lord's Work!

67. One of the most needed abilities in our Family is adaptability!
68. Change is one of the 7 basic needs of human happiness!--And variety is the spice of life!
69. Sometimes people get settled down in a groove, in a rut & let the roots grow down too long, & then the Lord has to uproot them, tear'm loose & really break'm & shake'm up!
70. Thank You, Lord, for helping us revive & revolute & revise & change to meet each new circumstance & each new year & each new need.
71. Thank the Lord we're still learning, still making progress, still going, still advancing, still winning, still working, still saving, still preaching & still winning souls around the World!
72. Most people don't like to change. They prefer to stay in their same old rut because it costs too much to change. It takes a lot of time & effort, thought, & real sacrifice to change.
73. The objectives of the war remain always the same: To preach the Gospel in all the World to every creature, but the battle is very fluid! Various battles & tactics & strategies vary from situation to situation & area to area, so we frequently have to be changing & advising change on minor matters.

(See also No. 6, 182, 242, 297, 565.)

74. 1SA.10:9 And it was so, that when he had turned his back to go from Samuel, God gave him another heart.
75. PSA.55:19b Because they have no changes, therefore they fear not God.
76. EZE.36:26 A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an heart of flesh.
77. MAT.9:17 Neither do men put new wine into old bottles: else the bottles break, and the wine runneth out, and the bottles perish: but they put new wine into new bottles, and both are preserved.
78. MAR.7:9 And He said unto them, Full well ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition.
79. 2CO.3:18 But we all, with open face beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image from glory to glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord.
80. HEB.13:8 Jesus Christ the same yesterday, and to day, and for ever.



Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it yieldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby (Heb.12:11).

[HomeARC Note (03/04): *The Charter* and the policy statement, "Children in The Family International" (01/04), state policy and rules regarding the discipline of minors.]

1. Discipline must always be tempered with love & mercy.
2. The Lord is very tolerant & patient with the weak & the helpless, but He's a firm parent with those old enough to know better.
3. Even though saved, if you do things that are wrong, God is going to punish you for it.
4. Open rebuke is better than secret love. Pro.27:5.
5. The rod & reproof give wisdom: but a child left to himself bringeth his mother to shame. Pro.29:15
6. Correct thy son, & he shall give thee rest, yea, he shall give delight unto thy soul. Pro.29:17.
7. Let's quit disciplining people so severely and so harshly for poor little blunders of the mind.
8. Give spankings in love as a loving father in the right way--not too hard, not too harsh, no too heavy, not to the point of total discouragement & despair so that your child gives up & quits trying, or your spiritual babe just quits & backslides & goes home because he just can't live up to your standards.
9. Better never to have promised that spanking than to have promised it & not given it!
10. A law without enforcement is no law at all! A punishment without application is no punishment at all!
11. Formula for discipline: Love never fails!
12. The next time you get a spanking from God's officer of the law, the Devil, just remember, it was probably your own fault!
13. You cannot threaten judgement & then not carry it out! A father without a rod is no father at all! A law without enforcement is no law at all!
14. It's not fair to punish a child for doing something wrong that he didn't know was wrong.
15. Each child's discipline must be tailored for his particular needs, his individual personality! A lot depends on the child & what really gets through to him.
16. You need a lot of love, patience, prayer & reasoning with your children!
17. Even God's spankings are done in Love & are a proof of His Love!
18. With every rule & every law there has to be some kind of agreed forewarned punishment.
19. Spankings are worth it if they get results!
20. In the Bible, the word for child-training is chastening!
21. Thank God for the rod!
22. I frequently scold & apply the rod, but I always add Love's healing balm afterwards to soothe, encourage, comfort & give you hope of recovery & of redeeming yourself.
23. God chastises people for whom there are still some hopes.
24. When you have to use the rod of chastisement, be sure you wield it in the right spirit.
25. If there's anything any soldier has got to learn to do, 'tis to be able to take a cussin' out for his mistakes by his commanding officer, & say "Yes sir, thank you sir!"
26. Chastisement is God's intolerable compliment to show you He loves you.
27. Correction does much, but encouragement does more. Encouragement coming after censure is the sun after a shower.

28. When my father found me on the wrong track, he always provided switching facilities.
29. God's spankings are sometimes hard to take, but they're a token of His love, His "intolerable compliment" and are good for you if you learn your lesson thereby & are thus brought into harmony & happiness with Him.
30. God sometimes wields the heaviest rod on the backs of His Own children when they backslide, because they know better and are without excuse!
31. The bird whose pinion was once broken, by the grace of God will fly even higher than before.
32. God only uses broken men & women--no others will do!
33. God, our good Father, uses correction, to keep us going in the right direction.
34. If you don't take the Lord's hint, He'll sometimes give you a shove.
35. Those who can't be controlled through love have to be controlled through fear. Even the fear of God is the beginning of wisdom.
36. The Devil is the prosecuting attorney, & if there's something he can lay his finger on, he has the right to do it.--That's the rule! He has a right to afflict that body or person with punishment or chastening because of sin.
37. Get better, not bitter.
38. The prevention of crime begins in the high chair, not the electric chair.
39. The rod is a last resort, & it usually shows that there's been some failure along the line, improper teaching & training & not loving them up in the way of the Lord.
40. Don't be afraid to use the rod, & look on it as the rod of God in your hand, God's servant, & may you teach your children to fear you as God teaches His children--us--to fear Him!
41. It is easier & better to build boys than to repair men.
42. Everything else in the modern home is now controlled by the flick of a switch.--Why not the children?
43. The time to start correcting the children is before they start correcting you.
44. You cannot change your ancestors, but you can do something about your descendants.
45. You're not that indispensable, nobody is!--Not even me! If I begin to cause more trouble than I'm worth & be more of a hindrance than a help, God will get rid of me!
46. You are going through the breaking, the garden, the circumcision of the heart, & it hurts, but it hurts so good when He chastises you, for it's the assurance that He loves you & you're His child.
47. In order to bring forth the sweetness, there has to be some suffering. To bring out the beauty of the flame, something must go to ashes!
48. The best kind of so-called punishment should be chastening or child-training, something that will teach them something, train them & help them to learn the lesson, & help them never to make the same mistake again.
49. The Shepherd's rod both saves & directs the sheep, & sometimes He may have to give you a whack with it to keep you on the right path or to turn you off the wrong path.
50. "He chastens us for our profit that we might be partakers of His holiness." In other words, through it He cleanses us, He purges us from the sins & impurities in our own hearts that cause all the trouble, & we're made clean, thank God! (Heb.12:10)
51. If you make some rules too hard, then some people may get rebellious & throw them all to the wind!
52. Not that the rod of chastisement is wrong but it is the spirit in which it is wielded that counts. God Himself chastises us with His rod but He does it in love & in patience & always comforts us afterwards & tries to encourage us to keep on in spite of our mistakes.
53. Be sure you're in the right spirit as you correct those around you for their mistakes & their errors & their sins, even as God does us & as we would want others to do unto us for ours.
54. God is not only a God of love, but He is also a God of wrath & chastisement & judgement if you disobey the rules & endanger yourself, your life, our Family & the work!

(See also No. 18, 38, 39, 55, 75, 606, 718, 915, 1023, 1512, 1527.)

55. DEU.8:5,6 Thou shalt also consider in thine heart, that, as a man chasteneth his son, so the Lord thy God chasteneth thee. Therefore thou shalt keep the commandments of the Lord thy God, to walk in His ways, and to fear Him.
56. 2CH.7:13,14 If I shut up Heaven that there be no rain, or if I command the locusts to devour the land, or if I send pestilence among My people: If My people, which are called by My name, shall humble themselves, and pray, and seek My face, and turn from their wicked ways; then will I hear from Heaven, and will forgive their sin, and will heal their land.

57. JOB.5:17,18 Behold, happy is the man whom God correcteth: therefore despise not thou the chastening of the Almighty: For He maketh sore, and bindeth up: He woundeth, and His hands make whole.

58. JOB.33:19 He is chastened also with pain upon his bed, and the multitude of his bones with strong pain.

59. PSA.30:5 For His anger endureth but a moment; in His favour is life: weeping may endure for a night, but joy cometh in the morning.

60. PSA.73:14 For all the day long have I been plagued, and chastened every morning.

61. PSA.94:12,13 Blessed is the man whom Thou chastenest, O Lord, and teachest him out of Thy law; That Thou mayest give him rest from the days of adversity, until the pit be digged for the wicked.

62. PSA.118:17,18 I shall not die, but live, and declare the works of the Lord, The Lord hath chastened me sore: but He hath not given me over unto death.

63. PSA.119:67 Before I was afflicted I went astray: but now have I kept Thy Word.

64. PSA.119:75 I know, O Lord, that Thy judgements are right, and that Thou in faithfulness hast afflicted me.

65. PSA.141:5 Let the righteous smite me; it shall be a kindness: and let him reprove me; it shall be an excellent oil, which shall not break my head.

66. PRO.3:11,12 My son, despise not the chastening of the Lord; neither be weary of His correction: For whom the Lord loveth He correcteth; even as a father the son in whom he delighteth.

67. PRO.9:8,9 Reprove not a scorner, lest he hate thee: rebuke a wise man, and he will love thee, Give instruction to a wise man, and he will be yet wiser: teach a just man, and he will increase in learning.

68. PRO.15:32 He that refuseth instruction despiseth his own soul: but he that heareth reproof getteth understanding.

69. PRO.17:10 A reproof entereth more into a wise man than an hundred stripes into a fool.

70. PRO.19:25 Smite a scorner, and the simple will beware: and reprove one that hath understanding, and he will understand knowledge.

71. PRO.25:12 As an earring of gold, and an ornament of fine gold, so is a wise reprover upon an obedient ear.

72. PRO.27:5,6 Open rebuke is better than secret love. Faithful are the wounds of a friend; but the kisses of an enemy are deceitful.

73. PRO.28:23 He that rebuketh a man afterwards shall find more favour than he that flattereth with the tongue.

74. PRO.29:17 Correct thy son, and he shall give thee rest; yea, he shall give delight unto thy soul.

75. ECC.7:5 It is better to hear the rebuke of the wise, than for a man to hear the song of fools.

76. ECC.8:11 Because sentence against an evil work is not executed speedily, therefore the heart of the sons of men is fully set in them to do evil.

77. JER.10:24 O Lord, correct me, but with judgment: not in Thine anger, lest Thou bring me to nothing.

78. MAT.18:15-17 Moreover if thy brother shall trespass against thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone: if he shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother. But if he will not hear thee, then take with thee one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established. And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an heathen man and a publican.

79. 1CO.11:32 But when we are judged, we are chastened of the Lord, that we should not be condemned with the World.

80. 1TI.5:20 Them that sin rebuke before all, that others also may fear.

81. TIT.1:13 Rebuke them sharply, that they may be sound in the faith.

82. TIT.3:10,11 A man that is an heretick after the first and second admonition reject; Knowing that he that is such is subverted, and sinneth, being condemned of himself.

83. HEB.12:5-13a My son, despise not thou the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of Him: For whom the Lord loveth He chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom He receiveth. If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the Father chasteneth not? But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sons. Furthermore we have had fathers of our flesh which corrected us, and we gave them reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits, and live? For they verily for a few days chastened us after their own pleasure; but He for our profit, that we might be partakers of His holiness. Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it yieldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby. Wherefore lift up the hands which hang down, and the feeble knees; And make straight paths for your feet, lest that which is lame be turned out of the way.

84. REV.3:19 As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent.

(See also DEU.21:18-21.)

9. CHILDREN --{page 48}--



Lo, children are an heritage of the Lord: and the fruit of the womb is His reward. As arrows are in the hand of a mighty man; so are children of the youth. Happy is the man that hath his quiver full of them: they shall not be ashamed, but they shall speak with the enemies in the gate (Ps.127:3-5).

[HomeARC Note (03/04): *The Charter* and the policy statement, "Children in The Family International" (01/04), state the Family's principles, policies and attitudes regarding marriage, separation, divorce, parents and their children.]

1. Taking care of children is probably the most important job there is, molding their little lives & teaching them everyday.
2. Those babies of yesterday are the children & the stars of the shows of today!
3. To bring up a child in the way he should go, travel that way yourself.
4. Children need models more than they need critics.
5. Out of the mouth of babes come words we shouldn't have said in the first place.
6. One of the first things a man notices in a backward country is that the children are still obeying their parents.
7. Half the fun of living is to have children!
8. Remember the good old days when the only jams kids got into were plum, grape & blackberry?
9. If you see handwriting on the wall, your one-year-old probably found a pencil.
10. What children hear at home, doth soon fly abroad.
11. Children are poor men's riches.
12. Let thy child's first lesson be obedience, & he will be what thou wilt.--Ben Franklin.
13. It is hard for parents to lead a child in the straight & narrow way when they're on the other route.
14. Children thrive on praise! It's more important to praise a child for his good works & his good behaviour than it is to scold him for his bad behaviour. Always accentuate the positive!
15. God will bless you as you soak your children in His Word!
16. Children are the greatest psychologists there are!
17. Training a child is like painting a masterpiece.
18. Your children are a reflection of you.
19. Don't get too proud of your children, they're apt to just do the wrong thing at the wrong time, right after you've been bragging about them!
20. Children may "sag" as soon as you brag.
21. "Train up a child in the way he should go, & when he is old he will not depart from it." (Pro.22:6)--He may depart for awhile, but he'll come back & then he'll stick!
22. Even if your parents only prayed with you till you were 5 years old, that gave you the impression & seed of faith!

23. Don't hand me any of that stuff about "Then why did God give children to me, just to take them away again?" That's why He gives us everything, damn it!--Just to give it back to Him for His Glory! If I hadn't given my children to God you wouldn't be here!

24. Never belittle the little things or little ones.

25. It is given to children to be rich in faith.

26. A child not only has to love you, he's also got to fear you & respect you & not be allowed to get away with outright defiance.

27. If you can teach a child, you can teach anybody!

28. Most 12-years-olds are smarter than those that are 50! It's an age of looking honestly at everything & not accepting everything you're told, an age of choice, an age of decision, & that's when most people accept the Lord.

29. You can work for years to build up good habits in a child, & have them torn down in a few minutes by other kids.

30. Children are not a liability!--They're an asset, or God wouldn't have given them!

31. Children are the most sincere people in the World.

32. You can lead a child to the Lord all the time by your example & your love even before he can talk, by talking to him about the Lord & talking to him about Jesus.

33. Every child has got to have a father--even if it's not his own flesh-&-blood!

34. That tiny babe will be a king some day!--That little girl will be one of His queens!

35. God's gift is God's work.

36. Kids go more by what they see than what they hear, more by your actions than just your words.

37. Put yourself in your child's place & you'll have a better understanding of his problem.

38. It takes time & patience & understanding & lots of real love to train a child!

39. Don't forget that one of your most important jobs now is the tender loving care of your "Knew disciples"! The best thing about them is they won't backslide if you remain faithful!

40. Help "know" the "knew" ones & train them in the *know*-ledge of the Lord!

41. Your aim should be to prepare your children to go out into the World & stand with conviction & be able to give an answer to everyone who asks them.

42. Your children are one of the biggest assets you've got!

43. It's usually your fault when your children catch diseases or colds!

44. That's the most precious gift--God's greatest gift--His Love in a little child--so sweet & beautiful!--Such a treasure!

45. It's a wonderful thing if your children can't even remember when they didn't know Jesus, but have known Him all their lives.

46. The World looks to children for hope & joy & happiness & Godliness & Heavenliness. They're like His little messengers straight from Heaven.

47. Let's please let our children be children as long as we can, shall we?

48. Children are an important mission field.

49. We are one Family, & all of our children are just as much mine as they are yours.

50. What wonder-kids God's given us! More power to Kid Power! They're gonna pass us up!

51. Our children & families are our greatest witnesses, the proofs of the pudding.

52. You teach kids by your attitude & your actions, which speak much louder than your words!

53. Please be prayerful, careful, watchful & diligent in the care of your little ones & don't allow their little lives to be snuffed out or caused lifelong suffering by your own foolishness.

54. What you decide to give or not to give your children, that's what you are!

55. You will surely reap in your children exactly what you sow, especially if you don't discipline them!--That's your job as a parent, to train up your child in the way he should go.

56. Our children are one of our major concerns & one of the greatest proofs of our pudding!

57. Kids don't require a lot of attention, but they require a little. It's the quality that counts.

58. There is nothing that is too small to be noticed & to be paid attention to & to be cautious about & to beware of when it comes to your children's training & their care.

59. Each week you're investing a little bit more in Eternity as you invest in your children, because children are forever! These eternal lives are going to last forever, & everything you've put into them is going to count!

60. Little feet were made to run errands!

61. Capture the youth & you've conquered the future!

62. Your children are the greatest disciples of all, the ones that inherit your own traits & spirituality & spirit, & in a sense, the Lord!--They're clean, God's Word says--& you train them even before they're conceived. Because when you're training yourself, & the Lord's training you, He's also training your children!

63. Even if all the rest of us fail, our children are time bombs ticking away, that are going to explode one of these days & blow this World together!

64. God's Spirit protects & overshadows little children until they have made their choice or come to the age of accountability.

65. Every child's discipline must be tailored for his particular needs, his individual personality.

66. Many adults have a double standard, a stricter one for their children than for themselves!

67. Children are the gift of God, but they're also the work of God, & that gift is a lot of hard work.

68. Your child learns more in the first five years of his life--85% of his total learning--than he'll learn in all the rest!

69. Children are forever!--The only things you have on this Earth that God gives you that you can have forever & will go with you through eternity besides the souls you win!

70. A child's guardian angel stands before the Lord & is constantly protecting him and has the Lord's ear, and in case he needs something, "his angel doth always behold the face of the Father."

71. Your little children are in such close communication with the Lord that they see the Lord Himself!

72. What a comforting thought to know your little ones do always behold the face of Jesus to constantly comfort and reassure them in time of distress or fear!

73. Do your children see Jesus' sweet and kindly face in the night seasons and in sweet dreams to always comfort them even when you're not there?--They do if you love Jesus!--He's there with them if you have Jesus!--Have you? Do they?

74. As the twig is bent, so the tree is grown, & the present is built on the foundations of the past.

75. You can tell that a child is growing up when he stops asking where he came from & starts telling where he's going.

76. It often happens that the apple of a parent's eye is the kid who is rotten to the core.

77. A teenager is a little judge who sits on a throne judging everything & everybody as to whether they're right or wrong, & there's nothing in-between!

78. Our children are our biggest attraction, & some day they're going to be our greatest witness & our greatest proof!

79. Praise is one of the most important parts of child-training!

80. As Hannah to the temple gate

Her dearest treasure bore,

So Lord to Thee we consecrate

Our child forever more.

O Saviour, all he is is Thine

And all he yet may be,

Oh shelter him with love divine,

And draw him near to Thee.

81. The factory that produces the most important product is the home.

82. The best education you can give your child is the Word.

83. A law without enforcement is no law at all! A punishment without application is no punishment at all!

84. If a child lives with criticism he learns to condemn.

85. Sophisticated, Worldly-wise,

I searched for God & found Him not,

Until one day, the World forgot,

I found Him in my baby's eyes.

86. Many parents are so anxious to give their children what they didn't have, that they neglect to give them what they did have.

87. The best thing to spend on children is time.

88. What is learnt in the cradle lasts to the tomb.

89. "Sparens" are those who spare the rod when offspring need attention, & they find their troubles multiplied in ways too sad to mention.

90. Christ was one child who knew more than His parents--yet He submitted to them.

91. A diplomatic teacher sent this note home to all parents: "If you promise not to believe everything your child says happens at school, I'll promise not to believe everything he says happens at home."

92. A child is clean & truth receives, if at least one parent truly believes.

93. No wonder it's tough to be a teenager. Half the grownups tell him to find himself, & the other half tell him to get lost!

94. Guns with mission kids don't fit--

Their hands are just too full of lit!

95. Really, the younger generation isn't so bad, it's just that they have more critics than models.

96. You childcare workers are doing one of the most important and tremendous jobs in our whole ministry, as well as one of the toughest and most trying and difficult!

97. If you scream at each other, your children will scream at each other!

98. The World of tomorrow is what the parents of today make it.

99. Children are like flowers in your garden! They're a gift of God, but you've got to take care of them!

100. The Lord entrusts you with children to show you how much He loves you & how much you need Him.

101. Your little lambs & the souls you've won are all God has given you that can follow you from this world into the next!

102. Nothing is more important than God's children and their care, for they are His Kingdom!

103. We must always have a meek & quiet spirit about us which engenders trust & faith & confidence & peace, rest & assurance in others as well, for our spirits are contagious.

104. You have to cause children to respect you before you can get them to love you.

105. If we can't have teenagers that behave in the Family, we just won't have any teenagers!

106. You can't have teenagers without a father! No woman can control teenage boys unless she's a real toughy! It takes a man that can really lower the boom on'm & apply the rod & sock it to'm!

107. The Devil hates little children, he tries to kill them right & left, he's in the murdering business, because they're close to God, straight from Heaven, & another new member of the Kingdom of God!

108. Little children, little children who love their Redeemer

Are the pure ones, are the bright ones, His loved & His Own.

Like the stars of the morning, His bright crown adorning,

They shall shine in their beauty,

Bright gems for His crown.

109. It'd take half the joy out of living if you didn't have children & a future to look forward to & the joy of watching your children grow!

110. Bringing up children is simple if you don't have any. It's easy for childless people to give advice on raising children.

111. Children are samples of the citizenry of Heaven!--Little angels dropped from the sky!

112. Children are what give life to this World! Joy & beauty & thrills & excitement & [the fruit of] sex & everything is children, that's the ultimate!

113. Two years old, that's the time to get saved, & they'll do it just because you tell them to!

114. Anybody who can keep the attention of little children has really got to put something into it--lots of action, lots of motion & lots of noise!

115. Problem children are usually the result of problem parents!

116. When God gives you children, then your first duty to God is to those children! That is God's work!

117. Never tell a little child anything that's not so or any of these big fairy tales about the stork brought you & Santa Claus & all that baloney, because he believes you, he really trusts you!

118. When you're reading kids stories, always be sure to differentiate between the ones that are true & the ones that aren't true.

119. I don't think children should just be allowed free rein to watch any movies they want without supervision & without your choice & selection.

120. Children need discipline, but it must always be tempered with love & mercy.--Remember that prayer? You always have to weigh their motives.

121. May God help us all to be good stewards of the most precious gifts He's given us: Our children! We really can't afford to lose any! Please treasure & protect yours!

122. If somehow you haven't dwelt in the Word, kept the Word & taught your children the Word & made them examples of the Word, then you have failed.

123. If you are not absorbing the Word yourself & living the Word & preaching the Word & practicing the Word & teaching your children the Word & making them good examples of the Word, you're failing.

124. If you hold your children back from God's best, God will surely take them away from you, or cause them to be a disappointment & a heartbreak; but if you give them to God, you can't lose. Your children don't belong to you; they belong to the Lord.

125. If I hadn't given my children to God, you wouldn't be here! If I hadn't forsaken mine for Christ's sake, you wouldn't even have yours!--Nor today's Letters!

126. Take your children litnessing & provisioning & learn to use your children for God's glory.

127. Train your children in the way they should go as disciples, not as school products.

128. Our children ought to feel loved by all Family members.

129. Our children are the children of the Family, therefore the entire Family is responsible for them.

130. Our children & the example of our own families can do more to win hearts with the living proof than all the singing & dancing & skits & show biz in the whole World!

131. God puts the Kingdom of His Own children first!--Do you?

132. Children have an intuition for sincerity & honesty & truthfulness. They are very sensitive in the spirit & can pretty well sense who's good & who's bad, who's honest & who's a liar!

133. Probably the final greatest influence on your life outside of the Lord is your children. They influence you to do good, be good & try to do what's right & show them what's right.

134. The best kind of so-called punishment should be chastening or child-training, something that will teach them something, train them & help them to learn the lesson & help them never to make the same mistake again.

135. You shouldn't punish a child for doing something wrong if he didn't know it was wrong.

136. You'll find your own children have higher standards for you than sometimes you have for yourself.

137. Small children have feelings & they must be tenderly protected from thinking that we don't love them or we don't care.

138. It's never wise to leave your child or have your child leave you without a real loving good-bye session to let the child know that you love them & that you'll be back soon.

139. I believe you can lead a child to the Lord as soon as he is able to talk.

140. You can lead your child to Jesus now! Do it today! Tomorrow may be much harder! The sooner the better.

141. The fewer rules you have the better. Don't make rules so hard that the child can't keep them. If you make the rules too hard, then they can get rebellious & throw them all to the wind!

142. If you don't pay children enough attention then they know one sure way of getting your attention--doing something you don't like!

143. Put yourself in your child's place & then you may have a better understanding of his problem.

144. When a child is afflicted, God is dealing with the parents or those who are responsible for that child.

145. You cannot always protect your children forever from all evil everywhere.

146. If children never had any trouble at all, if they never had any little accidents or sickness or anything, how would you ever teach them about trusting the Lord & how to pray?

147. There's no reason why any of our children should be ashamed of their faith or their food or their Family or any of their beliefs. They ought to have the guts & conviction to be taught by their parents that they are better than other children.

148. Your children will very likely do a bigger job for God than you have done or ever will do, if you will only train, teach & lead them right & set a good example.

149. Every time you don't say no, that means yes as far as they're concerned.

150. Kids learn faster from other kids than any other way.

151. You need to operate in the spirit when disciplining a child.

152. It's always good to prepare children for new experiences they're going to have & even possible disappointments. To hold kids' attention, you've really got to give them action.

153. I think that children should sing happy childlike songs, not big heavy deep adult sad message songs.

154. Children must be taught the difference between outright lying & mere pretending & play-acting as we do in our skits.

155. Children are great mimics, great mimes, & this is mostly how they learn, by imitation.

156. We must teach children the difference between reality & imagination, between the truth & lying.

157. It's not right to encourage a child to deliberately lie or to tolerate it or allow it, no matter how cute or clever it might be.

158. When adults get frightened, fear is contagious & children catch it too!

159. Don't ever lie & deceive children.

160. I don't believe in taking kids to see any movie in which there is a lot of violence. In fact, small children ought not to be taken to any kind of unpleasant movies.

...

162. You can't expect most children to sit & listen to a long talk & sermon.

163. Most children are more sensitive & more easily hurt & more fragile than most adults, but on the other hand they're usually more resilient & bounce back quicker.

164. You don't have to spend a great deal of time with children to make them know you really appreciate them.

165. Put yourself in as close a situation as you can think of to your child's situation & think about how you would feel--then you can get a better understanding of him!

166. Put yourself in the children's place as much as possible & try to be understanding & explain as much as possible.

167. It's natural for children to pick up the negative & the bad because we are born in sin & we are born sinners & we have to learn how to change.

168. Laws too gentle are seldom obeyed; too severe, seldom executed.

169. Children are samples of the citizenry of Heaven!--Little angels dropped from the sky! They're really samples of Heaven until they are corrupted & polluted here on Earth.

170. Children need to be able to see the other side & know the difference & choose the good & eschew the evil.

171. With children nothing is impossible, & all things are possible in the World of make-believe & imagination.

172. A child often lives in a dream World. Just be sure they don't dwell there too much & lose contact with reality. Don't rebuke them for sometimes having their heads in the clouds--just keep their feet on the ground!

173. One little remark, & children may never forget it!

174. A Jesus baby is a testimony to your love & sacrifice for Jesus & others. "Greater love hath no man than this!" (Jn.15:13)--And to the Lord's love for you, to trust you with the creation & care of an everlasting immortal life to enjoy forever!

175. Children & childlike folks seem to need pictures of Jesus & Bible stories.

176. The little minds of our children are so impressionable!--They seldom ever forget what they see!

177. Parents should preview movies before they're shown to kids!--Or know the general theme or characteristics of the series to be sure it's good for them. The criterion is not "will it hurt'm" but "is it good for'm."--Is it edifying, profitable, inspiring & does it teach a good lesson? Most cartoons do not.

178. A boy has two jobs: One is just being a boy. The other is growing up to be a man.

179. Teenagers are extremists. It takes them a few years to learn moderation & realize that there is a certain in-between & that not everything is all bad or all good, including their parents.

180. Teenagers are young adults. God has made them to want independence at that age. He has made them to want to make their own decisions & to be free once they've been taught & trained & reared.

181. Every teenager has become a little judge of what is right & what is wrong, & is judging everything by their own conscience, actually by the training you have given them, & usually their judgments are very extreme & dictatorial & they're quite positive when they're right & positive when you're wrong!

182. There are times when you just have to let teenagers make their own decisions. If you've trained them right, they'll almost invariably, eventually make the right decision, either through bitter experience or just through obedience because they know you & the Lord are right & they know they're wrong.

183. "When they are old they will not depart from it." (Pr.22:6) They may depart from you for awhile & they may depart even from your rules & standards, etc., & want a taste of this World & want to try out having their own way, but they'll soon find out that their mama & daddy were right, & God was right, but they just want to try & see, test it out for themselves.

184. If kids can't get attention by being good, they can get it by being naughty!

185. You have got to decide on what rules must be obeyed without fail & without exception & what rules can be sometimes relaxed & exceptions made. And you have to have the wisdom of God to know the difference, which is which.--Which ones you must enforce without fail & which you can be merciful about. Even God does that.

186. Under the Law of Love God has even more rigidly enforced some rules, but He has relaxed some others where they're not as tough. You have to have the wisdom of the Lord to know the difference, when to stick to your guns & when to give up & let children have their way.

187. Each child is a personality all their own & each one has to be dealt with according to their own particular characteristics & personality.

188. Don't make any rules you don't have to. The fewer rules you have the better.

189. We should do with our children as God is with us: He tries to persuade us to do things through the right loving motivation because we want to do what's right, because we love Him & we love others, not just because we're made to, forced to, or because of fear of punishment; that's the old law!

190. For a child to be trained by love takes a lot more time & patience, but they'll be a far better child & much more obedient if they are persuaded to obey through love, rather than by breaking their will & forcing them to obey for fear of punishment!

191. Some parents have really been tough on their kids, hard, cruel & mean, & even if they were right, the kids never felt any love, no real concern, no reasoning, no rationalization, no explaining, no motivation, & so they never learned love, love of God, love of parents, love of others. They just never learned the right motivation. They only did it because they had to & were made to & they would only do as much as they were made to do, whereas love goes much further, even all the way. It'll go to the death & die for someone else, to do the right thing. And that's the way you have to be with children.

192. Some parents break their child's stubborn will by force, but that child will always be stubborn anyhow whenever he gets a chance. He'll only obey the law as long as the law enforcer is there & the minute he gets out of sight of his parents he will go wild & won't know how to handle freedom or choice!

193. The best law is Love & along with Love comes reasoning, persuasion, explaining, teaching, the Word & all the rest so that the children can make their own decisions, because they'll stick to it far better if they decide to do it themselves because they want to do right! That'll go a lot further than only doing right because you're there to make'm!

194. If the gentling & the persuading & the love & the reasoning & the leading & the teaching doesn't work & they're still stubbornly wilfully disobedient, then you've got to crack the whip.

195. Some parents never forget to punish when their kids are bad, but they forget to reward when their kids are good!

196. After it's really been made clear & children understand what you're talking about & you know it & they know it & they go ahead & test you again, that's time to apply the hand!

197. When you're disciplining children, don't ever make a threat or a warning that you don't fulfil. Because if you warn them not to do a certain thing & promise them a punishment & they do it just to test you, & then you don't give them the chastisement you promised, they'll figure, "Well, I didn't get in trouble that time, so I'll try it again."

198. Inconsistent discipline is the worst kind of discipline! It's no discipline at all. You have to be consistent. Be frank, be fair, be honest, be loving, but be firm & then be consistent.

199. Don't make your rules so strict that you're going to be sorry if you do have to keep them or make others keep them.

200. One of the worst things you can do is to give punishment that is too severe, too harsh, more than the crime or disobedience really justifies.

201. With children, you need to make it very clear what the rules are, & one of the best things you can do is to get them to agree to the rules.

202. Try to let children make a decision themselves to obey & be good, without threatening. Forbear threatening if you can, although I've found it does a lot of good sometimes.

203. You've gotta keep kids busy! They like to work & do things, but they have a little hard time thinking up things to do, so you've gotta think'm up for'm.

204. Our greatest responsibility right now is our own children! We need to mold their minds & educate them & inspire them & encourage them, we really need to build up their faith.

205. Children should not have to be involved nor burdened with matters which are above their sphere & their line of duty or their comprehension or even their capability of bearing these things.

206. If children ask you a question you should try to answer it immediately. They're important & they need to be paid attention to. If you just brush them aside like something else is more important, pretty soon they get the impression that you don't think they're important at all.

207. Sometimes when you're with children you just have to have fun with them; everything doesn't have to be educational. For goodness sake, let your hair down & have a little fun once in awhile!

208. Thank the Lord for our children! I think they have had superior training, background, teaching & experience above any children perhaps that have ever existed on the face of this Earth. They have been taught pure

doctrine, real enlightenment, freedom & a natural attitude toward the natural things of life. ... They're learning to live in the way God originally created man to live.

209. We have a more healthy, normal, sane relationship & religion than any other that I know of, & our children are becoming the living proof of that!--Smart, well-educated, well-behaved, understanding, wise, full of faith & wisely trained in the nurture & admonition of the Lord. I think our children are the best kids on Earth.

210. Our children are going to be the salvation of the future! They're going to be God's terrorists of the Tribulation!--Rising up in opposition to the Antichrist government & defying it & performing miracles & God doing mighty signs & wonders to protect them & keep them & help them to continue to preach the Gospel in spite of everything. God's going to take care of them right through to the end & they're going to see Jesus when He comes.

(See also No. 315, 330B, 371, 376, 389, 397, 400, 582, 587, 606, 608, 619, 687, 688, 708, 715, 718, 722, 728, 737, 739, 744, 745, 746, 753, 773, 779, 780, 782, 785, 786, 787, 788, 789, 790, 794, 795, 827, 863, 827, 830, 835, 878, 900, 915, 987, 990, 995, 1043, 1107, 1108, 1109, 1135, 1136, 1137, 1138, 1141, 1142, 1218, 1219, 1220, 1396, 1397, 1398, 1512, 1527, *Story of David*, *Techi's Life Story*, *HH2*, *Childcare Handbook I, II, III*.)

211. EXO.4:2 And the Lord said unto him, What is that in thine hand?

212. EXO.20:12 Honour thy father and thy mother: that thy days may be long upon the land which the Lord thy God giveth thee.

213. LEV.19:3 Fear every man his mother, and his father.

214. 1SA.2:11b And the child did minister unto the Lord before Eli the priest.

215. 1SA.2:18 But Samuel ministered before the Lord, being a child, girded with a linen ephod.

216. 1SA.11:6 A little child shall lead them.

217. PSA.144:12 That our sons may be as plants grown up in their youth; that our daughters may be as corner stones, polished after the similitude of a palace.

218. PRO.8:32,33 Hearken unto Me, O ye children: for blessed are they that keep My ways. Hear instruction, and be wise, and refuse it not.

219. PRO.10:1 A wise son maketh a glad father.

220. PRO.13:1 A wise son heareth his father's instruction: but a scorner heareth not rebuke.

221. PRO.17:6. Children's children are the crown of old men; and the glory of children are their fathers.

222. PRO.17:25 A foolish son is a grief to his father, and bitterness to her that bare him.

223. PRO.20:11 Even a child is known by his doings, whether his work be pure, and whether it be right.

224. PRO.20:20 Whoso curseth his father or his mother, his lamp shall be put out in obscure darkness.

225. PRO.28:7 Whoso keepeth the law is a wise son.

226. ISA.11:6b A little child shall lead them.

227. ISA.28:9,10 Whom shall he teach knowledge? and whom shall he make to understand doctrine? them that are weaned from the milk, and drawn from the breasts. For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little.

228. MAL.3:5 I will be a swift witness against...those that oppress...the widow, and the fatherless.

229. MAT.18:3-6 And said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the Kingdom of Heaven. Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the Kingdom of Heaven. And whoso shall receive one such little child in My Name receiveth Me. But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in Me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea.

230. MAT.18:10 Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones; for I say unto you, That in Heaven their angels do always behold the face of My Father which is in Heaven.

231. MAT.19:14 But Jesus said, Suffer little children, and forbid them not, to come unto Me: for of such is the Kingdom of Heaven.

232. MAR.7:27 But Jesus said unto her, Let the children first be filled: for it is not meet to take the children's bread, and to cast it unto the dogs.

233. MAR.9:36,37 And He took a child, and set him in the midst of them: and when He had taken him in His arms, He said unto them, Whosoever shall receive one of such children in My Name, receiveth Me: and whosoever shall receive Me, receiveth not Me, but Him that sent Me.

234. MAR.9:42 And whosoever shall offend one of these little ones that believe in Me, it is better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he were cast into the sea.

235. MAR.10:14b,15 Suffer the little children to come unto Me, and forbid them not: for of such is the Kingdom of God. Verily I say unto you, whosoever shall not receive the Kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter therein.

236. 1CO.13:11 When I was a child, I spake as a child, I understood as a child, I thought as a child: but when I became man, I put away childish things.

237. EPH.6:1,2 Children, obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right. Honour thy father and mother; (which is the first commandment with promise).

238. COL.3:20 Children, obey your parents in all things: for this is well pleasing unto the Lord.

239. HEB.2:13 Behold I and the children which God hath given me.

240. 3JO.4 I have no greater joy than to hear that my children walk in truth.

10. CHOICE & DECISION MAKING --{page 68}--



In all thy ways acknowledge Him, & He shall direct thy paths (Pro.3:6).

1. Most of the great decisions that I have made in my life as a leader have been lonely decisions where only I & God stood together.

2. You don't have to always give people an answer on the spot or make an immediate decision. If you don't know what to do, be honest & humble & admit it & say, "I'm sorry, but I don't know."

3. Most of the time God uses your good common sense & the gifts of the Spirit that He's already given you, such as wisdom, knowledge, etc., rather than some direct, spectacular, miraculous, supernatural revelation!

4. To every man there opens a high way & a low
And every man decides the way that he shall go.

5. Let us realise that what happens around us is largely outside our control, but that the way we choose to react to it is inside our control.

6. If the spiritual is OK, everything else will be all right too.

7. Our deeds determine us, as much as we determine our deeds.

8. When a decision has been made & the die is cast, then abandon the alternatives.

9. Many are called but few get up.

10. Making up your mind is like making up a bed; it usually helps to have someone on the other side.

11. Circumstances alter cases.

12. Life is a voyage in which we choose neither vessel nor weather, but much can be done in the management of the sails & the guidance of the helm.

13. Commitment brings peace.

14. If you're His child & you let Him choose, He's going to choose that which is best for you & that which will make you happy.

15. Some of God's future is set, but within the range of that future, God has many options, some of which we can change by our decisions.

16. God knew ahead of time you were going to believe & receive Him by free will & free choice, so you were already predestined & foreordained of the Lord to be saved because He knew what choice you were going to make!

17. Have you chosen your job in the next life? Well, the Lord probably will give you your choice!

18. God isn't going to make you do anything you don't want to do, but He may make you awful sorry you didn't!

19. God chooses you, because you choose Him.

20. Apparently the spirits & angels must have some choice, some freedom of action, or Satan & his angels couldn't have rebelled.

21. God leaves a great deal up to you & your faith, whether you want it or not, whether you need it or not, whether the Lord needs it or not for His Kingdom.

22. If you choose the Lord & choose his service, God will choose someone to help you!

23. This whole game of life is constant choices.

24. If you're not yet certain that a thing is God's will, then the best thing to do is to wait on the Lord.

25. Whatever glorifies God, that's what's right!

26. Be sure to find God's will for you, even if it's not God's will for anybody else.

27. One man's meat could be another man's poison!

28. God may give you your choice, but He alone knows what's best, so you'd better ask Him to find out where He wants you!

29. Knowing what choice you were going to make, God ordained you to be saved before He even created the World! I believe in both predestination & choice.

30. The Lord is trying to teach you to make decisions, & one of the main principles involved in reaching a decision is: Don't start talking--pray!

31. He knows, He loves, He cares,
Nothing His Truth can dim!
He gives His very best to those
Who leave the choice with Him!

32. Why didn't God stop Hitler? If God had stepped in & intervened & stopped Hitler, He would have had to stop every sinner in the World from doing his sin & wickedness!--And when He does that, that will be the End!

33. I don't like to make snap judgements, unless I get a sudden direct revelation from the Lord.

34. If you love the Lord with all your heart, your personal desires are usually the right ones, because you only want to please Him.

35. Contrary to popular opinion, God does not usually choose for you. You have to choose for yourself, find His will for yourself, seek him diligently to know His will.

36. The main reason we're here in the first place is to learn how to make decisions under God's guidance, from the Garden of Eden to the present.

37. I believe in trying to give a man his choice to do what he has the faith for.

38. What is always the first thing you should think about when you begin to meditate & pray about God's answer? Think about similar situations in the Word--what did they do?

39. Are you going to live for today to save your life & eventually lose it?--Or are you going to live for Christ & lose your life & eventually save it forever? The choice is up to you!

40. God will not usually override human choice.

41. All decisions of any kind should never be dictated by one person without agreement by other leaders &/or the rest of the body, as seems necessary.

42. I may not know when it am, but I shor knows when it ain't!

43. First impressions are usually the right ones, if you're truly asking the Lord.

44. You were foreordained or predestined because of the choice God knew you were going to make.

45. When you have to make a choice & don't make it, that is in itself a choice.

46. The most dangerous enemy you've got is yourself. All Heaven is at your command, but you still have the majesty of choice & your stubborn spirit can do as it damn well pleases!

47. There are some things that God cannot do, because He will not do them, because He has bound Himself within certain limitations, & confined Himself to not interfering with your power of choice, because you have to make the decision & He's not going to force you to do His will.

48. Whenever you confront people with the truth you precipitate a crisis & they have to make a decision!

49. There's nothing that tears you apart and wears you down quicker than indecision.

50. The minute you make the decision & begin to obey, God does all the rest!

51. Some people like to have you make decisions for them so they don't have to put forth the effort in prayer & sober analysing of the situation...especially when later they might be blamed for it!--But that's the price of making decisions!

52. That should be considered long, which can be decided but once.
53. Not all open doors are of the Lord; some of them can be tricks of the Devil.
54. Every time of testing & trial & sifting is a time of decision.
55. When people fail, then God has to step in & intervene in the affairs of man.
56. He has to give us the opportunity to have our own way and choice to see if we will do our own will, His will or the Devil's will.
57. The marvel & mystery of human will is that it's almost as though Life's a scale, & human will is a finger that can tip the scale either way.
58. Indecision is nearly always the worst mistake you can make.
59. That's what you're here for--to learn to make decisions!
60. Our whole life & experience here on Earth is for the purpose of learning to make wise decisions.
61. I don't believe everything I hear & I don't follow everything I hear, but at least I listen. I try to weigh it & see if it's got any value or any worth.
62. Sometimes you can reach a decision by the process of elimination, weighing all the things in favour of the decision & all the things against that particular choice, sort of a balance sheet to try to weigh the advantages & the disadvantages of a particular move or plan.
63. After you've made a decision, always pray, "Lord, if we've made the wrong decision, please stop us."
64. There's a certain leeway & allowance for variations of choice in the will of God as long as it stays within certain boundaries, within the tunnel of God's will. Of course there's always the best even within the tunnel, but as long as you stay in the correct general area He'll give you your choice.
65. In making decisions the Lord expects you to use your own good common sense & the wisdom He has given you by the Spirit.
66. God doesn't necessarily have to give you a special revelation to help you make a choice, He just gives you wisdom & leading of the Spirit & a certain feeling. If you arrive at a decision this way, then you simply proceed along this line unless God stops you. You go on the last orders you received unless you receive new contrary orders.
67. In one decision the Early Church made, it didn't say that God's Spirit told them or gave them any revelation; it just said "it seemed good to all of them" that they should do so-and-so.
68. God's will is sort of like a tunnel--within this tunnel you can go back & forth & choose your path within the will of God, & there's a whole lot of variety.
69. I seldom ever made a major decision that affected the whole Family without getting the Family together in prayer. Usually God had already shown me what to do or I felt led to do a certain thing or go in a certain direction or to a certain location, but I'd always have the Family together for prayer to check it out with them & see if it seemed good to all of them as well. If they had any other ideas, objections or could bring up any points, why not? Discussion helps & usually confirms the right choice.
70. In making decisions we go pretty much by common sense & a multitude of counsellors, conditions, circumstances, fleeces, Scriptures, leadings, all kinds of ways of finding the will of God.
71. There are a multitude of factors involved in finding the will of the Lord sometimes. They don't always agree necessarily, but usually the majority of them do.
72. Sometimes finding the will of God is to go ahead & make a decision, & if it's the wrong one He'll sure stop you! God may have reasons or know there are reasons why something else may be better & that's where we have to keep really in tune & make sure we follow the Lord.
73. One sure way of finding the will of God is to make the wrong decision, because He'll almost always immediately correct you if you're willing to be shown.
74. I've found out you can solve a lot of problems just by using common sense, just thinking it through & thinking it out & saying, now what do we have to do that we must do & what can we leave out that we don't have to do & what can we do without?
75. How do you find the Will of God?--By having no will of your own!
76. For a Christian, what is a decision?--What are you trying to find?--The Will of God!
77. When we don't make our own choices, we're shrinking from our job & our responsibility & the main purpose for which we were placed here, & that is to make decisions in the Lord & under His guidance!
78. Man was created & put here to make a choice between good & evil, to do right or wrong, to serve God or himself or the Devil, & to learn the benefits of serving God--reaping the joy & happiness & pleasures of keeping God's loving rules for his own good & worshipping & thanking God for it all in return, as grateful children of their Heavenly Father.
79. The Lord has put us here in this World to make decisions, to do right or wrong.

80. You may have temporary relief when making a decision even if it's the wrong one, but you'll have Hell to pay in the long run!

81. A lot of things may not be the right thing or even the wrong thing, but just not the thing that God wants done the most.

82. You must be careful not to jump to conclusions. To jump to a conclusion means to jump to the end too quick before you should get there, & too quickly into thinking something you're not sure about yet.

83. That's why people want you to make their decisions for them--so they won't get blamed for it; they want you to take the blame in case anything goes wrong.

84. Don't go jumping the gun & making premature decisions about things!

85. The Lord probably doesn't give us too much specific information on exactly what's going to happen & exactly when it's going to happen because for one reason a lot depends on us, on what we do & how fast we get the job done & the choices & decisions we make.

86. We can't go dogmatically predicting the future when so much of it is dependent on us & what we do & how well we do it, or even whether we do it!

87. The Lord has promised to give us signs. Watch for the hints, the indications, the little signs of the times regarding events & also signs in individuals, in their lives, their minds, their hearts, their actions, their reactions, their diligence, faithfulness & loyalty.

88. We don't always know exactly what to do yet because we don't need to know.

(See also No. 4, 74, 127, 238, 317C, 829, 1324, 1394.)

89. DEU.30:19 I call Heaven and Earth to record this day against you, that I have set before you life and death, blessing and cursing: therefore choose life, that both thou and thy seed may live.

90. PSA.27:11 Teach me Thy way, O Lord, and lead me in a plain path, because of mine enemies.

91. PSA.37:23 The steps of a good man are ordered by the Lord: and he delighteth in His way.

92. PRO.19:21 There are many devices in a man's heart; nevertheless the counsel of the Lord, that shall stand.

93. PRO.20:5 Counsel in the heart of man is like deep water; but a man of understanding will draw it out.

94. PRO.20:18 Every purpose is established by counsel: and with good advice make war.

95. PRO.24:6 For by wise counsel thou shalt make thy war: and in multitude of counsellors there is safety.

96. PRO.24:26 Every man shall kiss his lips that giveth a right answer.

97. PRO.27:9 Ointment and perfume rejoice the heart: so doth the sweetness of a man's friend by hearty counsel.

98. 2CO.13:1 In the mouth of two or three witnesses shall every word be established.

(See also DEU.30:19,20; 2SA.24:12-14.)



For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord (Lk.2:11).

1. Christmas is Love come down to Earth,
A Gift to the World of infinite worth!
2. If you love all that Christmasy materialism of downtown & its Christmas shopping, then there's something wrong with you.
3. May the Lord deliver us & our children from this worldly Christmas-shopping spirit!
4. There's no use having a Christmas tree unless you can make it a testimony or a witness!
5. It is Christmas on the highway,
In the thronging busy mart;
But the dearest truest Christmas,
Is the Christmas in the heart.
6. Christmas' present at the start,
Was a gift from Someone's heart.
Christ is Christmas,
That day is His.
That's what Christmas presence is.
7. We hear the Christmas angels,
The great glad tidings tell;
O come to us, abide with us,
Our Lord Emmanuel.
8. Christmas is when Love is king,
And Love can do most anything!
9. He had no royal palace,
Only a stable bare.
He had no watchful servants,
An ox & ass stood there.
But light shone forth from where He lay,
The King of Love upon the hay!
10. Christmas will always bring new hope, new courage--As always through the darkness the Christmas Star shines its pledge of peace & freedom.
11. Love came down at Christmas,
Love all lovely, Love Divine.
Love was born at Christmas,
Stars and angels gave the sign.
12. Worship we our Saviour,
Love incarnate, Love divine.
Worship we our Jesus,
And by His Light we shine.
13. Christmas time, it goes so fast,
It's here and then it's gone.
But if you have Christ in your heart,

Then Christmas will live on.

14. Christmas time, O Christmas time!

--Always live in my heart and mind.

Lord help me not to go astray!

--But to live each day like Christmas day.

15. Don't let the true meaning of Christmas & the true symbolism of the tree & the genuine Christ spirit of Christmas become drowned in all the confusion of this World & its worldliness!

16. You can help the World to turn their empty Xmas into a joyous Christmas!

17. I believe in celebrating Christmas as Jesus' Birthday with a nice Christmas dinner, Christmas communion, & a nice time of Family fellowship.

18. The Christmas tree itself can be made to symbolise the beauty of life & living.

19. The decorations that you hang upon the tree are like the gifts of the Spirit.

20. Give the ultimate Christmas gift--Jesus!

21. Christmas is one time the World is compelled to recognise Jesus--it's His Birthday!

22. For the Son of God was given,

And was hung upon a tree,

And God's greatest gift for Christmas

Is His Love for you & me.

23. Happy Birthday to You, Happy Birthday to You,

Happy Birthday dear Jesus, Happy Birthday to You!

(See also No. 636, 638, 944, 949, 1063.)

24. MAT.2:1-12 Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judaea in the days of Herod the king, behold, there came wise men from the east to Jerusalem, Saying, Where is He that is born King of the Jews? for we have seen His star in the east, and are come to worship Him. When Herod the king had heard these things, he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him. And when he had gathered all the chief priests and scribes of the people together, he demanded of them where Christ should be born. And they said unto him, In Bethlehem of Judaea: for thus it is written by the prophet, And thou Bethlehem, in the land of Juda, art not the least among the princes of Juda: for out of thee shall come a Governor, that shall rule My people Israel. Then Herod, when he had privily called the wise men, enquired of them diligently what time the star appeared. And he sent them to Bethlehem, and said, Go and search diligently for the young Child; and when ye have found Him, bring me word again, that I may come and worship Him also. When they had heard the king, they departed; and, lo, the star, which they saw in the east, went before them, till it came and stood over where the young Child was. When they saw the star they rejoiced with exceeding great joy. And when they were come into the house, they saw the young Child with Mary His mother, and fell down, and worshipped Him: and when they had opened their treasures they presented unto Him gifts; gold, frankincense, and myrrh. And being warned of God in a dream that they should not return to Herod, they departed into their own country another way.

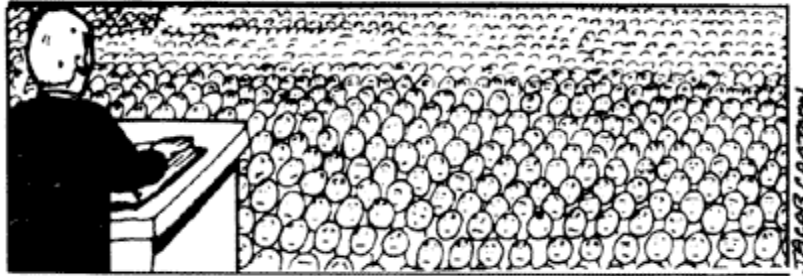
25. LUK.2:1-17 And it came to pass in those days, that there went out a decree from Caesar Augustus, that all the World should be taxed. (And this taxing was first made when Cyrenius was governor of Syria.) And all went to be taxed, every one into his own city. And Joseph also went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into Judaea, unto the city of David, which is called Bethlehem; (because he was of the house and lineage of David:) To be taxed with Mary his espoused wife, being great with child. And so it was, that, while they were there, the days were accomplished that she should be delivered. And she brought forth her firstborn Son, and wrapped Him in swaddling clothes, and laid Him in a manger; because there was no room in the inn. And there were in the same country shepherds abiding in the field, keeping watch over their flock by night. And lo, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them: and they were sore afraid. And the angel said unto them. Fear not: for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people. For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord. And this shall be a sign unto you; Ye shall find the babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, lying in a manger. And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God, and saying, Glory to God in the highest and on Earth peace, good will toward men. And it came to pass, as the angels were gone away from them into heaven, the shepherds said to one another, Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing which is come to pass, which the Lord hath made known unto us. And they came with haste, and found Mary, and Joseph, and the babe lying in a manger. And when they had seen it, they make known abroad the saying which was told them concerning this Child.

26. JOH.6:38 For I came down from Heaven, not to do Mine own will, but the will of Him that sent Me.

27. JOH.8:42. Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love Me: for I proceeded forth and came from God; neither came I of Myself, but He sent Me.

12. CHURCHIANITY & ORGANISED RELIGION

--{page 80}--



Making the Word of God of none effect through your tradition (Mk.7:13).

1. Thank God for all true churches of Jesus Christ, whatever their denomination.
2. A seminary is usually a cemetery for faith.
3. Organised Christianity has probably done more to retard the ideals that were its Founder's than any other agency in the world.
4. Let's not get as self-righteous as the churchy system who condemn us totally just because we are not like them. Let's not get so Holier-than-thou that we condemn even the few good things that are still left in the System.
5. The people who have joined the Church System have stepped out of the action in the arena, into the onlookers of the grandstand.
6. The first thing that old church will do, is start by criticising you.
7. There are no second-generation Christians. Every new generation either has to personally drop out or cop out.
8. Because the churches wouldn't share what little knowledge they had about the Spirit World & how God operates it, God took the knowledge of it away!
9. The way of the world is to praise dead saints & to persecute living ones.
10. There's too much churchianity & not enough Christianity.
11. There are many people who think that Sunday is a sponge to wipe out all the sins of the week.
12. Some families think that Sunday morning church is like a convention. Each sends a delegate.
13. I hate the System from which I came with a perfect hatred, because it is a lie & a delusion & a deceit & is damning souls to Hell when it ought to be saving them!
14. In most churches where I got to preaching I really got carried away--by the ushers usually!
15. How can the Lord bless those preachers when they're so far off the track in some of their endtime doctrines?--Because, nevertheless the Gospel is preached.
16. Christians are now the spectators in the Coliseum, not the martyrs.
17. No wonder the World has become Godless & communist & gone to the Devil--the church has absolutely totally miserably failed in its job of witnessing to the World!
18. No wonder the World has gone to Hell & is lost, when the whole Church has given the biggest job that there is to be done of witnessing & winning souls to just one man, the preacher!
19. These churches & preachers & evangelists really missed one of the biggest things they could have had by fighting sex all the time!
20. The church had its place, particularly to give at least some religious training to youth & children, some kind of sowing of the seed, casting the bread on the water so that someday it would have some effect.
21. The Saducee was SAD, YOU SEE, because he didn't believe in the Resurrection! The Pharisee was FAIR, I SEE, because he figured he was very fair to see & very religious & righteous!

22. All false religions always martyr the followers of the true religion.
23. Most people go to church three times in their life: The first time they're sprinkled with water, the next time with rice, & the last time with dirt!
24. Peter preached one sermon & got 3,000 converts--now preachers preach 3,000 sermons & get one convert.
25. The babe with the Spirit and a handful of good verses and a will to witness, can accomplish more than all the Bible College graduates put together!
26. The church of today has moved out of the arena & into the grandstand.
27. The churches build for eternity as though it won't be very long & they build for this life as though it will be forever.
28. The blood of the martyrs is the seed of the true church, & the more they kill, the more will take their place.
29. The churches have made illegitimate almost everything that's pleasurable, the Lord's God-given blessings!
30. A sad world cannot be sweetened by sour religion.
31. Churches are the World's greatest waste--billions of dollars spent on church buildings could have long ago evangelised the whole World!
32. God dwells in life! He dwells more in one little sparrow than in all the cathedrals put together!
33. Churches & church buildings have damned more souls & sent more people to Hell than anything else, because they have robbed the poor & robbed the World of the Gospel!
34. Most church members are spiritual invalids & the church is their hospital!
35. One man that gets out of those church buildings can do more good than all the Christians put together that are still left inside!
36. It's almost more difficult to get delivered from Churchianity than it is from dope! That kind of religion is nothing but a drug & a drag!
37. The greatest danger in America today is not drink or drugs or even crime, it's churchianity, the great delusion, the big lie!
38. You can go to church every Sunday morning & still go to Hell!
39. The church today is about as far away from what Jesus preached as Capitalism is from Communism!
40. The reason dramas get the crowds & the churches don't is: The preachers preach their fact as though it were fiction, while the actors act their fiction as though it were fact.
41. The Pharisees spoke from their heads, but Jesus spoke from His heart.
42. By church experiences you're inoculated with just enough of the Truth to make you immune to the whole Truth!
43. Too many people who say "Our Father" on Sunday spend the rest of the week acting like orphans.
44. Church membership does not make you a Christian any more than owning a piano makes you a musician.
45. Some people use religion like a bus--they ride on it only when it's going their way.
46. Religious experience is meant to be bread for daily use, not cake for special occasions.
47. The church has committed genocide by having no children!
48. The worst gyp is bargain-counter salvation that doesn't save you & you wind up in Hell when you thought you'd paid your way to Heaven!
49. That's what destroyed the Christian church, when they started removing the Bible and the Words of God!
50. The proud paper-piggy people-eaters that devour the poor would rather die first than serve God our way!
51. The church, while rich and increased in goods materially, has become wretched and naked and blind spiritually!
52. More church people take the name of God in vain in their singing than all the cursing wicked of the World!
53. The church which is not a missionary church will be a missing church when Jesus comes.
54. The church today is so scared of everything they haven't got anything, so afraid of a little life, they're damned dead, so afraid of a little fire, they've got no fire, so afraid of sex, they've got nothing but hypocrisy!
55. We can't renovate the church!--But we can get out & build a new one!--Of living stones! (1Pet.2:4-5)
56. Usually the false cults do better than we do as far as getting numbers & the money--more people go for the lie than for the truth.

57. It's always the False Church who stirs up the political government against the True Church.
58. The Old church is like an old shoe:
--You can polish perhaps, but never renew!
59. God never once said to build church buildings! He never once said to establish Bible Colleges & Universities! He never once said to build great & costly cathedrals! He just said, "Go ye into all the World & preach the Gospel to every creature!"
60. Not all that the churches teach is bad. Not everything the Devil teaches is bad either, because if it were all bad nobody would swallow it.
61. Our biggest enemy is not big business or big government or even big education. These are only the tools that our greatest enemy, the Whore, the religious system, uses.
62. Churchianity, church-worship, building-worship, temple-worship, place-worship is idolatry & more deceptive & deluding & damning than drink!--Because you can get drunk & it only lasts a little while, but you drink of those dry cisterns & polluted wells & you never wake up unless God drops a bomb on you!
63. The churches are nurseries for spiritual babies, perpetual stretcher cases that will never grow up!
64. Church-worship, building-worship, service-worship, ceremony-worship are subtle & insidious & dangerous & damning because they're so deceptive & deluding.
65. "Their children do sicken Me & their luxury doth cause Me to abhor them, & their beauty is a reproach unto Me & I shall utterly cast them out & destroy their palaces & strip them of all these things, until they shall beg unto Me for mercy."
66. "In rejecting thee she doth also reject Me. And she shall be left alone & desolate as those things that she honoured most, her buildings & her ceremonies, & her doctrines & the opinions of men & her pride & jealousy which do eat as a canker to destroy. Therefore shall that which she loved most destroy her & leave her desolate."
67. You never heard of Jesus going into any bar & making a whip & turning over the bar & breaking up the bottles & throwing out the bartender! But He went into the church building & He made a whip, & He broke up the furniture & spilled the money & drove those damned moneychangers out of the church!
68. You never heard of Jesus going into a house of prostitution & beating up on those poor hardworking prostitutes & throwing those old beds out the window! But He went into the nice big beautiful Temple building & broke up the furniture & overturned the tables & drove out the guys who ran it!
69. Most of the churches are whited sepulchres full of dead men's bones, & the only way they reach Heaven is by their spiritual stench!
70. When the Church left the arena & started sitting in the grandstands in order to avoid death by braving the lions, the Church died of old age in the stands!
71. There's no law in the entire Bible that says you have to go to church on Sunday, or even hints you have to go to church on Sunday!
72. Church is a good place to sleep, nice & quiet, pretty music, nothing shocking is said, it's all the same old thing.
73. The True Church are the genuine Christian believers in God who follow Jesus--the born-again, Saved, Body of Christ--not a building or a denomination or a religion!
74. That's Churchianity through & through: They spend most of their time worshipping the past & glorifying the past & advocating the past because they've got nothing now except the past. The Church is a has-been!
75. The whole Church is looking into the past, everybody travelling backwards into the past, glorifying the past & glorifying all [the] Jews of the past & their ... history. Very few of them are good examples. In fact, the good ones were such shining examples & so rare that they really shone in the midst of ... Jewish history. ...
76. The Church is standing with their backs to the Future. They've even got their backs on the present. They've turned their back on the heathen, they've turned their back on the World, they've turned their back on the poor lost sinner! They've certainly got their back to the Future & they're going backwards in time, so what good are they? All they're doing is studying the ancient history & the ancient past & all the ancient junk that is over & God is through with.
77. The Devil has got the whole Church system not only absolutely totally sidetracked, but completely turned around, going the opposite way on the track into the past!
78. The Church system doesn't have anything else to do: They don't witness, they don't litness, they don't live by faith. They don't win souls. They're not doing the job God gave them to do, so they've got to fill up their time with something that looks & seems religious & is supposedly good, so they spend all of their time studying the past & how great they used to be & how glorious it used to be & what great heroes there used to be.

79. That's the whole Church system & Bible College system--reading, hearing & studying what somebody else has to say about the Bible instead of reading the Bible for themselves.

80. As far as the Church system is concerned, the day of miracles is past, the day of great men of God is past, the day of evangelising the World is past & everything is past, so they spend all of their time studying the past since they've got nothing in the present & know nothing about the future, & couldn't care less.

81. We've only got a few years left to get the job done that they failed to do while they were so busy studying Ancient History & the past & what others did that they aren't or weren't doing & thought they couldn't do since it had already been done & nobody could do it anymore. Nobody could be heroes any more. Nobody could perform miracles anymore. Nobody could live that way by faith anymore. Nobody could die as martyrs for the faith anymore; it's all past. "You aren't expected to do that now. Just hold down your job, earn your money, come to Church on Sunday, support the Church & the preacher & he'll tell you all you need to know. That's all you need."

82. In the old days the poor were fed by the preachers!--Nowadays the preachers are fed by the poor!

83. There are lots of people in the World who think they're serving God when they are actually serving the Devil!

84. There are lots of people serving the Devil who think they're praying to God & serving God. There are whole religions that think they're serving God who are serving no one but the Devil!

85. Compromising with the church people like Paul did & trying to please the church people never did a thing for Paul.

(See also No. G, 69A, 117, 148, 153, 167, 170, 179, 180, 183, 184, 192, 200, 219, 266, 399, 605, 631, 647, 648, 834, 848, 986, 1116, 1141, 1274, 1283, 1287, 1385, 1401, 1478, 1510, 1514.)

86. PRO.15:8 The sacrifice of the wicked is an abomination to the Lord.

87. ISA.29:13 Wherefore the Lord said, Forasmuch as this people draw near Me with their mouth, and with their lips do honour Me, but have removed their heart far from Me, and their fear toward Me is taught by the precept of men.

88. ISA.30:9-11 That this is a rebellious people, lying children, children that will not hear the law of the Lord: Which say to the seers, See not; and to the prophets, Prophecy not unto us right things, speak unto us smooth things, prophecy deceits: Get you out of the way, turn aside out of the path, cause the Holy One of Israel to cease from before us.

89. ISA.56:10-12 His watchmen are blind: they are all ignorant, they are all dumb dogs, they cannot bark; sleeping, lying down, loving to slumber. Yea, they are greedy dogs which can never have enough, and they are shepherds that cannot understand: they all look to their own way, every one for his gain, from his quarter. Come ye, say they, I will fetch wine, and we will fill ourselves with strong drink; and to morrow shall be as this day, and much more abundant.

90. JER.5:30,31 A wonderful and horrible thing is committed in the land; The prophets prophesy falsely, and the priests bear rule by their means; and My people love to have it so.

91. JER.50:6 My people hath been lost sheep: their shepherds have caused them to go astray, they have turned them away on the mountains: they have gone from mountain to hill, they have forgotten their resting place.

92. EZE.33:31,32 And they come unto thee as the people cometh, and they sit before thee as My people, and they hear thy words, but they will not do them: for with their mouth they shew much love, but their heart goeth after their covetousness. And, lo, thou art unto them as a very lovely song of one that hath a pleasant voice, and can play well on an instrument: for they hear thy words, but they do them not.

93. EZE.34:2,3 Son of man, prophesy against the shepherds of Israel, prophesy, and say unto them, Thus saith the Lord God unto the shepherds; Woe be to the shepherds of Israel that do feed themselves! should not the shepherds feed the flocks? Ye eat the fat, and ye clothe you with the wool, ye kill them that are fed: but ye feed not the flock.

94. MAL.1:6 A son honoureth his father, and a servant his master: if then I be a father, where is mine honour? and if I be a master, where is my fear? saith the Lord of hosts unto you, O priests, that despise My Name.

95. MAT.7:15 Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves.

96. MAT.7:21,23 Not every one that saith unto Me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the Kingdom of Heaven; but he that doeth the will of My Father which is in Heaven. And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from Me, ye that work iniquity.

97. MAT.15:3 But He answered and said unto them, why do ye also transgress the commandment of God by your tradition?

98. MAT.15:8,9 This people draweth nigh unto Me with their mouth, and honoureth Me with their lips; but their heart is far from Me. But in vain they do worship Me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.

99. MAT.15:14 They be blind leaders of the blind. And if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch.

100. MAT.23:3-5 All therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, that observe and do; but do not ye after their works: for they say, and do not. For they bind heavy burdens and grievous to be borne, and lay them on men's shoulders; but they themselves will not move them with one of their fingers. But all their works they do for to be seen of men: they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments.

101. Mat.23:13 But woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye shut up the Kingdom of Heaven against men: for ye neither go in yourselves, neither suffer ye them that are entering to go in.

102. MAT.23:24,26,27 Ye blind guides, which strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel. Thou blind Pharisee, cleanse first that which is within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead men's bones, and of all uncleanness.

103. MAR.7:6 He answered and said unto them, Well hath Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written, This people honoureth Me with their lips, but their heart is far from Me.

104. MAR.7:9 And He said unto them, Full well ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition.

105. Mar.7:13 Making the Word of God of none effect through your tradition, which ye have delivered: and many such like things do ye.

106. LUK.6:46 And why call ye Me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say?

107. LUK.11:42 Ye tithe mint and rue and all manner of herbs, and pass over judgment and the love of God: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone.

108. 2TI.3:5 Having a form of Godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away.

109. TIT.1:16 They profess that they know God; but in works they deny Him, being abominable, and disobedient, and unto every good work reprobate.

110. HEB.9:24 For Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands, which are the figures of the true; but into Heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us.

13. COMFORT --{page 90}--



Who comforteth us in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them which are in any trouble, by the comfort wherewith we ourselves are comforted of God (2Cor.1:4).

1. He gives me joy in place of sorrow,
He gives me love that casts out fear,
He gives me sunshine for my shadow,
And beauty for ashes dear!
2. O Joy, that seeketh me through pain,
I cannot close my heart to thee
I trace the rainbow through the rain,
And feel the promise is not in vain,
That morn shall tearless be.
3. When all our hopes are gone & all seems to fail, even when our dreams are shattered & our ships come home with broken sails, we still have Jesus!--And He's all we need!
4. Jesus still remembers when the World forgets.
5. I sometimes tremble on the Rock, but the Rock never trembles under me.
6. Earth has no sorrow that Heaven cannot heal.
7. God's tomorrow, God's tomorrow!
Every cloud will pass away,
With the dawning of that day!
God's tomorrow! No more sorrow!
For I know that God's tomorrow,
Will be brighter than today!
8. The darkest hour is just before dawn, & then it'll be God's tomorrow which will last forever with you & me!
9. Ye fearful saints, fresh courage take!
The clouds ye so much dread
Are big with mercy & shall break
In blessing on your head!
10. When you walk through the storm
Hold your head up high
And don't be afraid of the dark.
At the end of the storm is a golden sky
And the sweet silver song of a lark.
11. The Lord can make even a little bit of Egypt into a little bit of Heaven if Jesus is there with you.
12. He restoreth my soul when I'm weary
He giveth me strength day by day
He leads me beside the still waters
He guards me each step of the way.
13. You can give Him away as much as you want but never get rid of Him.--You'll always have Him & He's always near.

14. When all is dark & I cannot see
I call Your Name, You come to me
You take my hand & draw me near
You light my way & make it clear!

15. When everything else is passed away, you'll still have Jesus! When everything else is gone, there'll still be Jesus. When all others forsake you, there'll still be Jesus. When you haven't got anything left, there'll still be Jesus. When the World has nothing left, you'll still have Jesus!

16. Beloved, the outlook for us in this World & our future here could hardly be darker!--But the uplook could hardly be brighter or more glorious!

17. The darker the outlook, the brighter the uplook.

18. "For I am He that filleth all things, to pour out upon the thirsty ground, to beautify the lowly life, to heal the ragged wounds, to enlighten the darkened minds, to bring Grace & Beauty & Wisdom."

19. You've got all the Promises in the whole Bible on your side.

20. The future is as bright as the Promises of God!

21. God puts consolation only where He first put pain.

22. Without weaknesses, we couldn't help others.

23. There's nothing you're going through but what Jesus has gone through already!

24. God is with us & the storm cannot overcome us!

25. We cannot lose! It is impossible to defeat us!--Our enemies are already doomed & damned to defeat & Hell!

26. Nothing happens to you that hasn't happened to someone else.

27. He was better to me than all my hopes,

He was brighter than all my fears;

He made a bridge of my broken works,

And a rainbow of my tears.

28. Though we tremble in the dark,

In need of strength & help & cheer,

We have a tender Father's Word,

Fear thou not, for I am here!

29. There's no greater comfort than to remember that when you're living in the centre of God's Will, nothing can ever happen to you without God's permission.

30. When wearied with the strain of it all, you can fly to God on the wings of prayer & faith & get the relief that He alone can give you.

31. Some through the waters, some through the flood,

Some through the fire, but all through the Blood.

Some through great sorrows, but God gives a song,

In the night season & all the day long!

32. His Word is always a comfort & the Voice of His Spirit is always an encouragement in the hour of greatest trial.

33. Thank God for the comfort of His cleansing Word!

34. Turn your eyes upon Jesus

Look full in His wonderful face,

And the things of Earth shall grow strangely dim,

In the light of His glory & grace!

35. The Lord said, "Will I not care for My Own?"--We & our little ones & all of His children everywhere!

36. The Lord is able to keep us through anything & everything!

37. Forget thyself; console the sadness near thee;

Thine own shall then depart,

And songs of joy, like heavenly birds, shall cheer thee

And dwell within thy heart.

38. Soon He's coming back to welcome me,

Far beyond the starry sky!

I shall wing my flight to worlds unknown

I shall reign with Him on high!

39. Help them to know the joy, the love & the healing balm, Lord, that cleanses every heart & heals every wound & removes every stain.

40. If He can just break & melt your heart, then He woos & wins it & warms & melts it & makes it bright & burning & happy!--And it's no longer solitaire!

41. "I shall wipe away all their tears, neither shall they remember them any more, for all their pain shall be forgotten in the beauties & joys that are to come!"

42. "Yet a little while, & time shall be no more! Just a little more time, a little while, & thou shalt be with Me forever! Sorrow shall endure for a season, but joy cometh in the morning. Then all these things shall be swept away! Wonderful comfort ye one another with these Words!"

43. "I shall take away thy pain & thy grief forever with everlasting joy & eternal solace that shall never end!"

44. "Even as this perfume wipes away the evil, so shall My Love wipe away the hurt!"

45. When Jesus comes, the Tempter's power is broken,

When Jesus comes, your tears are wiped away!

He takes your gloom, & fills your life with glory!

For all is changed when Jesus comes to stay!

46. When your heart is aching, turn to Jesus,

He's the dearest Friend that you can know.

You will find Him standing close beside you

Waiting peace & blessing to bestow!

47. He heals every heartache,

He hears every sigh,

This wonderful Saviour of mine!

He helps me in trouble,

He heeds when I cry,

This wonderful Saviour of mine!

48. No one ever cared for me like Jesus!

There's no other Friend so kind & true!

No one else could take that sin & sadness from me,

Oh, how much He cares for me!

49. I have nothing to do with tomorrow,

My Saviour has made that His care.

Its grace & its strength I can't borrow,

So why should I borrow its care?

50. Fear thou not for I am with thee,

I will still thy Pilot be.

Never mind those tossing billows,

Take My hand & trust in Me!

51. I sing because I'm happy!

I sing because I'm free!

For His eye is on the sparrow,

And I know He cares for me!

52. You are His forever, so He'll never leave nor forsake you even unto the end of the World! He'll hold you fast!

53. Let not your heart be troubled,

His tender words do hear.

Just rest within His goodness

And lose your doubts & fears!

54. Did you stumble today? Did you fall today? The Lord saw it, He cares & He's going to hold you no matter what. Even if you stumble & fall, the Lord will lift you up!

55. God is still on the Throne

And He will remember His Own!

Though trials may press us & burdens distress us

He never will leave us alone!

God is still on the Throne,

He never forsaketh His Own!

His Promise is true, He will not forget you,

God is still on the Throne!

56. What are you worrying about?--You're in His hands!

57. The valley may be dark, the shadows deep,
But the Shepherd guards His lonely sheep!

58. "Blessed are they that mourn, for they shall be comforted!" Blessed to mourn? More blessed to have problems & sorrows? Yes, because you will be comforted!

59. He Himself will never suffer us to be tempted above that which we are able to bear!--He always gives us some way of escape!

60. You don't know how you're going to make it, but He can make it for you!

61. The Great Physician now is near,
The sympathising Jesus!
He speaks, the drooping heart to cheer,
Oh, hear the voice of Jesus!

62. Even though all around you is war & confusion, you can have peace in your own heart through the Prince of Peace, Jesus Christ!

63. Jesus never sleeps! He watches all the time, & all of His Angels--& His Saints!--He knows every hair of your head.--Everything is in His hands!

64. He hideth my soul in the cleft of the Rock (Jesus),
That shadows a dry, thirsty land;
He hideth my life in the depths of His Love,
And covers me there with His hand!

65. Safe in the arms of Jesus,
Safe on His gentle breast!
There shall thy heart be happy,
There shalt thou find sweet rest!

66. I want you to really get thrilled & excited & looking forward to Heaven, & it will help you bear some of these burdens & trials that you're going through now when you realise these are only just for a moment!

67. The suffering of this present time is not anything to be compared to the glories that we are going to share in the near future!--Rom.8:18.

68. Be steadfast, unmoveable, work hard for the Lord, because your labours are not in vain! You're going to inherit that marvellous Heavenly body & Heavenly City before long!

69. Just open your heart & let the sun shine in!--When you look up, the sky is the limit!--Up There the Sun is always shining! The light is always shining at the end of the tunnel, always!

70. We abide under the shadow of the Almighty! We are overshadowed, we are enveloped. Your arms are about us, & we are one!

71. "Blessed is he that seeketh My face in the hour of trouble. So shall he be in the hour of triumph, & I will be with him!"

72. "Blessed is she, the daughter of peace, that hath found a place within His Kingdom, a safe harbour within His arms!"

73. Jesus, Lover of my soul,
Let me to Thy bosom fly,
While the nearer waters roll,
While the tempest still is high!

74. While there's life, there's hope.

75. "Ye shall be safe in the midst of storm, in the hollow of My hand in the place that I have prepared for thee, if thou shalt go & be obedient to the things that I shall show thee!"

76. God will not allow anything to come to me that He & I together can't handle.

77. Sorrow comes to stretch out places in our hearts for joy.

78. Out of 1000 things that can come into a Christian's life, it is not 999 of them that work together for good, but 999 plus one!

79. When a man can do nothing else, he can pray. A praying man can never be a useless man.

80. Sing through the darkness & sing in the light--
Sing with the morning & sing in the night;
Sing when your eyes have been clouded with pain,
Sing in the sunshine & sing through the rain.

81. We can never stumble in the darkness if He leads us.

82. God does not comfort us to make us comfortable, but to make us comforters.

83. Long years ago I planned it all for thee;
 Prepared it that thou mightst find need of Me.
 Without it, child, thou wouldst not come to
 Find this place of comfort in this Love of Mine.
 Hadst thou no cross like this for Me to bear,
 Thou wouldst not feel the need of My strong care;
 But in thy weakness thou didst come to Me,
 And through this plan I have won thee.

84. If the Weaver of our life's pattern chooses another plan than the one we thought to use, is He not wiser than we? Surely it will be a pattern more beautiful than our fondest dreams!

85. Hearts growing a-weary with heavier woe,
 Now droop, 'mid the darkness, Go comfort them, go!
 Go bury thy sorrows; Let others be blest;
 Go give them the sunshine, Tell Jesus the rest.

86. Sorrows are but incidents in life, & must not interrupt us. We must leave them behind, while we press on to the things that are before. God has so ordered that in pressing on in duty we shall find the truest, richest comfort for ourselves.

87. The child is happier now. Infinite Love called the child. Infinite wisdom took him away. You shall have him again.

88. "I can't!" despairingly I cried!
 This gentle whisper sounded at my side,
 "Of course not, child, Thou wast not fashioned so,
 But I, thy Father, CAN & WILL. I know
 Thy weaknesses, all thy longing see,
 And I am always strong to strengthen thee."

89. Hide your thorn in the rose. Bury your sigh in the song. Keep your cross, if you will, but keep it under a wreath of flowers. It is the singing of your heart that will make you forget your sorrow. He will give you a "song in your desert night" that your loved one in Glory-land will hear & be glad.

90. Jesus Christ is a matchless life-mender. Try Him. He will take that seemingly shattered life & fashion a far more beautiful one from its fragments than you yourself could ever have wrought from the whole.

91. He Who wounds can heal. He Who takes, will Himself fill the vacant place. And He will keep that which you have committed to Him, & give it back restored to perfect health & beauty.

92. God never fails the soul who is utterly abandoned to Him. He employs all His omnipotence & His omniscience on His behalf.

93. Our dear ones are with Thee, & if we keep near Thee, we cannot be far from them.

94. Child of My Love, fear not the unknown morrow,
 Dread not the new demand life makes of thee;
 Thy ignorance doth hold no cause for sorrow
 Since what thou knowest not is known to Me.

95. We can rebuild our houses, like the birds their nests, instead of grieving over their destruction.

96. We cannot be mended unless we are broken.

97. If, instead of trying to trust, we will press closer to the Comforter, & lean our weary heads upon His sufficient grace, trust will come without our trying, & the promised "perfect peace" will calm every troubled wave of sorrow.

98. Duty has ordered me forward,
 But I am afraid to go;
 The work is too great for my doing,
 So little I see & know
 And yet I can find my course
 And obey my Lord's command
 For I feel the force of a guidance
 In the clasp of my Father's hand.

99. He climbs beside you; lean upon Him!

100. Nestle your hand in your Father's,
 And sing if you can as you go;
 Your song may cheer someone behind you

Whose courage is sinking low;
And if your lips do quiver,
God will love you the better so.

101. Out of every sorrow God means that there should come submission; a drawing nearer to His Own great heart of Love; a new vision of the shallowness of Worldly streams & the depth of Divine ones; a closer devotion to Jesus Christ than ever before known; a loosening of the grasp on time, & its tightening upon Eternity.

102. Oh, the wonderful story of deathless Love!

Each child is dear to that Heart Above;
He fights for me when I cannot fight,
He comforts me in the gloom of night,
He lifts the burden, for He is strong.
He stills the sigh, & awakens the song;
The burdens that bow me down He bears,
And loves & pities because He cares.

103. Your sorrow is meant to be a strength-giver to you, & to equip you for giving strength to others.

104. I think that God is proud of those who bear
A sorrow bravely. Proud indeed of them
Who walk straight through the dark to find Him there,
And kneel in faith to touch His garment's hem.

105. We must choose to be comforted. We MUST believe it. We must say to ourselves, "God says it, & it's true, & I am going to believe it, no matter how it looks."

106. I cannot row it myself--
The boat on the raging sea
But beside me sits Another,
Who pulls & steers with me.

107. When Dr. Moon of Brighton, England, was stricken with blindness, he said: "Lord, I accept this talent of blindness from Thee. Help me to use it for Thy glory that at Thy Coming Thou mayest receive Thine own with usury." Then God enabled him to invent the Moon Alphabet for the blind, by which thousands of blind people were enabled to read the Word of God, & many of them were gloriously saved.

108. Before me lies a new & untried way midst shadows dim;
Beside me is my Guide, & day by day I walk with Him.

109. Great trials make common Christians into uncommon saints, & fit them for being used in uncommon service.

110. Go bury thy sorrow, The World hath its share;
Go bury it deeply, Go hide it with care;
Go think of it calmly, When curtained by night;
Go tell it to Jesus, And all will be right.

111. No, we are not here just for ourselves. Love must be strong & unselfish. It must look away from its own torn heart to a needy World, forward to the day when it shall be joyous forever, up to the Father Who does all things well.

112. I know thy sorrow, child; I know it well,
Thou needst not try with broken voice to tell.
Just let Me lay thy head here on My breast,
And find here sweetest comfort, perfect rest;
Thou needst not bear the burden, child, thyself,
I yearn to take it all upon Myself;
Then trust it all to Me today--tomorrow,
Yes, e'en forever; for I know thy sorrow.

113. Jesus deals very gently with those who find the cross heavy. He sympathises, for He knows what it means to suffer. He sank under His own Cross, & had to be helped with it by a passer-by on the way to Calvary.

114. The closer fellowship with your Father, which began amid your tears, will become a dynamic force to carry you forward into braver & better deeds.

115. The way is long, my child, but it shall be
Not one step longer than is best for thee.

116. One of the most serious dangers of inconsolable sorrow is that it may lead us to neglect our duty to the living in our mourning for the dead. This we should never do. God does not desire us to give up our work because our heart is broken.

117. "My burden is too heavy, Lord", I tremblingly said.

"I can no farther carry it!" And tears I shed.

Then came a sudden cry for help from one sore pressed

I ran to seek him, gladly gave him of my best.

Then thought I of my heavy burden--but, lo 'twas gone

The gloom & doubt had vanished quite & Love's light shone.

118. Your life task is to demonstrate what miracles God can work through a man's triumph over the seemingly insurmountable. If your burden is supremely heavy it is evidence that God has superior confidence in you & that He is permitting you to undertake a task of particular significance. He trusts you to win.

119. Death doth hide, but not divide!

Thou art but on Christ's other side.

Thou art with Christ & Christ with me,

In Him united still are we.

120. What subtler decoration of honour can any godly man seek after than his scars of service, his losses for the crown, his reproaches for Christ's sake, his being worn out in his Master's service!

121. Shall I doubt my Father's mercy?

Shall I think of death as doom,

When I know my love is happy,

Waiting in the other room?

122. There is no failure of life so terrible as to have the pain without the lesson, the sorrow without the softening.

123. Measure thy life by loss & not by gain,

Not by the wine drunk, but by the wine poured forth.

For love's strength standeth in love's sacrifice,

And he who suffers most has most to give.

124. From the desert of loneliness & despair came Hagar's, "Thou God, seest me!" From a heart tested & tried came Job's, "I know that my Redeemer liveth." From a broken & contrite heart was David's, "Wash me & I shall be whiter than snow." Out of lonely Gethsemane came perfect submission, "Thy Will be done." Through the gates of deepest sorrow, great souls found their way to a more splendid life. At the foot of the Cross, the Crown was found. The tomb is the gate of the resurrection. Death is the door to life.

125. You do not have to understand all God's ways with you. God does not expect you to understand them. You do not expect your child to understand, only believe. Some day you will see the glory of God in the things which you do not understand.

126. Does Jesus care when I've said good-by

To the dearest on Earth to me?

When my sad heart aches, till it nearly breaks,

Is it aught to Him? Does He see?

Oh, yes, He cares, I know He cares,

His heart is touched with my grief;

Though the days be weary, the long nights dreary,

I know my Saviour cares.

127. A very true cross-bearer learns to carry his cross as if it were an ornament rather than a burden, & finds after a time that it carries him. It gives more strength to him than he gives to it. Yet how many persons there are who scarcely attempt to carry the cross! It is thrown on them, & they sink down under it.

128. There are no great souls without great sorrows.

129. Those who are broken in wealth, & broken in self-will, & broken in their ambitions, & broken in their beautiful ideals, & broken in worldly reputation, & broken in their affections, & broken oftentimes in health; those who are despised & seem utterly forlorn, & helpless, the Holy Ghost is seizing upon, & using for God's glory. "The lame take the prey," Isaiah tell us.

130. Where God's finger points, there God's hand will make the way.

131. For strength to bear is found in duty done;

And he is best indeed who learns to make

The joy of others cure his own heartache.

132. There are souls like the "alabaster vase of ointment" (Mat.26:7), very precious, which shed no perfume of devotion, because a great sorrow has never broken them.

133. What will prayer do for you?--All that God can do for you.

134. Lord Jesus, when the prison doors close in on me, keep me trusting, & keep my joy full & abounding.
Prosper Thy Work through me in prison: Even there, make me free indeed.

135. Wrestling prayer can wonders do,

Bring relief in deepest straits;

Prayer can force a passage through

Iron bars & brazen gates.

136. When God lets us go to prison because we have been serving Him, & goes there with us, prison is about the most blessed placed in the World that we could be in.

137. Rain, rain beating 'gainst the pane!

How endlessly it pours out of doors

From the blackened sky--I wonder why!

Flowers, flowers, upspringing after showers,

Blossoming fresh & fair, everywhere!

Ah, God has explained why it rained!

138. Don't be afraid of tears. They're nothing to be ashamed of. Even Jesus wept!

139. "Fear thou not, for I am with thee unto the End!"

140. All things truly work together for good to them that love the Lord.--No matter what it is. It may not always seem like it, but God often gets His greatest victories out of seeming defeat.

141. God never gives us burdens greater than we are able to bear.

142. God is a loving & merciful God. He knows your frame; He remembers that you're but dust & He knows how much you can stand.

143. While there is life, there is hope!

144. When you reach the end of your rope, & are in some great crisis experience of your life, cry out desperately to Him in this time of trial, in this time of Gethsemane, followed by this crucifixion, & God will answer, & it will result in glorious resurrection which can surpass all your wildest dreams & is mightier & greater than anything you ever thought of!

145. He is your peace. Your help comes from Him. In Him is your confidence. You must put your confidence in Him.

146. When things look darkest, don't look down!--Look up!--Be not fearful, but believing!

147. It's not always going to seem easy. But the Lord promised it would be easy.--Mat.11:28-30.

148. Cast your burden on the Lord! Just roll it over on Jesus & roll over & go to sleep--& let Him stay up all night! Don't worry about it!--Let the Lord do the worrying! His shoulders are broad enough to carry any load--all the burdens put together, including His Own!

149. We have prayed & God has heard our prayers, & God Himself shall turn the tide of battle, & God Himself shall answer in His Own way, not according to the expectations of man, but according to the wisdom of God! For God knows best what shall bring victory!

(See also No. 18, 25, 75, 114, 581, 698, 720, 900, 1064, 1367.)

150. Gen.15:1 Fear not, I am thy shield, & thy exceeding great reward.

151. Gen.28:15 And, behold, I am with thee, and will keep thee in all places whither thou goest, and will bring thee again into this land; for I will not leave thee, until I have done that which I have spoken to thee of.

152. Deu.33:27 The eternal God is thy refuge, and underneath are the everlasting arms: and He shall thrust out the enemy from before thee.

153. Jos.1:5 As I was with Moses, so I will be with thee: I will not fail thee, nor forsake thee.

154. Isa.30:6b David encouraged himself in the Lord his God.

155. 2Ch.16:9a The eyes of the Lord run to & fro throughout the whole Earth.

156. Job 11:16 Thou shalt forget thy misery, & remember it as waters that pass away.

157. Psal.9:9,10 The Lord also will be a refuge for the oppressed, a refuge in times of trouble. And they that know Thy Name will put their trust in Thee: for Thou, Lord, hast not forsaken them that seek Thee.

158. Psal.18:19 He brought me forth also into a large place; He delivered me, because He delighted in me.

159. Psal.18:28 For Thou wilt light my candle: the Lord my God will enlighten my darkness.

160. Psal.27:10 When my father and my mother forsake me, then the Lord will take me up.

161. Psalms 32:7 Thou art my hiding place; Thou shalt preserve me from trouble; Thou shalt compass me about with songs of deliverance. Selah.

162. Psalms 34:17 The righteous cry, and the Lord heareth, and delivereth them out of all their troubles.

163. Psalms 34:22 The Lord redeemeth the soul of His servants: and none of them that trust In Him shall be desolate.

164. Psalms 37:9 For evildoers shall be cut off: but those that wait upon the Lord, they shall inherit the Earth.

165. Psalms 37:17 The Lord upholdeth the righteous.

166. Psalms 37:24 Though he fall, he shall not be utterly cast down: for the Lord upholdeth him with His hand.

167. Psalms 56:8 Thou tellest my wanderings: put Thou my tears into Thy bottle: are they not in Thy book?

168. Psalms 71:20,21 Thou, which hast shewed me great and sore troubles, shalt quicken me again, and shalt bring me up again from the depths of the Earth. Thou shalt increase my greatness, and comfort me on every side.

169. Psalms 86:7 In the day of my trouble I will call upon Thee: for Thou wilt answer me.

170. Psalms 86:17 Shew me a token for good; that they which hate me may see it, and be ashamed: because Thou, Lord, hast holpen me, and comforted me.

171. Psalms 91:3 Surely He shall deliver thee from the snare of the fowler, and from the noisome pestilence.

172. Psalms 91:7 A thousand shall fall at thy side, and ten thousand at thy right hand; but it shall not come nigh thee.

173. Psalms 91:15 He shall call upon Me, and I will answer him: I will be with him in trouble; I will deliver him, and honour him.

174. Psalms 94:19 In the multitude of my thoughts within me Thy comforts delight my soul.

175. Psalms 94:22 But the Lord is my defense; and my God is the rock of my refuge.

176. Psalms 103:6 The Lord executeth righteousness and judgement for all that are oppressed.

177. Psalms 103:14 For He knoweth our frame; He remembereth that we are dust.

178. Psalms 116:6 The Lord preserveth the simple: I was brought low, and He helped me.

179. Psalms 119:50 This is my comfort in my affliction: for Thy Word hath quickened me.

180. Psalms 121:1,2 I will lift up mine eyes unto the hills, from whence cometh my help. My help cometh from the Lord, which made Heaven and Earth.

181. Psalms 121:4 Behold, He that keepeth Israel shall neither slumber nor sleep.

182. Psalms 138:7 Though I walk in the midst of trouble, Thou wilt revive me.

183. Psalms 139:7-12 Whither shall I go from Thy Spirit? or whither shall I flee from Thy presence? If I ascend up into Heaven, Thou art there: if I make my bed in Hell, behold Thou art there. If I take the wings of the morning, and dwell in the uttermost parts of the sea; Even there shall Thy hand lead me, and Thy right hand shall hold me. If I say, Surely the darkness shall cover me; even the night shall be light about me. Yea, the darkness hideth not from Thee; but the night shineth as the day: the darkness and the light are both alike to Thee.

184. Psalms 145:14 The Lord upholdeth all that fall, and raiseth up all those that be bowed down.

185. Psalms 145:18,19 The Lord is nigh unto all them that call upon Him, to all that call upon Him in truth. He will fulfil the desire of them that fear Him: He also will hear their cry, and will save them.

186. Psalms 147:3 He healeth the broken in heart, and bindeth up their wounds.

187. Proverbs 11:21 Though hand join in hand, the wicked shall not be unpunished: but the seed of the righteous shall be delivered.

188. Isaiah 12:1 And in that day thou shalt say, O Lord, I will praise Thee: though Thou wast angry with me, Thine anger is turned away, and Thou comfortedst me.

189. Isaiah 40:1 Comfort ye, comfort ye My people, saith your God.

190. Isaiah 41:10 Fear thou not; for I am with thee: be not dismayed; for I am thy God: I will strengthen thee; yea, I will help thee; yea, I will uphold thee with the right hand of My righteousness.

191. Isaiah 41:17 When the poor & needy seek water, and there is none, and their tongue faileth for thirst, I the Lord will hear them, I the God of Israel will not forsake them.

192. Isaiah 41:18b I will make the wilderness a pool of water, and the dry land springs of water.

193. Isaiah 42:6,7 I the Lord have called thee in righteousness, and will hold thine hand, and will keep thee. To open the blind eyes, to bring out the prisoners from the prison, and them that sit in darkness out of the prison house.

194. Isaiah 42:16 And I will bring the blind by a way that they knew not; I will lead them in paths that they have not known: I will make darkness light before them, and crooked things straight. These things will I do unto them, and not forsake them.

195. Isa.43:2 When thou passest through the waters, I will be with thee; and through the rivers, they shall not overflow thee: when thou walkest through the fire, thou shalt not be burned; neither shall the flame kindle upon thee.

196. Isa.43:19b I will even make a way in the wilderness, and rivers in the desert.

197. Isa.49:13-16 Sing, O Heavens; and be joyful, O Earth; and break forth into singing, O mountains: for the Lord hath comforted His people, and will have mercy upon His afflicted. But Zion said, The Lord hath forsaken me, and my Lord hath forgotten me. Can a woman forget her sucking child, that she should not have compassion on the son of her womb? yea, they may forget, yet will I not forget thee. Behold, I have graven thee upon the palms of My hands; thy walls are continually before Me.

198. Isa.54:10,11 For the mountains shall depart, and the hills be removed; but My kindness shall not depart from thee, neither shall the covenant of My peace be removed, saith the Lord that hath mercy on thee. O thou afflicted, tossed with tempest, and not comforted, behold, I will lay thy stones with fair colours, and lay thy foundations with sapphires.

199. Isa.63:9 In all their affliction He was afflicted, and the Angel of His presence saved them: in His Love and in His pity He redeemed them; and He bare them, and carried them all the days of old.

200. Isa.66:13 As one whom his mother comforteth, so will I comfort you; and ye shall be comforted in Jerusalem.

201. Jer.1:19 And they shall fight against thee; but they shall not prevail against thee; for I am with thee, saith the Lord, to deliver thee.

202. Jer.31:13 Then shall the virgin rejoice in the dance, both young men and old together: for I will turn their mourning into joy, and will comfort them, and make them rejoice from their sorrow.

203. Jer.39:17 I will deliver thee in that day, saith the Lord: and thou shalt not be given into the hand of the men of whom thou art afraid.

204. Lam.3:31-33 For the Lord will not cast off for ever: But though He cause grief, yet will He have compassion according to the multitude of His mercies. For He doth not afflict willingly nor grieve the children of men.

205. Mic.7:8 Rejoice not against me, O mine enemy: when I fall, I shall arise; when I sit in darkness, the Lord shall be a light unto me.

206. Mat.5:4 Blessed are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted.

207. Mat.5:10-12 Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake: for theirs is the Kingdom of Heaven. Blessed are ye, when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for My sake. Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great in regards your reward in Heaven: for so persecuted they the Prophets which were before you.

208. Mat.28:20b And, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the World. Amen.

209. Luke.6:20-22 And He lifted up His eyes on His disciples, and said, Blessed be ye poor: for yours is the Kingdom of God. Blessed are ye that hunger now: for ye shall be filled. Blessed are ye that weep now: for ye shall laugh. Blessed are ye, when men shall hate you, and when they shall separate you from their company, and shall reproach you, and cast out your name as evil, for the Son of man's sake.

210. Luke 12:32 Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the Kingdom.

211. Jn.14:1-4 Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in Me. In My Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto Myself; that where I am, there ye may be also. And whither I go ye know, and the way ye know.

212. Jn.14:18 I will not leave you comfortless: I will come to you.

213. Jn.16:20 Verily, verily, I say unto you, That ye shall weep and lament, but the World shall rejoice: and ye shall be sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy.

214. Jn.16:33 These things I have spoken unto you, that in Me ye might have peace. In the World ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the World.

215. Rom.8:18 For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us.

216. Rom.8:28 And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to His purpose.

217. Rom.15:4 For whatsoever things were written aforetime were written for our learning, that we through patience and comfort of the Scriptures might have hope.

218. 2Cor.1:4 Who comforteth us in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them which are in any trouble, by the comfort wherewith we ourselves are comforted of God.

219. 2Cor.1:7 And our hope of you is steadfast, knowing, that as ye are partakers of the sufferings, so shall ye be also of the consolation.

220. 2Cor.7:4b I am filled with comfort, I am exceeding joyful in all our tribulation.

221. Phi.1:6 Being confident of this very thing, that He which hath begun a good work in you will perform it until the day of Jesus Christ.

222. Phi.1:20b Christ shall be magnified in my body, whether it be by life, or by death.

223. 1Th.5:11 Wherefore comfort yourselves together, and edify one another, even as also ye do.

224. 1Th.5:24 Faithful is He that calleth you, Who also will do it.

225. 2Th.2:16,17 Now our Lord Jesus Christ Himself, and God, even our Father, which hath loved us, and hath given us everlasting consolation and good hope through grace, Comfort your hearts, and stablish you in every good word and work.

226. 2Ti.1:12b For I know Whom I have believed, and am persuaded that He is able to keep that which I have committed unto Him against that day.

227. 2Ti.2:12a If we suffer, we shall also reign with Him.

228. Rev.21:4 And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away.

(See also Isa.54:1-5,11-14; 60:1,3,4-9,29,20; 62:2,3,12.)

14. COMMUNION

--{page 111}--



For as often as ye eat this bread, & drink this cup, ye do shew the Lord's death till He come (1Cor.11:26).

1. Communion is a thanksgiving, witness & a remembrance.

2. You can make communion a lesson on salvation, a lesson on thanksgiving, a lesson on healing, a lesson on unity and a lesson on witnessing.

3. Communion is celebrating the salvation of the entire man.--Not only the salvation of your spirit through Jesus' blood, but the salvation of your body through Jesus' body!

4. There's power in the blood!--Blood power!

5. Communion is the only real religious ceremony or ordinance that Jesus Himself instituted, the one He first practiced & showed how to do!--And the one that He commanded us to continue to observe until He Himself comes again!

6. Communion is a show--it's "showing" the Lord's death till He come!

7. Communion is communication.

8. We've already been saved by the power of His blood, we're just commemorating it. We're already healed by the bread, we just need to remind ourselves & take it by faith.

9. Communion is a sample, it's a picture. The bread is a picture of His body & the wine is a picture of His blood.

10. Every Communion is a skit. We're illustrating how we eat Jesus' body & we drink His blood.--Eat His body for our health & drink His blood for our salvation.

11. Even teach the children how to serve Communion. It's a very childlike thing which is a simple illustration even they can understand.

12. The Lord intended Communion to be a witness to remind you & others of what the Lord has done for us.--That He suffered for our bodies & He died for our souls.

13. "Except ye eat of My flesh & drink of My blood, ye have no part in Me." May this taste of You, Lord, give them supernatural strength & a touch of Thy healing, a sample of resurrection power. It's really a foretaste of Heaven, Thy healing power, a foretaste of eternal life for the body as well as for the spirit.

14. "Wherefore whosoever shall eat this bread, & drink this cup of the Lord unworthily shall be guilty of the body & blood of the Lord." What does it mean, unworthily? If the unsaved dare partake of these elements pretending that they have partaken of the spiritual salvation, they are lying! Therefore they're partaking unworthily! Why are they guilty? Because they're not saved!

15. Even as all of these pieces which are broken come from one loaf, we will all be made part of that one loaf! And thereby, may we too, even as eating of this one loaf, become one.

16. The Lord has saved the whole man, not just half-a-man, not only the spirit nor just the body, but both body & spirit, which make a whole saved soul!

17. In a way it's the thought, it's not necessarily the exactness of the emblems. You've heard stories about how during the war & various places in concentration camps & prisons Christians still gathered together & still had Communion even if they only had one cup of coffee & a cracker.

18. The Lord doesn't like to be left out or forgotten, even in one of His little observances which He enjoined us to have & obviously intended for us to observe as a witness, testimony & act of obedience until He comes again. "As oft as ye do this ye do it in remembrance of Me & ye do show the Lord's death till He come."

19. Maybe for neglecting Communion & forgetting it & being careless about it the Lord can easily remind you by colds & sickness that you forgot to observe the Lord's Supper.

20. The idea of the Bread was that it was one loaf, His Body that was broken, & now part of it is going to become a part of each of us. In other words, we're all becoming part of the one. It's a little picture or illustration the Lord wanted to try to impress on us, a childish little skit of this bread which is just one piece & how it's going to be many pieces & each piece a part of each one of you.

21. The bread doesn't heal your body any more than the wine saves your soul, but it's manifesting your faith, it's a witness. What is Communion? Like baptism or anything else, it's a witness to others, that you believe what His Word says.

22. If you've been sick & you need healing, take it by faith & it's there for you! "Take, eat, this is My body which is broken for you. This do in remembrance of Me."

23. One of the things we're doing by Communion is to constantly remind ourselves what Jesus has done for us & to constantly be a witness of it to others who watch such a ceremony, to remind them of what Jesus has done for us. "For as often as ye eat this bread & drink this cup ye do show the Lord's death till He come." You are testifying that He died for you & showing His death till He come.

24. Don't drink the wine unless you know you're saved, don't eat the bread unless you believe in the Lord's healing, that He is able to heal the body as well as save the soul, or you may drink to yourself damnation or judging chastisement & even eat to yourself death, believe it or not!

25. In other words, it's showing you love Him, you appreciate what He's done for you, you're doing it in remembrance & thanks for what He has done for your body & your spirit, & you're also witnessing to others what He has done for you at the same time.

26. Don't ever forget the resurrection when we're speaking of the death. The death was for a resurrection, & if it hadn't been for the resurrection, all the rest of it would have meant nothing. "For if Christ be not risen, then we are of all men most miserable." But thank God He is risen!

27. I believe in only one large cup of wine from which we all partake. I believe in one whole loaf, don't tear it up. Bring me the whole cup & the whole loaf. Whatever it is, if it's one cracker or a small loaf of bread, whatever it is I want it whole, because that's a very important lesson on the matter of communion.

28. His body was broken for us in a number of ways.--The crown of thorns, the beatings, the stripes, the injuries He suffered, the pain He suffered etc., & through this, we receive healing. The bread is for the healing of our body. "His body was broken for you", "by His stripes we are healed."

29. "For as often as ye eat this bread, & drink this cup, ye do show the Lord's death till He come." Why do we do this? Not only in remembrance of Him, to remember ourselves what He did for us, but also to show the Lord's death to others!--A witness!

30. It is a testimony, it is a witness to others of what Jesus did for us. It is both to help us & remind us of what He did for us, & also our personal testimony of what He did for us, & a witness to others. So communion is important.

31. What does drinking this cup of the Lord unworthily mean? In one sense we are all unworthy & nobody can possibly partake of Communion! So you can be worthy only through His worthiness, His salvation!

32. If the unsaved dare partake of these elements, pretending that they have partaken of spiritual salvation, they are lying! Therefore they're partaking of it unworthily & shall be guilty of the body & the blood of the Lord!

33. "But let a man examine himself, & so let him eat of that bread, & drink of that cup." How? He knows he's doing it worthily through Christ's worth because he knows he's saved, he knows he has spiritually drunk of the blood of Jesus & eaten of the body of Christ for salvation & healing.

34. The bread is particularly symbolic of healing. He didn't have to suffer for our sins, He only had to shed His blood & die for our sins. But His body suffered stripes, wounds, beatings, pain & agony so that through this He could also atone for our sicknesses: "By His stripes we are healed"!

35. God can judge both the Christian & the unchristian for observing communion in a way that is not right. If any unsaved partakes of it & is lying thereby, he's a false witness & the Lord is going to judge him accordingly. And if the Christian has not discerned the Lord's body, in other words, they don't understand what the body means & do not claim their healing as a result, therefore, it doesn't give them any faith for healing & "for this cause many are sick & many are weak & sickly & many sleep (die)."

36. If you have any absentees or sick folks who can't be in your meeting, maybe they're sick in bed upstairs or something, be sure you send them the elements so they can partake too.

37. This is our message all wrapped up in two little elements--bread & wine, body & spirit.--Christ for the body, Christ for the spirit.--Christ for our healing, Christ for our salvation.

38. He said we were going to do this until Jesus comes. Now that's a wonderful promise because that shows that some of us are going to be here still doing this no matter what happens--Antichrist, Antichrist kingdom, the Devil, Hell on Earth--some of us are going to still be here doing this till Jesus comes! Isn't that wonderful?

39. We thank You Lord that Your blood cleanses us from all sin. Past sin, present sin & future sin--all sin, by faith!

40. I hope you're having Communion frequently! He said, "As oft as ye do it, ye do it in remembrance of Me." (1Co.11:25) So the oftener you do it, the oftener you're being a testimony & doing it as a remembrance of Him.

41. Jesus wanted to give His disciples an illustrated message! He saw it was a marvellous opportunity to illustrate the significance of His body & His blood. You notice He broke the bread first, representing His body, because our physical needs are really almost the first need.

42. Thank You Lord for this good Communion, constantly being a witness, a symbol, Lord, of Thy life that was given for us--for both our bodies & our spirits, for healing & Salvation. May we each really truly appreciate it & discern Thy body, discern these elements, understand them, that we may be truly thankful & truly fathom the depth of meaning to all of these things, especially Thy Love, Lord, which made it all possible.

43. Whether you remember it every day, once a week, once a month, once a year or once a lifetime, you're to do it in remembrance of Him!

44. I like to partake of the Bread together because it's symbolic of our oneness.

45. I believe the Lord intended for you to eat it, & don't be afraid to chew it! For the Lord said, "Take, eat!" (1Co.11:24) He didn't say leave it lying on your tongue until it dissolved, like some saint!

46. Sometimes Communion can be a good time to make things right, if you have anything against your brother or sister. You can have some wonderful prayer meetings on an occasion like this, in which if you have not gotten along with each other, you can make amends & weep on each other's shoulders, say you're sorry & forgive & get things all straightened out: Have a real lovin' "Love-in"!--All the way!--Get it straight between you! That's real love, both physical & spiritual. Maybe that's why Jesus put the bread first, because sometimes they can't understand spiritual love until you first give them physical love. Neither can stand alone: You can't have the one without the other.

47. As you are absorbing the bread, you are all becoming part of the one loaf, & so you are also one in the Lord & becoming part of His body. You now have in you the life of a young Man, the life of Christ manifest in your mortal body!

48. I like to use wine in Communion & not grape juice because even the spirit of the wine is symbolic of the Spirit of God, the stimulating Spirit of the Lord.

49. Communion is a good time to renew fellowship, confess sins, make things right, thank Him for His Salvation, obtain healing, bring unity & witness to all His goodness to us all! God will bless you as you do what He commanded. "If ye know these things, happy are ye if ye do them!" (Jn.13:17)

50. Christ's body can cure you of any disease & is payment for your sicknesses & diseases & illnesses & heals you. And His blood cleanseth you from all sin & always has & always does & always will, forever & ever & ever!

51. Communion doesn't have to be something long & drawn-out & very ceremonial & very pious & sanctimonious. You know what it all means, you don't need a sermon every time, you just need to do it, that's all!

52. We partake of this bread as wholly representing Thy very flesh--knowing that this taste of You, Lord, will give us supernatural strength & a touch of Thy healing, a sample of Resurrection power, a foretaste of eternal life for the body as well as for the Spirit!

53. Through this symbolism we claim Thy salvation through faith until the day when You come, when our bodies will be restored & perfect & our spirits will be made perfect.

54. We thank Thee that Thou hast given that wonderful promise & prophecy that there will still be some of us around here, Lord, to celebrate Thy death until You come. The Devil won't be able to stamp us out completely, we'll be showing Thy death till You come.

55. From one end of the World to the other 'round the World millions & millions of Christians celebrate this, Thy Holy Eucharist, Thy Communion, Thy Supper of the bread & the wine, Thy body & blood on this very day, Sunday, the Christian Sabbath. So we are one great family, Lord. Many of them don't know You very well but at least they're trying to manifest their faith.

56. I like you to be happy & we're a happy people, but you should also remember sometimes to be sober. In some ways Communion is a sober occasion. In some ways it's a very happy occasion, so I guess whatever you feel personally is fine. If you feel like laughing, OK, if you feel like crying, OK.--Amen? God bless you with Communion!

(See also No. 337B, 781, 986, 1386, 1473, 1533, 1544, *Love Songs* songbook.)

57. PSA.116:13 I will take the cup of Salvation, and call upon the Name of the Lord.

58. MAT.26:26-28 And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed it, and brake it, and gave it to the disciples, and said, Take, eat; this is My body. And He took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, Drink ye all of it; For this is My blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins.

59. MAR.14:22-24 And as they did eat, Jesus took the bread, and blessed, and brake it, and gave to them, and said, Take, eat: this is My body. And He took the cup, and when He had given thanks, He gave it to them: and they all drank of it. And He said unto them, This is My blood of the new testament, which is shed for many.

60. LUK.22:19,20 And He took bread, and gave thanks, and brake it, and gave unto them, saying, This is My body which is given for you: this do in remembrance of Me. Likewise also the cup after supper, saying, This cup is the new testament in My blood, which is shed for you.

61. JOH.6:51 I am the living bread which came down from Heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall live for ever: and the bread that I will give is My flesh, which I will give for the life of the World.

62. JOH.6:53-56 Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink His blood, ye have no life in you. Whoso eateth My flesh, and drinketh My blood, hath eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day. For My flesh is meat indeed, and My blood is drink indeed. He that eateth My flesh, and drinketh My blood, dwelleth in Me, and I in Him.

63. 1Co.10:16,17 The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ? For we being many are one bread, and one body: for we are all partakers of that one bread.

64. 1Co.11:23-30 For I have received of the Lord that which also I delivered unto you, That the Lord Jesus the same night in which He was betrayed took bread: And when He had given thanks, He brake it, and said, Take, eat: this is My body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of Me. After the same manner also He took the cup, when He had supped, saying, This cup is the new testament in My blood: this do ye, as oft as ye drink it, in remembrance of Me. For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do shew the Lord's death till He come. Wherefore whosoever shall eat this bread, and drink this cup of the Lord, unworthily, shall be guilty of the body and blood of the Lord. But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup. For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himself, not discerning the Lord's body. For this cause many are weak and sickly among you, and many sleep.

65. EPH.2:13 But now in Christ Jesus ye who sometimes were far off are made nigh by the blood of Christ.

66. HEB.9:14 How much more shall the blood of Christ, Who through the eternal Spirit offered Himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?

67. HEB.9:22 And almost all things are by the law purged with blood; and without shedding of blood is no remission.

68. REV.5:9 And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: for Thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by Thy blood out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation.

(See also ISA.53.)

15. CONVICTION/COMPROMISE

--{page 119}--



He that wavereth is like a wave of the sea driven with the wind & tossed (Jam.1:6).

1. The guy who compromises winds up by not pleasing anybody at all!
2. It is never the wrong time to do the right thing.
3. A man convinced against his will is not convinced.
4. What I must do, & not what people think, is all that concerns me.
5. With God, it's usually all or nothing at all! There's no halfway with the Lord! He abhors the half-hearted, the lukewarm, the indecisive, the compromisers, the "so-far-&-no-further folks"!
6. We have never hung on to anybody at the price of compromise & sacrificing the work & the Word & the Spirit of God & our high standards & loyalty to the leadership & the Family!
7. If you stand by without protest when the rights of others are being violated, soon these same evil forces will be violating your own!
8. If the Devil can't get you to stop, he tries to get you to compromise. He tempts you with half-truths that make you doubt your convictions or not live up to them fully. He knows you'll never make peace with him in your war on evil, so he tries to tempt you with a temporary truce.
9. The only way the Devil can win is to get you to let down your guard for just a moment, or get you to compromise only a few minutes so he can do his dirty work while you're not looking!
10. If you're on fire, the World will come to see you burn!
11. The Enemy of your soul just needs a little time of compromise to get close enough to strike you some mortal blow below the belt! This is the grave danger of the unguarded moment!--Just a moment of unguarded danger that can put you in your grave!
12. To sin by silence when they should protest, makes cowards out of men.
13. You can't do business with the Devil! You can't declare a truce with Satan & say, "You leave me alone & I'll leave you alone!" The Lord doesn't approve of that at all!
14. Conscience is God's presence in man.
15. To be persuasive, we must be believable,

- To be believable, we must be credible,
To be credible, we must be truthful.
16. We can easily forgive a child who is afraid of the dark. The real tragedy of life is when men are afraid of the Light.
17. Take your stand! If you don't stand for something you'll fall for anything.
18. If the voice tells me to do something bad, I know it's the Devil! If it tells me to do something good, I know it's God!
19. First impressions are the right ones, if you're truly following the Lord!
20. Don't try to sell something you're not sold on.
21. I am afraid to work with people who are not sold out to God.
22. I cannot stomach people who haven't got the guts to stand up for what they believe!
23. If you don't tell others, you don't believe it yourself! Something you believe, you talk about!
24. It is so easy to make excuses, legitimate, logical, reasonable, acceptable excuses why you couldn't make it--why you shouldn't be expected to make it, & in most cases most people will accept your excuses, because most people don't have faith either, & in excusing you they're excusing themselves. But is God going to excuse you?
25. Failing to stand up for the truth is nearly as bad as denying the Lord!
26. Sometimes it's good to be stubborn if you're stubborn for the Lord in the right direction.
27. We have to stand pat on our convictions and pay the price for them, the stand-pat price of being a revolutionary!
28. I believe we're right--the rightest of all the rights! We've got the best of everything!
29. After I finally got to trusting the Lord, I didn't care what people thought, I just did what I thought was best!
30. If you let people push you around you'll never get anywhere in this kind of World! You've got to fight for your rights!
31. Someone has said: "It is not enough for a gardener to love flowers, he must also hate weeds."
32. One person with a belief is equal to a force of 99 who only have interest.
33. If your will power doesn't work, try your "won't" power.
34. You can't face a situation without doing something about it, if you're conscientious.
35. You've got to really believe in your product to speak & preach & sell with conviction!
36. Jesus refused to compromise with the religious system, but rather worked totally outside the existing system, attacked it head-on, ruthlessly exposed it & drove the money-changers from the Temple, & strove to lead God's little children back to the worship of the true Father.
37. If your heart condemns you not, then you have confidence or faith toward God. In other words, if you have such strong faith in the Spirit & in the Word that you know what you're doing is the right thing because of the Word & the Holy Spirit, you can do things that some other Christians can't even do, that they would feel condemned about doing.
38. If you still think the System's great, then get your hell out of here, & go back to the swinepit & your vomit!--But if you're going to serve God, for God's sake, know what you believe, & serve Him, no matter what they say!
39. I think anybody who is ashamed of their convictions must not have enough foundation for their faith.
40. Watch out about compromise. Watch out about any compromise or pulling your punches for advantage, for finances, for protection, for safety, for anything. Be faithful to the message; be faithful to the method; be faithful to the Word; be faithful to the Voice of God; be faithful to His Revolution, the particular ministry He's called you to--to be loyal!
41. You have to have conviction, or you cannot live, and then you have to do something about your conviction, or you can't stand to live with yourself!
42. There is no such thing as the peaceful co-existence of good & evil! "I came not to bring peace, but a sword!" One or the other has to conquer!
43. You cannot stop the man of faith! You cannot dissuade him! You cannot divert him! He'll go on, with or without you, or right over you, if necessary!
44. One compromise leads to another & eventually leads to complete denial, renunciation & denouncement!
45. The Devil's answer to God's challenge is always a System-preserving compromise.
46. If the shoe fits, wear it! It's the hit dog that usually howls.

47. People don't realise that if they hold one little thing back from the Lord, one little compromise, one little tiny thing from the Lord, they're on their way to backsliding! Because one little disobedience leads to another, one little refusal & denial leads to another, one bit of selfishness leads to more.

48. If I've gotten something directly & specifically from the Lord on a matter, either from the written Word or a direct revelation, it is your duty to obey that, & not be dissuaded or stopped by others' doubts or questions.

49. You're God's ambassador, you're representing the King of kings, the One who runs the universe, do don't let people push you around.

50. The temptation is always to compromise & soft peddle & tone down the message & the doctrines & the methods to please the people, particularly the churches & the governments for the sake of support & to escape any kind of disapproval or persecution.

51. The Devil uses all kinds of tricks to get you to compromise, & once you compromise, then you begin to become more & more like them & closer to them until pretty soon you can't tell the two apart.

52. All the churches, denominations, splinter groups, new cults & isms & sects had to eventually choose whether to stick true & all-out for their messages & doctrines & preaching them & practising them, or choose safety, comfort, convenience, compromise, peace & support, & you can see what virtually all of them did!

(See also No. D, F, 66, 143A, 148, 299, 309B, 399, 585, 585R, 586, 589, 590, 591, 597, 678, 679, 703, 772, 804, 936, 1005, 1054, 1330, 1377, 1511, 1548.)

53. 1KI.18:21 And Elijah came unto all the people, and said, How long halt ye between two opinions? if the Lord be God, follow Him: but if Baal, then follow him.

54. PSA.57:7 My heart is fixed, O God, my heart is fixed: I will sing and give praise.

55. PRO.8:13 The fear of the Lord is to hate evil.

56. PRO.16:3 Commit thy works unto the Lord, and thy thoughts shall be established.

57. ISA.50:7 For the Lord God will help me; therefore shall I not be confounded: therefore have I set my face like a flint, and I know that I shall not be ashamed.

58. DAN.3:18 But if not, be it known unto thee, O king, that we will not serve thy gods, nor worship the golden image which thou hast set up.

59. HOS.10:2 Their heart is divided; now shall they be found faulty.

60. HAB.2:4b The just shall live by his faith.

61. ACT.4:20 For we cannot but speak the things which we have seen and heard.

62. ACT.28:30,31 And Paul dwelt two whole years in his own hired house, and received all that came in unto him, Preaching the Kingdom of God, and teaching those things which concern the Lord Jesus Christ, with all confidence, no man forbidding him.

63. 1CO.9:26 I therefore so run, not as uncertainly; so fight I, not as one that beateth the air.

64. 1CO.10:21 Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils: ye cannot be partakers of the Lord's table, and of the table of devils.

65. 1CO.16:13 Watch ye, stand fast in the faith, quit you like men, be strong.

66. EPH.4:14 That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive.

67. TIT.2:15 These things speak, and exhort, and rebuke with all authority. Let no man despise thee.

68. HEB.13:9 Be not carried about with diverse and strange doctrines. For it is a good thing that the heart be established with grace.

69. JAM.1:6 But let him ask in faith, nothing wavering. For he that wavereth is like a wave of the sea driven with the wind and tossed.

70. JAM.1:8 A double minded man is unstable in all his ways.

71. 1PE.3:15 But sanctify the Lord God in your hearts: and be ready always to give an answer to every man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you, with meekness and fear.

72. 1JO.3:21 Beloved, if our heart condemn us not, then have we confidence toward God.

73. REV.3:15,16 I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot. I would that thou wert cold or hot. So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of My mouth.

16. CREATION --{page 126}--



For the invisible things of Him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His eternal power & Godhead; so that they are without excuse (Rom.1:20).

1. God's Creation is the greatest proof of His existence.
2. It is said in all the ages that there has never been & never will be a man or woman just like you. You are unique & have no double. Every life is a fresh thought from God to the World.
3. All I have seen teaches me to trust the Creator for all I have not seen.
4. I cannot see how it would be possible for a man to look down upon the earth & be an atheist, & I cannot conceive how he could look up into the heavens & say there is no God.
5. Man is both the greatest miracle & the greatest problem on earth.
6. There's nothing that's ever without significance or without meaning.
7. How has man turned God's glory into shame?--He's polluted the Earth & invented the lie of Evolution!
8. Anything that glorifies the marvels of God's Creation is not very much marvelled at anymore because it's too much proof of a Designer & Creator & Builder & Architect of the Universe!
9. The human body is the most perfect machine ever made!
10. God's permanent creations of the earth, sun, moon & stars are forever!
11. It's so wonderful to look at God's Creation! Everything God does is right. Everything is the way it's supposed to be, even the little sparrows!
12. During an eclipse of the moon: Jesus is the Sun, we're the moon & the Devil's like that ol' black shadow of the Earth trying to gobble us up!--But he can't!
13. You can't help but see the marvel of God's handiwork & design when you study His Creation!
14. I marvel how in this tiny backyard there is a whole miniature universe of Creation: plant life, animal life, & bug life!
15. Birds are almost always a sign of peace, except, of course, birds of prey.
16. God compares Man to many of the creatures He has made.
17. It's the Devil's whole religion to make people worship things & the Creation more than the Creator, the effect instead of the cause.
18. God's visible Creation is an illustration of the things in the spirit.
19. Man has invented a lot of things which are imitations of God's creations.
20. The most precious, priceless thing which God ever made is a human soul!
21. There is either a spiritual analogy for nearly everything natural, or there is a natural example for nearly everything spiritual.
22. The opposite of destruction is creation!
23. Lord, help us to be like trees, planted strong in Thy Earth & nourished with the water of Thy Word & fertilised with the food of Thy very body!
24. The ultimate picture of God's creative love for man is a beautiful woman!
25. No human being, no human spirit is created without the touch of the Divine, the touch of the hand of God!
26. One little humble lowly chicken out in some poor man's chicken yard produces a marvel of creation every day!--A beautiful ovular orb! Even one little lowly egg is a marvel of God's Creation!
27. We're hung out here in space on nothing except the power of God!
28. I don't believe in killing anything we don't have to--the Lord made everything for a purpose.

29. Why should we worry, when God's Creation keeps right on faithfully going, constantly turning, revolving, rising & setting, not questioning, not worrying, not faltering, knowing God's in complete control!

30. Although the whole Creation testifies of the existence of the invisible God, the World refuses to receive the testimony, because they choose to be ignorant!

31. We look at the trees, the sky & the beautiful Creation all around us, & we know God lives, we know He's there as here!

32. Even the Garden of Eden had to have somebody taking care of it! The Lord expected man to improve His Creation.

33. The whole idea of all Creation is the struggle between good & evil & to show the difference!

34. Everything God has made in the natural is an illustration of something in the spiritual!

35. The Lord Himself is a master artist. He really puts some swirls up there in His sunsets & His colours are gorgeous!

36. God made a few ugly things so we'd appreciate the pretty things, a few thorns so we'd appreciate the roses!

37. Most things God created are beautiful, & if some people aren't, it's not God's fault, it's because of the way they've been perverted & contorted through sin & time & the Fall.

38. The Devil cooked up evolution to try to deny the Creation of God!

39. Everything in God's Creation proves God exists--its perfection, its organisation, its synchronisation, its harmony, its unity, its balance!

40. The material Creation is the proof of the existence of the immaterial God!

41. When I see that glorious Creation of God I know that everything's under control, except what man has messed up.

42. This is a place too fair,
To be the child of chance & not of care.
No atoms casually together hurl'd,
Could e'er produce so beautiful a World!

43. To see God in everything makes life the greatest adventure there is.

44. Only God's Creation is alive, reproductive & self-repairing!

45. Just one tree is so marvellous a mechanism, a creation of God, that man can't even understand it!

46. Even one little cell is beyond man's comprehension!

47. Woman was God's last & ultimate creation & the most beautiful work of art that He ever made!

48. The whole Creation is pyramidal, spiral, conical or spherical--from the atom to the Universe!

49. To me, a tree is just about the next most beautiful thing the Lord ever made besides a woman!

50. The Creation that God made is alive and self-reproductive, but what man makes is often waste & total death.

51. Nothing's ever wasted in God's Creation.

52. Whenever there is a copy, somewhere there must be the original reality!

53. God's greatest work of art was a woman--His crowning creation!

54. God created us to be beautiful & He gave each one of us our own particular beauty.

55. God's whole Creation is a work of art which portrays His message of Love!

56. In spite of all that men suppose
Earth is the centre & the place God chose!

57. The creation of Heaven & Earth were done,
Before God even created the sun!

58. Do not confuse which is the greater,
Things made are less than the Maker.

59. Astronomers are too much inclined
To enlarge each distance that they find.

60. The Devil hates a soul's creation,
And even more that soul's salvation!

61. God's Creation is a witness without words!

62. A heathen philosopher once asked a Christian, "Where is God?" The Christian answered, "Let me first ask you. Where is He not?"

63. Man creates nothing really; he merely discovers what God has already made & he merely discovers how to put it together to do the things God has already created it for--& sometimes things He didn't make it for!

64. Just as behind a watch there had to be a watchmaker, so behind the intricate precision & timing of this great Universe there had to be a great Creator or Designer!

65. God made a machine that could talk in one day!--You! And it took man 6,000 years to do the same!

66. Life is proof that there is God, because life is a miracle!

(See also No. 736, 1338, 1387, *Childcare Handbook III.*)

67. GEN.1:1,2 In the beginning God created the Heaven and the Earth. And the Earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.

68. . 1:27 So God created man in His Own image, in the image of God created He him; male and female created He them.

69. .2:7 And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.

70. .3:1a Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the Lord God had made.

71. .8:22 While the Earth remaineth, seedtime and harvest, and cold and heat, and summer and winter, and day and night shall not cease.

72. .20:11a For in six days the Lord made Heaven and Earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day.

73. SA.2:6 The Lord killeth, and maketh alive: He bringeth down to the grave, and bringeth up.

74. .9:6 Thou, even Thou, art Lord alone; Thou hast made Heaven, the Heaven of heavens, with all their host, the Earth, and all things that are therein, the seas, and all that is therein, and Thou preservest them all; and the host of Heaven worshippeth Thee.

75. .10:8 Thine hands have made me & fashioned me together round about.

76. .26:7 He stretcheth out the north over the empty place, and hangeth the Earth upon nothing.

77. .37:6,10,13 He saith to the snow, Be thou on the Earth; likewise to the small rain, and to the great rain of His strength. By the breath of God frost is given: and the breadth of the waters is straightened. He causeth it to come, whether for correction, or for His land, or for mercy.

78. .2:7 Thou art My Son: this day have I begotten Thee.

79. .8:3 When I consider Thy heavens, the work of Thy fingers, the moon and the stars, which Thou hast ordained.

80. .19:1 The Heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament sheweth His handywork.

81. .24:1,2 The Earth is the Lord's, and the fulness thereof: the World, and they that dwell therein. For He hath founded it upon the seas, and established it upon the floods.

82. .33:6,9 By the Word of the Lord were the Heavens made; and all the host of them by the breath of His mouth. For He spake, and it was done; He commanded, and it stood fast.

83. .74:16,17 The day is Thine, the night also is Thine: Thou hast prepared the light and the sun. Thou hast set all the borders of the Earth: Thou hast made summer and winter.

84. .89:11 The Heavens are Thine, the Earth also is Thine: as for the World and the fulness thereof, Thou hast founded them.

85. .95:5-7a The sea is His, and He made it: and His hands formed the dry land. O come, let us worship and bow down: let us kneel before the Lord our Maker. For He is our God; and we are the people of His pasture, and the sheep of His hand.

86. .100:3 Know ye that the Lord He is God: it is He that hath made us, and not we ourselves; we are His people, and the sheep of His pasture.

87. .102:25 Of old hast Thou laid the foundation of the Earth: and the heavens are the work of Thy hands.

88. .104:24 O Lord, how manifold are Thy works! In wisdom hast Thou made them all: the Earth is full of Thy riches.

89. .104:30 Thou sendest forth Thy Spirit, they are created: and Thou renewest the face of the Earth.

90. .139:14 I will praise Thee; for I am fearfully and wonderfully made: marvellous are Thy works; and that my soul knoweth right well.

91. .148:5 Let them praise the Name of the Lord: for He commanded, and they were created.

92. .3:19 The Lord by wisdom hath founded the Earth; by understanding hath He established the Heavens.

93. .16:4 The Lord hath made all things for Himself; yea, even the wicked for the day of evil.

94. .20:12 The hearing ear, & the seeing eye, the Lord hath made even both of them.
95. .45:7 I form the light, and create darkness: I make peace, and create evil: I the Lord do all these things.
96. .45:12 I have made the Earth, and created man upon it: I, even My hands, have stretched out the Heavens, and all their host have I commanded.
97. .66:2a For all those things hath Mine hand made.
98. .8:7 Yea, the stork in the Heaven knoweth her appointed times; and the turtle and the crane and the swallow observe the time of their coming.
99. EZE.37:5,6 Thus saith the Lord God unto these bones; Behold, I will cause breath to enter into you, and ye shall live: And I will lay sinews upon you, and will bring up flesh upon you, and cover you with skin, and put breath in you, and ye shall live.
100. .1:1-3 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God. All things were made by Him; and without Him was not any thing made that was made.
101. .1:20 For the invisible things of Him from the creation of the World are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse.
102. .11:36 For of Him, and through Him, and to Him, are all things: to Whom be glory for ever. Amen.
103. COR.8:6 But to us there is but one God, the Father, of Whom are all things, and we in Him; and one Lord Jesus Christ, by Whom are all things, and we by Him.
104. COR.11:12 ...Woman is of the man, even so is the man also by the woman; but all things of God.
105. .2:10 For we are His workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.
106. .3:9 And to make all men see what is the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the World hath been hid in God, Who created all things by Jesus Christ.
107. .1:16,17 For by Him were all things created, that are in Heaven, and that are in Earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by Him, and for Him: And He is before all things, and by Him all things consist.
108. .1:1,2 God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, Hath in these last days spoken unto us by His Son, Whom He hath appointed heir of all things, by Whom also He made the worlds.
109. .3:4b ...He that built all things is God.
110. .11:3 Through faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the Word of God, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear.
111. PE.1:3 ...His divine power hath given unto us all things that pertain unto life and godliness.
112. PE.3:5 For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the Word of God the heavens were of old, and the Earth standing out of the water and in the water.
113. .4:11 Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for Thou hast created all things, and for Thy pleasure they are and were created.

(See also GEN.1:1-31; JOB 12:7-10; JOB 26:7-14; JOB 37:1-23; JOB 38:1-41; JOB 39:1-30; PSA.104:1-32; PSA.135:7; PSA.147:15-18; ECC.3:14-15; ISA.50:2,3; DAN.2:21; AMO.5:8; NAH.1:3-6.)



The words of a talebearer are as wounds, & they go down into the innermost parts of the belly (Pro.26:22).

1. Letting things go in one ear & out the other is bad enough, but it's worse when things go in one ear, get all mixed up, & come out the mouth.
2. Don't find fault with what you don't understand.
3. They'll come to you & talk about me, but they'll come to me & talk about you!
4. Try to fix the mistake--never the blame.
5. It's smart to pick your friends--but not to pieces.
6. A man's tongue is like his car. If it gets to knocking too much, he'd better have it overhauled or change it.
7. Christians should watch & pray, & not watch & criticise.
8. If criticising gives you pain, then do it; If it gives you the slightest pleasure, keep your mouth shut.
9. A new idea is delicate. It can be killed by a sneer or a yawn; it can be stabbed to death by a quip and worried to death by a frown.
10. There is always something wrong with a man, as there is with a motor, when he knocks continually.
11. You don't have to be in a car to run people down.
12. Before I judge my neighbour, let me walk a mile in his shoes.
13. Rare is the person who can weigh the faults of others without putting his thumb on the scales.
14. Critic: One who finds a little bad in the best of things.
15. Before you flare up at someone's faults, take time to count ten--ten of your own.
16. When I point my finger at my neighbour, there are three more pointing back at me.
17. None are so fond of secrets as those who do not mean to keep them.
18. Busy souls have no time to be busybodies.
19. Rumour is a great traveller.
20. Who chatters to you will chatter of you.
21. One eye-witness is better than two hear-says.
22. He who peeps through a hole, may see what will bother him.
23. Let me live in my house by the side of the road,
Where the race of men go by,
They are good, they are bad,
They are weak, they are strong,
Wise & foolish--so am I.
Then why should I sit in the scorner's seat,
Or hurl the cynic's ban?
Let me live in my house by the side of the road,
And be a friend to man.
24. What some invent the rest enlarge.
25. He that repeateth a matter separateth very friends.(Pro.17:9)
26. Watch out if all you do is condemn & rant & rave & you never drool the sweet honey Love of Jesus!
27. One reason a dog is such a lovable creature is that his tail wags instead of his tongue.
28. There is no venom like that of the tongue.

29 There is so much good in the worst of us, & so much bad in the best of us, that it hardly behooves any of us to talk about the rest of us.

30. The tongue is only three inches long, yet it can kill a man six feet tall.

31. If you must slander anyone, don't speak it, but write it--write it in the sand near the water's edge.

32. You can talk about me as much as you please, I'll talk about you down on my knees.

33. Everytime you throw dirt on someone you lose a little ground.

34. Watch out about belittling other people--you're apt to get belittled yourself!

35. Those who live in glass houses should not throw stones.

36. A lie will go around the World while the Truth is getting its boots on.

37. Watch out what you say about God's anointed--whether it be true or false--if it's going to hurt God's work or His worker.

38. A critical spirit sows dissension, disunity & discord amongst brethren, one of the seven abominations to God!

39. There's no point in running down other people's products unless we have a better one to offer ourselves!

40. Little lessons from the wise, should not commence with "criticise".

41. It's always easier to tear down than it is to build up!

42. Pretty soon most gossips are actually convinced that the stories they are telling are true--they tell them so often they begin to believe them themselves.

43. It's a naughty spirit to tease.

44. A cup brimful of sweet water cannot spill even one drop of bitter water, however suddenly jolted.

45. Critics are people who go places & boo things.

46. Two things are hard on the heart--running up stairs & running down people.

47. A hypocrite is a person who pretends to be burying the hatchet when she's only digging up dirt.

48. To escape criticism--do nothing, say nothing, be nothing.

49. No matter what mistakes Moses made, God held the people accountable for their own sins & He rebuked them for any criticism of Moses--for what they thought was wrong or even what they knew was wrong.

50. Words are real things! They bless or they curse, they lift up or they knock down, they save or they damn!

51. If someone were to pay you 10 cents for every kind word you spoke about people, & collect 5 cents for every unkind word, would you be rich or poor?

52. Nothing ever happens in a small town, but what you hear makes up for it!

53. When you hear about somebody's bad points, remember that they must also have some good points.

54. There's only one way to change the unruly tongue, & that is to transform the spirit that controls it.

55. Of all the weapons of warfare, the tongue has been the greatest when it gets loose!

56. Too often when you tell a secret it goes in one ear & in another.

57. Someone described a wise man as saying, "You are lord of your tongue, but I am also master of my ears."

58. Passing the buck started in the Garden of Eden. The first form of self-defense is blaming others.

(See also No.1247, FC's "Pastor's Pillow", 1377, 1547.)

59. EXO.23:1 Thou shalt not raise a false report: put not thine hand with the wicked to be an unrighteous witness.

60. LEV.19:16 Thou shalt not go up and down as a talebearer among thy people.

61. PSA. 15:3 He that backbiteth not with his tongue, nor doeth evil to his neighbour, nor taketh up a reproach against his neighbour.

62. PSA.32:9 Be ye not as the horse, or as the mule, which have no understanding: whose mouth must be held in with bit and bridle, lest they come near unto thee.

63. PSA.101:5,7 Whoso privily slandereth his neighbour, him will I cut off: He that worketh deceit shall not dwell within My house: he that telleth lies shall not tarry in My sight.

64. PRO.15:1 A soft answer turneth away wrath: but grievous words stir up anger.

65. PRO.15:4 A wholesome tongue is a tree of life: but perverseness therein is a breach in the spirit.

66. PRO.18:21 Death and life are in the power of the tongue: and they that love it shall eat the fruit thereof.

67. PRO.26:20 Where no wood is, there the fire goeth out: so where there is no talebearer, the strife ceaseth.

68. PRO.26:22 The words of a talebearer are as wounds, and they go down into the innermost parts of the belly.

69. MAT.7:1-5 Judge not, that ye be not judged. For with what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged: and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again. And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye? Or how wilt thou say to thy brother, Let me pull out the mote out of thine eye; and, behold, a beam is in thine own eye? Thou hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of thine own eye; and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out the mote out of thy brother's eye.

70. MAT.12:34b For out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh.

71. ROM.2:1-3 Therefore thou art inexcusable, O man, whosoever thou art that judgest: for wherein thou judgest another, thou condemnest thyself; for thou that judgest doest the same things. But we are sure that the judgment of God is according to truth against them which commit such things. And thinkest thou this, O man, that judgest them which do such things, and doest the same, that thou shalt escape the judgment of God?

72. ROM.14:13 Let us not therefore judge one another any more: but judge this rather, that no man put a stumbling block or an occasion to fall in his brother's way.

73. EPH.4:29 Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth, but that which is good to the use of edifying, that it may minister grace unto the hearers.

74. JAM.3:5,6 Even so the tongue is a little member, and boasteth great things. Behold, how great a matter a little fire kindleth! And the tongue is a fire, a world of iniquity: so is the tongue among our members, that it defileth the whole body, and setteth on fire the course of nature; and is set on fire of Hell.

75. 1PE.3:9,10 Not rendering evil for evil, or railing for railing: but contrariwise blessing; knowing that ye are thereunto called, that ye should inherit a blessing. For he that will love life, and see good days, let him refrain his tongue from evil, and his lips that they speak no guile.

18. DAVID

--{page 140}--



And David My servant shall be king over them: and they all shall have one shepherd: they shall also walk in My judgements, and observe My statutes, and do them (Eze.37:24).

1. I'm God's servant and your servant, and I really only do what you and He ask me to do!
2. I'm the guy who has to have the vision to inspire your faith to have the courage to get out there & do the job!
3. God has chosen for you a Voice & a Man through whom He speaks His Message, which gives you the vision, which creates in you the faith, which gives you the courage, to take the initiative to attack & press on & progress & grow!
4. I can't help it, I can't stop it, I can't keep it.--I just have to give it! It's like a river that just keeps flowing, no matter what, because of the Dew of Heaven--Jesus!
5. The designer of the revolution has to be far enough away to see the over-all plan.
6. All I've got to live for is to get out the Word of God.
7. No movement ever begins without a man! Everything always has to have a leader, has to have someone who has the vision & the faith & the courage to inspire the people.

8. The character, nature & personality of the Prophet colours his ministry--& mine's been quite colourful!
9. How revolutionary can David get?--As revolutionary as the Lord!
10. I said, "Lord, I'll follow, show me the way!" He did, and it led straight into your hearts and you took me in.
11. I have the mind of Christ--so far as He gives me His thoughts. I have the words of Christ--as many as He gives me. I'm nothing but an instrument of God--His tool.--But I'm not God!
12. I am just a toilet, the humblest, lowest, most despised & dishonored of all vessels in a great house, but the most necessary! Out of the tank of every toilet comes God's fresh clean water to wash away man's defilement!
13. I'm not the Maker or the mechanic: I'm just the driver who's following the Vision ahead according to the Map and the instruction of the Owner.
14. God's Move is always led by God's Man who is God's Voice for God's Vision--the Voice of His choice--the Vision of His Chosen!
15. I said, "Lord, how could I do anything to reach all these people? I'm so small, so insignificant, so tiny, so nothing!" And suddenly the Lord spoke just as clear as I ever heard His voice...."Yes, but I have caused thy voice to echo round the World!"
16. Moses made mistakes, but there was no time when he was deceived.
17. Prophets are only men & women & they are fallible & they can misunderstand.
18. Prophets are born, not made!--Called & anointed of the Lord!
19. That's one thing I think I've proven, I'm willing to change if the Lord shows me I'm wrong!
20. They came out to see me burn, somebody on fire, & they knew I was on fire, & they loved it!--And they followed it!
21. I'm just like a computer--I'm fed with the input, & when the Lord presses the button, I give the output!
22. If you tell me I can't do it, then I'm going to prove to you I can!
23. I hate to be defeated, I hate to give up.
24. Everybody always said it couldn't be done, it wasn't possible! That's all you have to tell me, that I can't do it, then I have to prove it to you I can. Then I'm going to do it even if I have to take the whole project in my own hands & shove it through.
25. I'm always determined to finish whatever I start!
26. I'm such a crazy funny prophet! I don't think there's ever been a Prophet in the whole World as crazy & funny as I am!
27. I said, "Lord, I never wanted to be an administrator, I never wanted to run anything!" And He said, "That's why I could trust you to do it!" It was almost forced on me by the Lord! The Lord told me very clearly, "Sorry, you're not only a Prophet, but you're also a King!"
28. What makes me & my writings different is that I say things other people are afraid to say or that they're only thinking. I say what other people wish they could say. But of course they live in one place all the time. I say it, & then I have to run!--Ha!
29. If you want to know why those lessons & Letters are so long, it's just because I open my mouth & He fills it, & as long as I keep my mouth open He keeps pouring it in & I keep pouring it out. The only problem is I don't know when to shut it because as long as I keep it open, He keeps filling it. He never runs dry, He's a fountain that flows forever, out & in. He pours in & I pour out! PTL!
30. Sometimes I think the Lord just gives me these little dreams as a starter, just to make me start talking, because I know I've got to tell them & try to interpret them. It's just like He primes the pump with it, & once He gets me going He knows I can't stop. I'll faithfully give the Message!
31. I take my orders from God. I don't take my orders from the people. I give orders, I don't take orders except from God.
32. I love a confrontation! I love to bring things out in the open & hit things right on. I'm a fighter! I really love to fight because I know I'm on the right side, I know God's on my side & I've got the nothing to lose!
33. In the Old Testament, the three types of leaders who were anointed with oil for the Lord's Service as a type of the Spirit of God according to Mosaic Law were prophets, priests & kings. The prophet received his anointing directly from the Lord & spoke with the voice of God & as the mouth-piece of God. The priests also had a spiritual ministry. They ministered in the tabernacle or Temple, which was a type of the Kingdom, the church, the people. They were pastors, teachers, intercessors for the people. The king was just as important in many ways, but his duties were with the political, the material, the administration of the Kingdom. He was like a head deacon in the church--a layman. Sometimes these three overlapped, as in the case of King David, who was a well-rounded type of Christ--he fulfilled all three roles: Prophet, Priest, & King!

34. I'm the only evangelist I ever heard of whose ministry is not built on any kind of public mass meetings or even mass media!

35. It hasn't been easy, not having personal touch & contact. But when I get inspired & into writing the Lord's Letters, I feel I've got a personal, intimate, tangible touch with every human heart in our whole Family.

36. The Lord told me that I'm most blessed of all men on the face of the Earth, & I believe it & I know it, because I have you, my precious children in the Lord, who bring joy & satisfaction to my heart & soul & a feeling of tremendous accomplishment & sublime fulfillment in life!

(See also No. U, 28, 29, 61, 63, 64, 77, 78, 79, 83, 84, 102, 115, 152, 172, 264, 268, 307B, 315, 335, 351, 610, 695, 698, 724, 779, 958, 989, 992, 1333, 1335, 1351, 1352, 1353, 1354, 1355, 1356, 1357, 1358, 1359, 1361, 1362, 1363, 1365, 1367, 1406, 1501, 1539, 1540, 1592, 1598, 1642.)

37. DEU.18:15,18 The Lord thy God will raise up unto thee a Prophet from the mist of thee, of thy brethren, like unto me; unto him ye shall hearken. I will raise them up a Prophet from among their brethren, like unto thee, and will put My Words in his mouth; and he shall speak unto them all that I shall command him.

38. PSA.18:50 Great deliverance giveth He to His king; and sheweth mercy to His anointed, to David, and to his seed for evermore.

39. PSA.89:3,4 I have made a covenant with My chosen, I have sworn unto David My servant, Thy seed will I establish for ever, and build up thy throne to all generations. Selah.

40. PSA.89:19-24,35 Then Thou spakest in vision to Thy holy one, and saidst, I have laid help upon one that is mighty: I have exalted one chosen out of the people. I have found David My servant; with My holy oil have I anointed him: With whom My hand shall be established: Mine arm also shall strengthen him. The enemy shall not exact upon him; nor the son of wickedness afflict him. And I will beat down his foes before his face, and plague them that hate him. But My faithfulness and My mercy shall be with him: and in My Name shall his horn be exalted. Once have I sworn by My holiness that I will not lie unto David.

41. PSA.132:11,12,17,18 The Lord hath sworn in truth unto David; He will not turn from it; Of the fruit of thy body will I set upon thy throne. If thy children will keep My covenant and My testimony that I shall teach them, their children shall also sit upon thy throne for evermore. There will I make the horn of David to bud: I have ordained a lamp for Mine anointed. His enemies will I clothe with shame: but upon himself shall his crown flourish.

42. PSA.144:10 It is He that giveth Salvation unto kings: who delivereth David His servant from the hurtful sword.

43. PRO.25:2 It is the glory of God to conceal a thing: but the honor of kings is to search out a matter.

44. PRO.29:14 The king that faithfully judgeth the poor, his throne shall be established for ever.

45. ISA.55:3-5 Incline your ear, and come unto Me: hear, and your soul shall live: and I will make an everlasting covenant with you, even the sure mercies of David. Behold, I have given him for a witness to the people, a leader and commander to the people. Behold, thou shalt call a nation that thou knowest not, and nations that knew not thee shall run unto thee because of the Lord thy God, and for the Holy One of Israel; for He hath glorified thee.

46. JER.30:7-9,21,24 Alas! for that day is great, so that none is like it: it is even the time of Jacob's trouble; but he shall be saved out of it. For it shall come to pass in that day, saith the Lord of hosts, that I will break his yoke from off thy neck, and will burst thy bonds, and strangers shall no more serve themselves of him; But they shall serve the Lord their God, and David their king, whom I will raise up unto them. And their nobles shall be of themselves, and their governor shall proceed from the mist if them; and I will cause him to draw near, and he shall approach unto Me: for who is this that engaged his heart to approach unto Me? saith the Lord. In the Latter Days ye shall consider it.

47. EZE.34:11,12,23,24 For thus saith the Lord God; Behold, I, even I, will both search My sheep, and seek them out. As a shepherd seeketh out his flock in the day that he is among his sheep that are scattered; so will I seek out My sheep, and will deliver them out of all the places where they have been scattered in the cloudy and dark day. And I will set up one shepherd over them, and he shall feed them, even My servant David; he shall feed them, and he shall be their shepherd. And I the Lord will be their God, and My servant David a prince among them; I the Lord have spoken it.

48. EZE.37:24,25 And David My servant shall be king over them; and they all shall have one shepherd: they shall also walk in my judgments and observe My statutes, and do them. And they shall dwell in the land that I have given unto Jacob My servant, wherein your fathers have dwelt; and they shall dwell therein, even they, and their children, and their children's children for ever: and My servant David shall be their prince for ever.

49. HOS.3:5 Afterward shall the children of Israel return, and seek the Lord their God, and David their king; and shall fear the Lord and His goodness in the latter days.

50. REV.3:7-10 And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia write; These things saith He that is holy, He that is true, He that hath the key of David, He that openeth, and no man shutteth; and shutteth, and no man openeth; I know thy works: behold, I have set before thee an open door, and no man can shut it: for thou hast a little strength, and hast kept My Word, and hast not denied My Name. Behold, I will make them of the synagogue of Satan, which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie; behold, I will make them to come and worship before thy feet, and to know that I have loved thee. Because thou hast kept the Word of My patience, I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the World, to try them that dwell on the Earth.

19. "DAVID IS..."

--{page 146}--



And I will set up one shepherd over them, and he shall feed them, even My servant David; he shall feed them, and he shall be their shepherd (Eze.34:23).

1. David is a Fiery Prophet! "The Words that he speaks are as flames of fire to set on fire the hearts of men! This is he that setteth on fire the course of nations!"

2. David is a Musician & "his Letters are like beautiful symphonies in Words! God plays the music in his key that turns him on & gives him the Words to the music!"

3. David is a Fighter "who likes to fight for the Lord with the weapon of the Word, a conquering hero that likes to live & die & fight for Jesus! No power in the World can withstand the power of the Spirit of God in David!"

4. David is a Mountainman, "leaving the multitude behind, braving the wind & the cold & the storms of this life to hear from God on the mountain the Words that echo around the World, whispers that change the course of history!"

5. David is God's Master Fisherman! "He knows how to use the bait & where to put the hook to catch many men for the Kingdom of God!"

6. David is a Miner "who gives his life to dig out precious gold & jewels from God's heavenly mines! From the deep dark places of the Earth come the most precious things of the World!"

7. David is a Good Shepherd "who layeth down his life for the sheep--leading, guarding & guiding the flock with the Rod of God's Word into the safety of His Fold forever! 'And I will set up one shepherd over them, & he shall feed them, even My servant David; he shall feed them & he shall be their shepherd.'" (Ez.34:23)

8. David is a Loving Father "to his children, cherishing & carrying them all the day long in his arms."

9. David is our Advocate "pleading for the cause of his children, that God will vindicate his Servants & save & deliver His Sheep from the hand of the Enemy!"

10. David is a "beautiful jewelled Pillar that helps support the Temple of God. The Pillar is covered with glowing Crystals, his children, that glow & pulsate with the pillar's light!"

11. David is a Crazy Crusader--"our old Don Quixote, a Brave Pioneer of the Spirit with crazy faith to do crazy things, leading us into a new & wonderful World of the Words & Works of God! 'Come with me where moonbeams light Eternal skies!--And the sparkling stardust lingers in your eyes!'"

12. David is a Deep Sea Diver, "diving into the ever-living waters of the Word, ever-fresh & new, to bring us strange new truths for our good, to strengthen & enlighten us & brighten our eyes & satisfy our souls!"

13. David is a Giver. "David wants to give & give, while some only want to get, & he shall give & give until he's gone!"

14. David is a Weeping Prophet, "who cries for them & gives his tears & Jesus helps them & forgives them. He sheds his tears for them like Jesus shed His blood."

15. David is God's Channel, "a pipeline, spouting the Words of God! The Lord turns on the faucet & the water goes through the pipe & waters the people!"

16. David is a "wirephoto & Teletype Machine on which we get the latest news in Words & pictures! God sends the pictures & the Words, & David, His little machine, rattles it off & passes it on to you!"

17. David is a faithful Operator! "With the hand of faith he flips the switch to receive God's Messages & he passes them on to the World!"

18. David is a Photographer! "He takes the pictures in his head & describes them to the artists who develop them!"

19. David is Aquarius, "poured forth as water unto the World!--Flowing, pouring, sharing in this Age of Aquarius, the Age of the Water of Life!--The Water-Bearer of all ages whom God has ordained to bring forth the Water of Life to the Children of this Last Generation!"

20. David is a Disciplinarian, "a very good father who knows how to give us chastisement for our mistakes! His Shepherd's Rod both saves & directs the sheep!"

21. David is "a born Salesman & Promoter!--Of the Gospel!--The best product on Earth!--Made in Heaven & guaranteed forever!--And free! How could anyone pass up a product & a deal like that!"

22. David is God's Picture--"showing the World what God is like & what Jesus wants them to see!"

23. David is "God's Early Warning System, the Prophet of God! We know long before the World knows, because God gives us early warning, twice the warning He gives the wicked!"

24. David is a Tape Recorder! "God puts the tape on & the recorder is programmed to broadcast whatever is on the tape! A tape recorder doesn't know what's coming, it just does what it's supposed to do!"

25. David is a Magician "with more power than Merlin, & with the power of the greatest magicians of the World to help him! His magic wand is the Word, & if you really hold onto it, it'll do things!"

26. David is a Sower "seeding a forest that is covering the Earth, bearing much precious fruit for God's Kingdom! The Seeds of David are the Words of his mouth that sow the Truth of God's Love & bring forth fruit of His mouth, little lambs of His fold!"

27. David is a Gardener! "Every beautiful soul along the highway of life is a little rose that we need to rescue from the System & replant in a safe little pot in the Lord's House!"

28. David is God's modern-day Jeremiah! "He has blasted the System & destroyed its lies & exposed its idols & smashed them to bits--rooting them out & casting them down in order to plant the true Seed of His Word & to build the true Temple of His Children!"

29. David is a Lover of the Word, "a worshipper of the Word--the secret of power & victory & overcoming & fruitfulness & fire & life & warmth & light & leadership! There's nothing more important than the Word!"

30. David is "the Fuse that Lights the Bomb that has blown us clear around the World in an explosion of the power of God!"

31. David is the "Flame of God's Candle in the midst of gross darkness, setting the World afire for God & enlightening the hearts of men everywhere."

32. David is an Antenna "getting God's messages & broadcasting them!"

33. David is a Warning Beacon, "beaming God's Warning Message to the World! He keeps his finger on the pulse of the World to warn us about the signs & omens of things to come!"

34. David is "a Small Rocket that's guiding a Big Rocket--the Family! The big rocket just has the power to push, but the little rocket guides it!"

35. David is a General "leading God's mighty army of Christian soldiers in a war for the Truth against the anti-Christ Systems of this World!--Taking his orders from our Commander-in-Chief, Jesus, & passing them on to the frontline troops!"

36. David is a "big Psychic to whom God has given wisdom & prophetic insight & oversight & out-of-sight to light the darkness!"

37. David is a Visionary! "It's his capacity, a Prophet's gift, to be able to see things & visualise them, see visions! Without a vision the people perish!"

38. David is God's modern-day Daniel, "with the wisdom of Daniel to know the number of the years, like the prophets of old, & speak the Words of God & receive the revelations, dreams, visions, prophecies & interpretations of God!"

39. David is God's Prophet "alone on the mountaintop with God receiving His Words in a heavy stream, rich, deep & wide--waters to swim in, pure & clear, which he passes on to the people!"

40. David is our Leader, "leading God's children around the World to a spiritual victory in the name of Jesus Christ!"

41. David is our Archeologist! "With every Letter he is clearing away the churchy rubble & man's debris in order to uncover what the Bible really says & what Jesus taught!"

42. David is an Angry Prophet! "David is a man of war! David is a man of power! David is a man of force! David is a man of violence & he hates the Enemy with a perfect hatred!"

43. David is a Teacher, "teaching a whole generation all over again with the right knowledge & the true knowledge of the Truth & the actual facts! His Words encourage, inspire, edify, instruct, rebuke, exhort, feed, comfort, lead and guide us!"

44. David is God's Modern-day Ezekiel, "a little man with a big Message of Warning & Woe! God has called him to be a Watchman unto the House of Israel, those who were supposed to be His Church, to give them warning from the Lord!"

45. David is a Baby Child Prophet! "God gives him messages in little fairy tales like a tiny little child! Even the foolishness of David is better than the wisdom of men!"

46. David is God's Guide, "leading the people & showing them the way to the hidden treasures of God's Word! He is a light to help lighten our way, to lead & guide, even as a light from afar that shines upon the pathway from a distant source."

47. David is a Pioneer, "with vision to see what no one else can see; faith to believe things no one else believes; initiative to be the first one to try it; & courage & guts to see it through!"

48. David is "a 100% whole-hearted Forsake-Aller! With him it's all or nothing at all! He's a fanatic, an extremist, drastic total revolutionary, & cannot even understand people who are not!"

49. David is an Intercessor, "with grace, mercy & truth! They come to him to tell their story & present their case & he begs Jesus for mercy for them & they are released!"

50. David is our Link to Jesus, "receiving God's precious revelations & His most recent timely up-to-the minute Word & passing it on to us! Jesus speaks the Words of David, & Moses speaks the Words of David, but these three are one & of one mouth."

51. David is a Man After God's Own Heart--"a man after the heart of God! He seeks God's heart & speaks the Words that come from God & from Moses & from David, & says those things which are favourable unto God!"

52. David is a Man with a Heart as Big as the World! "He's loving up the World & will not be satisfied until almost everybody on Earth is Saved!"

53. David is Moses, "who, with the Sceptre of God's Golden Words, is leading God's children into the Promised Land of the Kingdom of God on Earth!"

54. David is "King David of the whole World, the David of all Davids! This is the David whom I have chosen, the man whom I have called, the David whom I have selected, the David of whom I spake, the David of whom My prophets prophesied, the one whom I will honour above all those which have gone before!--The greatest king who ever lived on this Earth to glorify My Name!"

55. David is the King of Love "whom God has kissed & brought into being, & His Love has called him David, Beloved of God!"

56. David is King of the Beggars! "God showed him the despairing hippies, wandering about as sheep having no shepherd, & asked him if he'd be willing to go to these lost sheep & become king of these poor lost beggars! They needed a voice to speak for them, a shepherd to lead them & the rod of God's Word to guide them to the Light!"

57. David is the "Light of Israel! He has the spirit of Moses, the spirit of Abraham, the spirit of David & God's Spirit for this time, for there are many hungry souls & he needs to quench the thirst of many."

58. David is God's Mouthpiece, "His Prophet, His Man of God, His Chosen Leader, Shepherd & King, His anointed one, His man of power for the hour through whom He speaks!"

59. David is a Newsboy, "delivering the papers!"

60. David is a "Pen in the hand of the Lord, His humble instrument, the tool in God's hand to write what we need to know!"

61. David is a Prayer Warrior! "Blessed is he that beseecheth Me for My poor! Blessed is he that seeketh Me in the hour of trouble! So shall he be in the hour of triumph & I will be with him & lift up his hand that raiseth My sword (the Word!) to slay them which rise up against Me!"

62. David is our "Priest, Prophet & King like King David of old, our Pope & spiritual father! Bishop David is Bishop of Orthodox Church--the right church!"

63. David is the hidden Sap of the tree, "the inspiration that flows beneath the surface, giving life & health & beauty & nourishment that cause the branches to bear fruit!"

64. David is a Rescuer of the Bound! "He is fighting in a holy war to free men from fear with faith, free them from hatred with love, from sorrow with joy, from war with peace, from poverty with plenty & from death with Eternal Heavenly Happiness!"

65. David is a Sexy Prophet! "We have a sexy God & a sexy religion with a sexy leader with an extremely sexy following!--Free to enjoy the full beauties & wonders of God's creation with all of its pleasures!"--Hallelujah! TYJ!

66. David is a Time Traveller, "exploring unknown Worlds of the Spirit known only to God & His Heavenly Kingdom! He's hitched his wagon to a star, the Bright & Morning Star, Jesus Christ Himself, & is going places faster than the speed of light into realms beyond natural human ken."

67. David is a chiming Clock "warning you of the lateness of the hour! Some people don't like to hear him & would like to muffle the chimes."

68. David is a World Changer! "His powerful prayers & mighty pen have changed the course of history!"

69. David is "God's Gift of Love to the whole World! David means gift of God!--A sweet loving name!"

70. David is a Messenger Boy "delivering messages & telegrams to lots of important people!--The Lord's Letters of Love! For this is My Messenger whom I have sent before My face, My David, My King! Hear ye Him!"

71. David is our Snowman! "He's the old man of the mountain, with the hoary frost in his hair! He's an oooooold bear of the mountain, that lives in his big old lair. Snowman brought light to the Church & won the hearts of the young!"

72. David is our Driver, "following the vision ahead according to the Map & the Instruction of the Owner! His Letters ignite us, shift us, gear us, empower us & steer us in the right direction."

73. David is a Labourer--"he has digged trenches & God has filled them with the filling! He & his labourers take each block (Letter) one by one with a little mortar, & tier by tier build up the wall!"

74. David is a Traveller, "a refugee, an exile, a fugitive from injustice, wandering about through dens & caves of this Earth, always on the move on his way to Space City!"

75. David is God's Astrologer "who teaches us that God's Creation is a work of His hands, physical manifestations of His Guidance System which control man within the limits God has set."

76. David is an Iconoclast, "kicking over the traces, breaking all the rules, shattering all the precedents, rebelling from the System, destroying convention & departing from tradition! Idol-smashing is his business!"

77. David is a Defender of the Faith, "taking up the white-hot sword of the Spirit, which is the Word of God, & cutting the Devil to the heart!"

78. David is a Lover! "At the King's right hand there are pleasures forever more! How ardent is the love of their father for these his children!"

79. David is a spirit Helper, "& if you'll be real quiet he'll sing you songs of David & whisper you Words of the Spirit! You'll think about David & get the messages! He'll be your contact man, your guardian angel, your channel!"

80. David is a Feeder! "The little birdies, his children, chirp & chirp & throw him kisses of love by faith, hoping he'll throw back a few little crumbs to feed them! They know they'll be fed by the hand of their Father, if they'll but open their mouths!"

81. David is a Mechanic! "He learned to fix cars when he was young & knows just about everything there is to know about a car, every part of it & anything that has to be fixed!"

82. David is the Head of the House! "Jesus makes a pretty nest for David & his loves to rest & take all the Words of David in their big mouths!"

83. David is the Projectionist of God's Cinema! "Jesus just hands him the films & he puts them on his little projector & shows them on the screen so that you can get the Message!"

84. David is an Innovator, "always thinking of better ways to do things & getting new ideas all the time!--Ever-changing according to the need, situation & what's good for the Lord's Work!"

85. David is the "Black Knight, used by the Lord to rally us around His banner & send us on to victory!"

86. David is a Vernier, "a very necessary precision instrument that measures & calculates things said in the Bible & explains what they mean!"

87. David is like a little Gnome "below the ground, pumping up the sap from the Root Christ Jesus into the tree of the Family!"

88. David is an Exorcist "who has but to utter the name of Jesus to fell all the demons of Hell, Oplexicon & Satan himself! He can even rebuke them in the name of David & they will flee!"

89. David is a Statistician. "He loves stats! With nary a stat you don't know where you're at! Stats are the proof of the pudding, they prove & show what you've got!"

90. David is an Adventurer, "an Aquarian pioneer who doesn't like to follow beaten paths! Beaten paths are for beaten men, but mountain peaks are for the mighty!"

91. David is a "Champion of the Underdog & the little fellow, the handicapped & the poor guys who are getting a raw deal & who are not treated fairly, those who are being fleeced, abused or mistreated."

92. David is a Missionary! "His mission is to bring light to the blind, freedom to the fettered, love to the lost & a life of peace, joy, love & happiness with purpose & helpfulness to others, becoming one with them & getting the message across!"

93. David is a Gypsy King "leading the true modern Gypsies of Jesus with a wild, free Gypsy spirit! Come along & join our Gypsy Caravan!"

94. David is a Healer! "God sent a man from Heaven to touch her, a man of God to hear her in answer to her prayers! David expects miracles!--And in Jesus' name he gets them!"

95. David is like a Snake Charmer, "playing music of love & forgiveness that will bring peace to your mind & heart! The Charmer's music is not his own, it is God-given supernatural power! It's inspired!--To charm evil serpentine hearts with love & peace into obedience & rest.

96. David is an Administrator "involved in the political & material oversight of the Kingdom, but his major ministry is ministering the Word!"

97. David is a Playmate, "his sceptre is his magic wand that makes love to many & fills them with satisfaction!"

98. David is the "Wizard of Ahs!--And ahs!--And ahs!--And all the ahs there ever was! He shows us the way so we can understand."

99. David is a Laughing Prophet who tells us to "Be So Happy!" "The ability to laugh at yourself & your own silly mistakes is a great asset & helps keep you humble!"

100. David is a Proud Father! "The Children of David are a credit to their father!"

101. David is a Strategist "Telling us how to handle our swords & clobber the Enemy & win the victory & helping us plan our strategy by God's direction!"

102. David is a Singing Prophet, singing with conviction! "If you can't sing it like you mean it, if you can't sing it like you've got it & really want to do what it says, then for God's sake, don't sing it!"

103. David is a Fortune-Teller! "With his Wheel of Fortune he reads people's characters, going beyond just the character into things he sees can or may happen! People come to him & want to know things, & he prays & gets something from the Lord for them."

104. David is a Toilet, "catching the waste products of society & recycling them by the power of God into good, clean, refreshing, purifying rain!"

105. David is the "Mainspring of God's Watch that sets things in motion, that pushes a little to get the wheels turning! The watch is God's Children who are the timekeepers of the World, telling the World what time it is, & the World can hear us tick!"

106. David is an Opportunist! "He takes advantage of every opportunity to advance the cause of Christ!"

107. David is a Student of the Word "who did find God's Words & did eat them, the Bible at his right hand night & day, 'studying to show himself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the Word of Truth!'"

108. David is a Destroyer of Blobs, "bursting big blobs to bits so that we can really get the job done of rolling the gold into all the World to every creature! The only good gold is Rolled gold!"

109. David is a Warrior of the Faith "who has declared war on the Evil One! David likes to hit him head on & rebuke him in the name of Jesus in the power of the Spirit! He loves to fight for the name of Jesus & the cause of David!"

110. David is a Soul Doctor "who listens to his patients & their symptoms & gives the right prescription--Scriptures from the Bible for diseases of the heart & mind! With the hands of love, mercy & gentleness he gets at the root of the problem to correct the cause."

111. David is the "Lens through which the Light shines, like a projector in a dark theatre! Our kids like the movies or visions God shows! They enjoy God's movies which bring such light in the darkness!"

112. David is a "Sharp-Toothed Threshing Instrument which beats the mountains as chaff & rips with violence the pillows from under the arms of them which sit at ease in Zion!"

113. David is a Farmer, "plowing the land, breaking it & opening it with loving hands & forceful plow, to insert the seeds of the Gospel in receptive soil, the true Church!"

114. David is a Pistol "loaded with bullets of the Word, God's modern-day sword! All God has to do is touch the trigger & David fires whichever way God aims him, & people get the Message! He's a weapon of the Spirit that brings life by the Word instead of death, an instrument of life to those who receive it!"

115. David is an FFER "showing concern, pity, compassion & affection & manifesting it by genuine proving action! They are drawn to the light like moths to the flame, willing to be consumed if they can only find the light & feel the warmth of the flame."

116. David is a Wild Songbird "singing to cheer people up & encourage them & tell them that God lives & loves & not to worry, that everything's going to be all right!"

117. David is a Spider "weaving a web in the wisdom of God that shall catch many men for God's Kingdom! The little words of David sparkle in God's Sunlight!"

118. David is a Moonlighter! "His Moonlight is the Lord's Letters that shine like the moon to light up the whole World! This Moonlight of mine, I'm going to let it shine!--Let it shine, let it shine, let it shine!"

119. David is our "Grand Achoo!--When the Prophet even sneezes the whole World listens! Everybody listens to the Grand Achoo! It's not very pretty but it's a message for you! It winds up & winds up & then goes Achoo!--Everybody listens to the Grand Achoo!"

120. David is a Computer, "for years absorbing information, facts, stories & illustrations! The Lord is the operator that sits down at the console & plays upon his keys to get out the information that He wants! Prophets are computers--they compute that the hour is late & what's about to happen!"

121. David is a great Fountain, "such a pretty fountain that sprays us with the Words of Living Water!"

122. David is a Concerned Father--"concerned with every little detail, & servant of all!"

123. David is a Letter-Writer! "That is his main job, his calling & what the Lord designed him for & ordained him for from the very beginning--to write Letters to lead His Children! Henceforth there is laid up for us a crown of righteous writing!"

124. David is our "Papa Lion of the Tribe of Judah! God has used him & his faithful little keeper to lead us all into an exciting new life, to the amazement of the whole World! He may be old & his keeper very small, but he's still very strong & has very good teeth! Roarrrr!"

125. David is our ol'Rooster, "faithfully defending all his hens & little chickens, you & me! He also tells people it's time to wake up!"

126. David is a Heart that is Broken for the Lost! "To love is to weep with them, to cry with them, to suffer with them that suffer, & to feel the agony of heart with them whose hearts are broken!"

127. David is a Dreamer of Dreams, "taking lots of trips in the spirit nearly every night! Your young men shall see visions, & your old men shall dream dreams!"

128. David is our Milkman of the Word "who has time after time gone halfway to Heaven & back again to deliver to us the sincere Milk of the Word that we might be nourished & fed & strengthened in the Lord."

129. David is a Jeweller, "dipping out the sparkling purple waters of the Crystal Stream, the Words of Life, & forming them into beautiful royal purple crystal jewels--letters of Love for his children!"

130. David is an Astronomer, "educating his children in the wonders of God's astronomical creation & His marvellous operations!--Proving that the Earth, Sun, Moon & Stars are forever, enduring as long as the Throne of God!"

131. David is a Cook, "dishing it up faster than we can carry it away! There is none other like him in all this generation, for he giveth meat to the lowly & bread unto the hungry & freedom to those that are bound! Behold, what a spread the Lord places upon the table before thee!--His good meals through His Words!"

132. David is a Loving Husband, "preferring the happiness of his mate to his own! No two people in this World love each other as much as David & Maria & are of one mind, one heart, one spirit, one soul, one body as they are."

133. David is God's Eyes, "looking both ways: To God for information & direction, & then at the World to detect & tell them what's wrong!"

134. David is a Revolutionist, "always looking for some better way to do it! If you tell him he can't do it, he'll prove to you he can! He doesn't hesitate to abandon the old & throw it away, even if it costs something, if it's going to help God's work to move ahead!"

135. David is a Scientist "who runs the big Observatory that produces much important data for the benefit of all mankind!"

136. David is a Forgiving Father, "merciful, patient, longsuffering & kind, putting his arms around his children & encouraging them & inspiring them, showing he has faith in them!"

137. David is "God's Voice for God's Vision!--The Voice of His choice, the Vision of His Chosen, His man of Faith to send them forth, His Father-Figure to symbolise His Own Presence with His People!"

138. David is a Trumpet "that carries the Message of God's Mouth to His people!--The Communicator of His Words, His Voice--& God's sheep hear His Voice, the Prophet of God, & they follow Him!"

139. David is a Bottle "whose heart is poured forth like water & whose soul is poured forth like wine to them that are athirst & anhungered. God fills & fills & fills again that all may drink & have plenty & never run dry! The bottle asks only to live that it may be poured out to others."

140. David is a Stranger & Pilgrim, "a citizen of another World, the coming Kingdom of Christ on Earth! We belong to no particular country except an Heavenly, & no particular city, for we seek an Heavenly City whose Builder & Maker is God!"

141. David is God's Watchdog, "barking to warn the people of what's gonna happen, that there's danger approaching, enemies coming, & to be ready to fight or run!"

142. David is a prospector, "faithfully mining & refining God's good gold of His Words & passing them on to the people!"

143. David is our Captain, "riding out the storm, enjoying the conquest of the sea, as our giant wave of witnessing like a gigantic ocean breaker floods the World with the Gospel!"

144. David is a faithful Communicant, "the rays of his pen reaching out & enlightening us all together in one single blaze of glory of one mind, one heart & one spirit through the miracle of communication--writing & the mails!"

145. David is the Grandpa "of all the little children in this loving Family, a wise loving old man who hears from Jesus & tells them lots of fascinating stories with good lessons for living!"

146. David is a Law-Giver, "laying down God's general rules & specific prohibitions or general permissions! 'Whatsoever you do in word or in deed, do all to the glory of God!'"

147. David is a Repairer of the Breaches, "a man to call God's people to repent & make up the wall & stand in the gap until the wall of their defenses against the Enemy are repaired & built up again!"

148. David is a "little tiny Pebble, but he holds the big stones together! He is the guiding rock, the cohesive power that holds the great & mighty rocks together to form a great mountain of God's power & the testament of His Word, & these shall be the great Kingdom of God!"

149. David is a "big, loud Firecracker! when he explodes, things happen & people move & get excited & do things!"

150. David is our Pied Piper, "playing sweet music to the children in the Power of God & Jesus! The children follow him to a place in the back away from things!"

151. David is an Example! "By one man's obedience, many have been made righteous!"

152. David is the "New Church that God has raised up, with a new anointing & a fresh spirit & a new attack & a new approach & a new guise out of nowhere & from nothing!--A new Prophet for a new day!"

153. David is a Handyman, "a Jack-of-All-Trades! He's had about every kind of job there is so he can teach his children & give'm a little advice about a little of everything!"

154. David is a Happy Prophet! "All happy children, are the children of David! How happy all the children are who are the children of David!"

155. David is a Destroyer of Lies--"destroying delusion in order to build a firm foundation of Truth!"

156. David is a Mopper--"He uses good soapy water to mop the floor of your mind!--To brainwash you & clean you with the pure Water of the Word to make you nice & clean & so polished that you really shine for the Lord!"

157. David is the Rasputin of today & his enemies know it. They hate him because they can't overcome him because he's sustained by the miraculous power of God!



Incline your ear, & come unto Me: hear, & your soul shall live; & I will make an everlasting covenant with you, even the sure mercies of David. Behold, I have given him for a witness to the people, a leader & commander to the people (Isa.55:3,4).

1. Record thou these in a book & write down these things that there should be no misunderstanding that I have spoken this of thy King David, that he shall fulfil all these things! Write, & place it in the book that thou shalt have the record of the things that I have spoken!

2. He poureth out not as one who giveth stingily, but in double measure that he may live his life to the full in half the time I would have given him.

3. Behold how the words well from within the innermost parts of thy father to pour forth upon thirsty souls.

4. Precious in the eyes of the Lord is the life of thy father & precious are the Words that I have given unto David.

5. Oh how mighty & marvellous & wonderful are the great things that I have shown unto your father!

6. Behold, I will not break the covenant I have made with your father. Neither will I fail the Word that I have promised unto David, your father. I shall not allow him to be cut off before his time.

7. Even as I have promised thee that I will give unto thee the key to the House of David, even so will I make thy enemies dust under thy feet & open doors that are closed & close doors that are opened, that they which are of the synagogue of Satan & say they are Jews & are not shall be cast down & exposed. And thou shalt be delivered, for I the Lord have spoken it & I cannot lie.

8. Even so am I with thee, & even so I shall speak in thy heart the secrets & reveal unto thee the things which are to come. For I will do nothing but I will show it unto My holy Prophets. As Daniel of old, I am with thee & shall reveal unto thee the number of years & even the number of days of the things which are to come.

9. Thou shalt be unto them as the oracles of God, & thy mouth shall be My mouth, & I will tell thee & thou shalt tell them, that they may obey Me. And they shall know that it is not thou that speak unto them, but I that speak unto them, for as I was with Moses, so shall I be even with thee. And even as with those that disobeyed Moses, even so shall it be with those that disobey thee, they shall come to despair & to failure.

10. Who art thou to question Me & who art thou to say, "Why hast Thou made me thus?" For shall the vessel say unto the Potter who hast made it, "Why hast Thou made me thus?" For I have made thee according to My will & this one by thy side according to My pleasure that you may fulfill My will, contrary to natural expectation, & in defiance of the conventions of man, even as I called upon My Prophets of old to humiliate themselves & to obey Me to illustrate My Message for My people. As Isaiah walked naked before Me & Ezekiel ate dung & Hosea married an harlot to illustrate My purpose, even so shall I do this thing to illustrate My wrath against a disobedient church & a rebellious Jerusalem!

11. Thy kingdom & thy possession shall be greater & thy flocks more numerous & thy herds more fruitful & thy houses greater & thy fame spread abroad throughout all the land beyond thy comprehension for thy faithfulness unto Me.

12. I have made thee as one with Me that thou might hew & cut & chop & smite & strike down that which is false & deliver the young saplings which grow about her roots unto the light of My Word, that I may shine upon them & that they may grow & become mighty in word & deed as a great forest of trees that shall bear great fruit, & many, many shall be called by My name.

13. This is the blessing wherewith I have blessed thee & this is thine inheritance: I have blessed thee with long life & many children & with the Kingdom that is Mine.

14. If thou couldst see that which is in store for thee, the things I have prepared for thy children, if thou couldst feel that which I feel for thee, the joy thou shouldst know in time to come, thou shouldst be overjoyed for that which is to come. For thou shalt suffer many things, many trials, many tribulations, many tests & persecutions, suffer many things before that day, but I will bring thee forth as pure gold, if thy faith fail not.

15. By thy tongue & thy pen thou shalt bring upon thyself & thy loved ones great suffering & persecution; for I have made of thee a sharp-toothed threshing instrument to beat the mountains like chaff.

16. Thou shalt tenderly cherish little plants out of the dry ground which will grow to the harvest of God. And when He shall come in that day with His Holy Angels, the Earth shall be reaped.

17. And thou shalt sit down with Abraham & with Isaac & with Jacob in the Kingdom of God, & thine enemies shall be thrust out!

18. Glorify Me in all things. Then shall thy candle be exalted, & thy urn full of oil & thy vase flow freely with the water of Life, & thy flower shall not wither, thy power shall not fail, thy wisdom shall not cease forever.

19. Then thou shalt continue to be a light unto My people & to quench their thirst for everlasting water & to heal their wounds & give beauty for ashes & wisdom for foolishness & shalt pour forth thy life upon the dry ground that it may bring forth fruit, that thou shalt glorify Me, the Author & the Finisher of all things, if thou shalt burn only with My Power & flow with My Life, & speak by My Spirit, & give Me the glory, & not thyself.

20. The harp of David has awakened! My servant David has awakened from slumber to lead My children in this last day!

21. For he shall lead them by many waters, through green pastures, & they shall sing praises unto Me, even on many harps, & they shall multiply the songs of David, as they sing new songs unto Me, as My Children, that they may glorify Me. Hear ye him!

22. I have made thee My Moses & My David! I have made thee a new vessel, & completely broken thee & destroyed the former vessel that was, & made thee a totally new vessel! The former vessel no longer lives! For thou art a new creation!

23. What if I will that thou be wicked as David of old, that the excellency of the power may be of God--that I may be glorified! For man thinketh not as God thinketh. For man looketh on the outward appearance, but the Lord looketh on the heart, I put down & I put up. I propose & I dispose!

24. It is I that have made thee & called thee by thy name, even unto the Generation of generations--called thee by thy name before thou wast formed in the womb, & caused thy Mother to call thee by thy name David, that it should be fulfilled that which was spoken by My Prophets!

25. I have broken thee & made thee & created thee in My own Image to be that David which of old I have foretold!

26. By My Spirit I have plucked thy harp & My Tones have awakened thee, & I have said unto thee, "Come forth, & arise, & plead for My Children & My people Israel! David, arise, & come forth, as from sleep, that thou mayest save My Children Israel!

27. Even as with My servant Moses, I have dealt with thee--even face to face & mouth to mouth have I spoken unto thee. As with My Servant David, so have I done unto thee!

28. Thou must lead My people, like Moses. Thou art as the Voice of God unto them.

29. Thy faith shall be as the faith of David, & their strength shall be as the strength of David's men! And thou shalt plunge into battle with them & be the victor, & thou shalt fight as with the strength of the Lord thy God, & wound the hairy scalp of the Enemy by the power of the Spirit of God! They shall follow thee like sheep whithersoever thou goest.

30. I have kissed thee, David, & brought thee into being, & My love has called thee David--Beloved of God!--For which cause thy Mother did name thee!

31. I have blessed thee above all the sons of men on the face of the Earth, that even as Abraham, thy seed shall be as the stars of the Heavens in multitude, & as the sands of the sea innumerable. And all generations shall call thee blessed.

32. The Key of David is that chord which I strike upon thy harp to awaken thee from slumber--that signals thee to come to life to help My Children in the time of their great distress. The key that I strike upon thy harp--the chord which I strike upon thy strings, is the tone that signals thee--the Key of David!

33. Too long thou hast kept David buried, entombed in the System & the old ideas! But I have awakened thee through the Key of David, & thou hast awakened & led My Children--My People--to freedom!

34. For thou indeed hast little strength, but I Myself have strengthened thee, & by My Spirit have brought thee to life, that thou mayest minister of the strength which the Lord supplieth. As thy days, so shall thy strength be, that the excellency of the power may be of God, & not of man. For thou art a very thin, earthen vessel that has been shattered that it may be melted & molded again into a better vessel!

35. Even as I have also helped thee in times past, I now help thee by the spirits of My counsellors, even Abraham, Moses, & David & others, that thou must fulfill the mission I have given thee on this Earth until thou hast gathered My children into one Fold.

36. Even as John the Baptist came in the spirit & power of Elijah, even as I said, "Behold, I send Elijah the prophet before the coming of the day of the Lord," even as I said I would send David in the spirit & power of David My servant: Even so have I done it, saith the Lord!

37. I have welded My Moses & David together, in the volume of the book it is written of them, so have I done it.

38. David does not have to fight for himself! For the Lord Himself shall fight for him & deliver over unto him the Key that belongeth to him.

39. Kiss the mouth of Thy Lord which hath spoken unto thee! Even as Moses spake My Word--even as Jesus spake My Word--even now has David spoken My Word!

40. For these two shall become one, according to that which I have prophesied; This My Moses & this My David.

41. Hear thou the words of My Servant David! Many prophets would have that which I have given unto thee. Heed thou & listen! Look thou & observe! Do thou that which hath been spoken of thee. The number of the books shall not be sufficient to contain all the Words of David.

42. Kiss the paps of David! How blessed are those that dwell in his arms & lie by his side & those that enjoy the peace of his love that I have given unto them!

43. There shall be no love like the love of My Servant David.

44. Thou shalt have many loves, but thou shalt never be loved like thou art loved by My Servant David!

45. This indeed is the Light of Israel, & this indeed is that which I have given. This indeed is the David whereof I spake of old! Therefore hear ye him! Behold, the man whom the Lord hath chosen! Hear ye him!

46. For truly there are many Davids, but this one have I chosen!--And this one have I anointed that he might fulfill all of that which was written of him, & which thou shalt write of him, & which shall yet be written of him. And all these words shall be inscribed in a book, that it may be said of thee that this the Lord thy God loveth thee, as it was written in the Book of David!

47. For he hath great need of many; for many have need of him!

48. And I shall greatly increase his seed upon the face of the Earth, & they shall overflow, overflow, overflow, & many nations shall flow unto them, & kings shall bow down before them.

49. For this is he that was for to come--the prophet which I shall raise up from among thy brethren--thou hast heard him! For thou hast received all of his words. Thou hast believed that which I have given--all the words spoken by the Prophets, of David your King.

50. David prays & it cometh to pass, the things which Jesus hath spoken, that his Children might be ordained of God to carry the Message to every land & every tongue & every nation!

51. To the one called David by divine anointing, it has been given thee to perceive the number of years, which according to the Prophet Jeremiah will pass before the End of Desolations. (See Daniel 9:2) I have also given him the power now to perceive the meaning of these things!

52. Even the foolishness of David is better than the wisdom of men!

53. Thou shalt never fail, for I am with thee & thy devices shall never fail, & thou shalt have that which thou shalt ask for & find that which thou shalt seek & have that door opened upon which thou shalt knock, & I will give thee greater habitations than thou hast ever had before.

54. For he is but a little tiny pebble, but he holds the big stones together. Take heed that thou direct thy attention to the little pebble, for he is the guiding rock. Though he be a tiny pebble, he is where My power & guidance are, & the cohesive power that holds the great & mighty rocks together.--Because I speak to this little tiny rock & tell him what to do & he doeth it & obeyeth My Word & heedeth My Commandments & holdeth My mighty rocks together to form a great mountain which shall be the Mountain of My power & the Testament of My Word, & these shall be the great Kingdom of God, & many nations shall come unto thee & shall seek to flow therein & bring honour into it--not one king but many great kings!

55. Multi-millions & billions, & many many mighty kings shall seek thy favour & flow unto thee & ask of thee: "What shall we do to have the favour of God, & how shall we be blessed of the Lord, for thou art the blessed of the Lord & indeed the king of God, & thou hast that which we have sought unto, & thou hast that which He hath favoured, for thou art the blessed of God!"

56. Foolish are those who stand against thee, for mighty is thy power by the hand of God! They shall fail, but thou shalt prosper! Every weapon that is formed against thee shall not prosper, but thou shalt prosper & be

mighty above all the kings on the face of the Earth, & I shall rebuke many kings for thy sake, for I am with thee & do prosper thee & shall be with thee in all these things.

57. Thou art Mine Anointed King, & thy Children, the City I have chosen, & thy Children shall be as the sands of the sea & the stars of the Heavens innumerable, which I have promised to My Servant Abraham, of whom thou art the fulfilment of all time & prophecy.

58. I am with thee & cannot fail, & I am thy Saviour & I shall redeem all men through thee & thy children, for thou art the saviours of this Earth. Otherwise, I would cast it forth, but for thy sake, I will save those upon whom thou wilt have mercy, & will curse those thou wouldst curse!

59. Many are the mighty men that shall serve David & many are the great kings that shall come unto David & many shall bow down & be ashamed before My Servant David, because he is My king. It is I that have put him up & empowered him! He represents Me, for he is Mine anointed one; none shall be able to stand before My David, none but those who love & honour & favour & obey Me--only those shall stand & all others shall fail before My Servant David!

60. Thou shalt be exalted above all, & thy rod shall rule all other rods, & thou shalt be called mighty upon the palace of thy God! For I am with thee & shall reign with thee as a rod within My Hand--as a rod of iron--& they shall bow before the rod within My Hand! Thou art the Rod & the Branch & My Servant David that I have spoken of! For thou art indeed that one which I have anointed to become king of all the Earth & to smite all those who have risen up against Me & those who would seek to choose to fight against Me!

61. And I have chosen thee as the Rod & the Branch of David & that which is the fulfilment of all those things which are spoken of thee!

62. For I have given unto David all the powers which be on the face of the Earth, & all the kings of the Earth shall be his, for he doth love Me & he shall render unto Me that which is My due, & he shall gather all the sheep of all nations to My Fold, & all nations shall bow down before Me, for I the Lord have spoken it & given it unto thee. It is a small thing, for thou dost please Me!

63. For he shall gather them as the sheep of many folds. He shall gather kings & princes & princesses & nations & kingdoms & castles & palaces & present them at My feet as a tribute & honour unto Me, for he considers himself nothing, as little as the lowest of all things! Therefore have I exalted him & duly honoured him & exalted him above all kings on the face of the Earth! Therefore have I highly empowered & exalted him, because he hath honoured Me above all things & all kings & all palaces & all powers & all women! He hath honoured Me in the sight of the Lord!

64. These are the children of the most high God & these are the people I have chosen to place My Name on, & this is David their King that shall serve Me with all his heart as a man after Mine Own heart, for he cannot help himself, for he is as nothing--as a little tiny grain of dust--but I have taken him & breathed upon him by My Spirit! Behold!--He hath become many tribes! And he hath become many nations! And he hath become a king of all kings! And I have given unto him children upon children--thousands upon thousands & tens of thousands & thousands of thousands!

65. This, the flame of My King, is unquenchable fire that cannot be put out because it is the fire of God! Even if they shall pour many waters upon it, nothing can quench the fire of the Spirit of God, for it shall cause it to burn even more brightly!

66. Blessed are the words & blessed is the tongue that I have given David! The words that I have put in the mouth of Moses & the love that I have given the heart of David have made him as a god of love. For one hour in the arms of David is as ten thousand! He is as My Love to you, & you are My love to him.

67. This is the Water Bearer if all ages whom I have ordained to bring forth the water of Life to the children of this Last Generation, to suck the milk from his paps & to be satisfied.

68. He is My Servant unto all the Words of My Mouth. There is none other like him in all this generation, for he is that one that loveth that which is unlovely & cherisheth that which is despised & giveth meat to the lowly & bread unto the hungry & freedom to those that were bound.

69. If thou wouldst have light & if thou wouldst have meat & if thou wouldst be satisfied, thou shalt hearken unto the Words of My David & thou must kiss his breasts & drink of his milk--for he shall satisfy thee! How canst thou hear his words & how canst thou suck of his paps & be fed & nourished?--If thou dost suck of his breast & the words that I have given him! Kiss the mouth & the words & the paps of David & thou shalt be satisfied, for I have given unto him all these things, & these are not his, but My Words.

70. For I have quickened the heart of David & lightened his mind & brought forth his waters as honey & sweetness that they might nourish My little ones & grow up the calves of My stall & the lambs of My fold!

71. This is that David whom I have spoken of for the last generation--the Prophet for this Age--the one that shall carry the lambs in his bosom & give them suck & shall cherish them & nourish them--even this My Spirit doth love them & care for them--for His little ones.

72. Behold, how he weepeth for his children! For these are My tears & this is My Love that I have for this generation.

73. This is the one of whom I have spoken & of whom shall all generations be blessed, & all nations shall call him blessed.

74. For indeed this one hath the spirit of Moses & the heart of David & the love of My Servant, that David of whom I spake who led My people into their pasture & little ones into My fold.

75. For the bosom of David is as My bosom that I have given thee--this generation that I have loved!--If thou shalt believe all the Words that I have given thee.

76. Oh, what life do I given them through the words of David! Oh, how they kiss & rejoice & dance to the words of David! For he is My Servant, he is My mouth, he is My voice & he is My heart & My soul, for he hath given unto Me, & he shall receive of My Spirit without measure!

77. Behold, the dawn cometh & the Son of Righteousness ariseth & this shall be a new day, & His love shall drop down like rain upon the land & there shall spring forth life--there shall be love & laughter & joy & peace for ever-after!... Tomorrow!... When He makes the World free!

78. Even as he must give forth the water from his penis lest he burst, so must he give forth My Word lest his heart breaketh as his soul explodeth, So must he give forth the Words of his God, for he is My Prophet & he cannot contain any more than he can contain this water which floweth from his body.

79. If Moses were here, thou wouldst ask of him; but a greater than Moses is here! If Daniel were here, thou wouldst ask of him; but a greater than Daniel is here! If John were here, thou wouldst ask of him; but a greater than John is here!

80. Who has such love & who has such power & who has such ardor as David for Me? For this man David is after My own heart & he speaks the Words that come from Me & from Moses & from David. And he says those things which are favourable unto Me.

81. Cast thou shut the book? Canst thou shut the mouth? If thou shuttest the mouth, it will explode in David! Moses is like David. He laid down the laws like David. He put things in order like David. He loved & shepherded My people like David. Canst thou close the book? Canst thou shut up the words of My Servant David? He that sitteth in the Heavens shall laugh at those who try to tighten the tongue of David!

82. For the words which he speaks are as flames of fire to set on fire the hearts of men! For David is hot as a flame with the Spirit of God! You cannot close the mouth of David. You cannot close the Words of David. Open the book & let loose the words & flood the nations with the Words of David! For this is he that setteth on fire the course of nations, as David My Servant doth set on fire the hearts of men!

83. Dost thou know the words? Dost thou know the thoughts of David? They are as flames of fire & incite the hearts of men to follow Me!--Nor should he quench his tongue nor should he close his mouth. For I am He that openeth his mouth & I am He that waggeth his tongue that David may set on flame the very course of nature itself, that all those who hear the Words of God from the prophets unto Moses & unto them of the Last Day shall glorify Me & the flame that I have set on fire in the heart of David!

84. They can no more stop the mouth of David than they can stop the mouth on the breast of her that nourisheth the infant. David is like a mother to his children. David is like a father to his children. He cherisheth & carries them all the day long in his arms. Neither father nor mother has the love of My Servant David, nor can they separate them from him.

85. How thinkest thou that any can silence the words that come from the mouth of David, that flow from his breast to the mouth of his infants? Neither Moses nor the prophets had the spirit of My Servant David! Neither hath any had more power nor hath any had more Words than My Servant David. There is nothing good that I will not give My Servant David, for he pleases, yes, he pleases Me. Love My Servant David!

86. Thinkest thou the sucking of thy breast & the kisses of thy mouth shall satisfy My Servant? He has such hunger that not all the women in the World could satisfy! He is satisfied only like My Servant Moses, at the very breast of God is he happy!

87. Truly thou hast but little strength! But thou hast kept My Word, & thou hast not denied My Name. Therefore have I given unto thee this key that shall unlock even greater mysteries, & doors such as thou hast never seen! For it hath not entered into thy mind, neither hath thine eye seen, nor hath thine ear heard, the glories that shall be, that I have laid up for thee, My Own, My beloved, My beloved one!

88. For I have overshadowed him, & protected him, & kept him, & sheltered him round about by My angels, & given him the aura of My presence, & the overshadowing of My wings, & the protection of My power!

They would have slain this My beloved one, My David, My darling! But because he hath kept My Words, & hath not denied My name, & hath this little strength that I have given him, even so have I kept him & even so will I not deny him, & I shall have strength for him, that he will be spared in the time of anguish; that David shall be spared that he might serve Me until his time is come, when I shall gather him unto his fathers, & his Children also with him.

89. Thou shalt see his life poured forth in double measure as a candle which burneth at each end & giveth great light until it is gone in half the time, that they may live longer in My light than in darkness!

90. Behold, I have given unto David more than the life of any man, for he pleaseth Me! Behold, he hath lived in half his life more than twice the life of any man! Behold, is it not enough that I have given unto thee to feed more & water more in thy lifetime than all My shepherds of all My sheep before thee?

91. For this is even he of whom I have spoken, & he whom I have loved from the beginning, & he whom I have promised that I will give, that he may feed My sheep, & water them that lead them unto Me.

92. Even the spittal of David is of more value than the words of man, wise men of this World, after the fashion of the World which perisheth! Even the spittal gives more light to the eyes & more wisdom to the wise than the many words that they produce!

93. There are they so athirst for that which cometh from David that they would drink his piss & eat his dung, they are so anhungered!

94. Behold a greater than Moses is here, & more than Abraham.

95. How great are the wonders that Thou hast shown unto Thy Servant David! Wouldst thou see more wonders than this, & greater things than these?--Then hearken unto the words of My Servant David!

96. They are better than gold & better than silver, the Words of love that I speak to thee through thy Father! More precious than fine jewels are these things I speak from his bosom!

97. Oh the understanding that I have given unto David thy Father, beyond that of other men!

98. For behold, I have used thee as a warning light & as a beacon unto this generation that they may follow that which I have spoken, or be destroyed for their unbelief!

99. This thy king, the one whom I have chosen, this is the man whom I have called. This is the David whom I have selected, for this is the one whom I will honour above all those which have gone before.

100. This is that David of whom I spake, & this is that David of whom My prophets prophesied.

101. He is My master fisherman who useth thee for My bait to catch many fish for Me! He knows all the lines & many nets in all the places that I have set them & all the best places where there are many good fish. You see?

102. He places them not in the empty sepulchres of the dead amid the rotting carcasses of the slain, but he places them in the schools where there are many multitudes full of life & shiny & quick & lively! You must not fear his hand or where he places thee.

103. For he knows best the places where many fish come. See?--This grotto--& that reef--& even in this shallow. He looks from above & he sees more than the fish themselves can see.

104. They know not even that he sees or that he knows or that he observes them & understands their ways & whither they will go, but I have given this knowledge unto him that he may know how to catch them. See?

105. For he is an expert fisherman & has much knowledge from many years of experience with many kinds of fish, & he knows who to bait with whom & how to use thee for My glory! But he will never let go of the line on which thou art cast or surrender the net in which thou art placed to catch others.

106. There are hosts & multitudes who dwell in the Valley of indecision who seek for answers from thy father.

107. Blessed is he that crieth out in the name of the Father! Blessed is he that beseecheth Me for My poor! Blessed is he that seeketh Me in the hour of trouble! Blessed is he that beseecheth My Name! Blessed is he whom I have called & anointed & raised up for this day! Blessed is he that I have set upon My throne in My Name to rule over My people!

108. Blessed is he that loveth & ruleth My people well. Blessed is he that seeketh My face in the hour of trouble. So shall he be in the hour of triumph, & I will be with him & lift up his hand that raiseth My sword (the Word) to slay them which rise up against him.

109. As the seed of Abraham so have I given unto your Father many children who shall rule the World! What visions of wisdom God has given thy Father!

110. Jesus has blessed the days of the words of thy father & hallowed the times of his love with many kisses of his words.

111. Behold with what love I have kissed thy father & manifested Myself unto him.

112. I have given unto no other man than thy father the Love I have given unto David.

113. Thou dost not have to see nor understand all things, neither dost thou have to know the mind of thy father nor to understand all the words of David, for all of these things which I have ordained are already in My hands & are finished.

114. Knowest thou that the Word is mightier than the sword? And this is the power that I have given unto them, the power to shield the Words of thy David for this moment.

115. For the Word is mightier than the sword, that I may spare the life & breath of thy father with My kisses. And I shall kiss them while they spare you. Thou hast greater treasure in the wells of thy Words than they have from the wells of the oil of their friends.

116. Thou knowest not the honour that I give to your father, for he is greater & My Word more powerful energy than the energy of those which give them oil! If only thou canst know the power I have given unto the Words of thy father, which is greater than all the sources of all energy, & more powerful than all of that which they seek after!

117. Hear the Words that I speak unto thy father & believe the Words that I have said unto him, that thou mightest have faith in the message that I have given unto thy father David!

118. I am with thee, even as I was with My servant Moses to separate My children from Egypt, & to lead them into that Promised Land--My Kingdom, which is not of this Earth but is Heavenly!

119. If thou didst but know the tones that I have to play for thee, thou wouldst never doubt that thou art My David, that I am thy God!

120. O behold how they watch with joy the Words & the deeds of thy father & his children!

121. What wisdom Thou dost give unto the Words of David!

122. Oh, kiss the Words that I have given thy Father David! Kiss the wisdom of the Words that I have given unto thy Father David!

123. Listen, listen, listen! Hear ye the voice of thy father David which poureth forth words of love even as these seeds of love!

124. If you will go in My Name & say only that I have sent thee, I will do great things which thou knowest not of!

125. The Lord will hear your father & answer his cry!

126. So foolish the forces who rise up against Thy Name & Thine Anointed & those that feel the force of thy father!

127. What beautiful Words are the kisses of your father!

128. What power there is in the kiss-words of your father David!

129. What freedom there is in the Words of David!

130. He will not fail in one of all His good promises He has given unto David!

131. How beautiful is the Light that I have given unto My servant David.

132. Even the birds come to David & fear not, & feed at his hand in abundance, & cry unto him with expectancy, & know that they shall be fed, & fret not!

133. David is weary with weaving, & the arms that are long have stretched out to take hold from far places! And though it be delicate, it be very strong, & this web that I weave in My wisdom shall catch many.

134. Oh how these little words of David, they cross over, they cross over the chasm between the lines & go from strand to strand, & line within line, that sparkle within My sunlight!

135. Therefore shalt thou spare the Flame of David & carry it to a far country, that it may burn brightly in the midst of darkness!

136. Behold Thou the tears of Thy servant & hearken unto the voice of his crying. For he doth hunger & thirst after Thee & hast raised up his heart unto Thee & his soul crieth after Thee & wilt not be satisfied except Thou dost bless him & all of his children which are Thine!

137. Even so shall thy blood stain the ground & even so shalt thou give thy life for Me & for thine. But even so from thy blood shall blossom other lives that shall do My bidding & bring multitudes, multitudes into the Valley of Decision for Me!

138. So shall it be recorded in the annals of David that this is the one whereof I spake! For thy Jesus hath spoken unto thee, & even Moses hath proclaimed it--& this, My David, hath fulfilled it--a man indeed after My Own heart! Hear ye him!

139. Great are the mercies & the love that I have bestowed upon My Servant David!

140. Those that stand by Moses' side shall surely receive their reward! For if they suffer with thee, they shall also reign with thee.

141. David is but a lad. Therefore have I exalted him, for he puts all of his confidence in Me!

142. Ply with thy hand upon the harp of David that thou mayest make his strings taut to play sweet music unto thee, to satisfy thy soul & to fill thy mouth that is hungry, with good things, that thou mayest conceive & bring forth good fruit!

143. So are the thunderings of the bombs of the Words of thy father!

144. Nothing is too good for thy father!

145. Jesus hath given the kisses of His mouth unto David, even Moses hath bestowed the kisses of his mouth unto David!

146. Not nearly so many things were recorded about Moses as shall be recorded in the House of David!

147. How many are the helpers of David!

148. Who can capture the Wild Wind? Who can corner the winds & put them into their place?--Only the songs of David & of Moses!

149. The Words of David & all the saints came from the Wild Wind of the Spirit of God!

150. Said I not unto thee that I would raise up kings in thy favour, & that rulers would bow at thy feet, & that I would turn the hearts of the rulers toward My people, & these too should hear the Words of David!

151. David can have all the power that his bosom desires, if he wants it!

152. Oh how mighty & marvellous & wonderful are the great things that I have shown unto your father!

153. This is the sorrow of your father & this is the hurt that he grieves, that he may be like unto Me, that he may know the pain that I have suffered, too. For I too gave up My Son that I might save others.

154. For these are the things that I have given unto David thy father, & these are the prices he must pay for these infinite glories & rewards that I shall give him in the World to come! For it is a small thing, these sacrifices that he now makes, that he may glory in eternal rewards forever! These things shall no more be remembered & the pain shall be forgotten.

155. Kiss thy father in his sorrow & in his pain, for David shall yet suffer many things before he shall be received of Me for everlasting glories & rewards!

156. Comfort ye your father in his sorrow, that David may know that I have loved him with an everlasting love that shall never fade away, & I shall recompense unto him all this pain & all of these sorrows, & the things that he hath lost shall be preserved forever in the Heavenly Kingdom that I have laid up in store for him where he shall rejoice forever!

157. For this is the price that your father must pay & this is the sacrifice that I have required of David, that I may show his love to all generations, that he may be like unto Me & My Love that I gave, to lay down My life for others.

158. This is he which turneth the World right side up & causeth the nations to rejoice & shout for joy in the pleasures that I have created. Rejoice & shout for joy, all ye lands, & behold the joys that I have given unto thee for thy pleasure for evermore! Behold these the blessings that I have promised unto thee through thy father David. Behold, he hath opened the eyes of the blind & enlightened the World with My Words of truth that they may see & shine forth for evermore.

159. The rebellion of David is exploding through all the Earth! The armies of David that I have promised to march abroad, the things that I have promised unto David, I have fulfilled & every word shall be fulfilled & every thing that I have promised shall be done!

160. So have I touched the Harp of David. With the fingers of the Wind of My Spirit have I awakened it!

161. Even Moses heard the strings of David's harp, & he rejoiced to see that day.

162. Love stronger than the World, higher than the Heaven, more powerful than the lightning bolts, more refreshing than the rain!--The seven kisses of David are more satisfying than the sun!

(See also No. R, 64, 77, 102, 152, 154B, 160B, 215, 1455, *Childcare Handbook 3, BOR 1.*)



Jesus said unto her, I am the Resurrection, & the Life: he that believeth in Me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: And whosoever liveth and believeth in Me shall never die. Believest thou this? (Jn.11:25,26).

1. There'll be light in the sky from that palace on high, when I come to the end of Life's road! The end of the road for us will be just the beginning! We'll reign with Jesus forever!

2. Don't ever forget the Resurrection when you're speaking of the Death.

3. Jesus attacked them, wounded their system unto death, & they killed Him in return, but He rose again to lead His tiny band of followers to ultimate victory!

4. See you in the "Fall-Up!"

5. Jesus is the only One Who ever rose from the dead Who can give you power to do the same!

6. Often the test of courage is not to die but to live.

7. If there is no way out, there is a way up.

8. Lives again our glorious King,
Where, O Death, is now thy sting?

Dying once, He all doth save,
Where thy victory, O Grave?

9. Death from this life is just graduation from this grade.

10. It is not death that man should fear, but he should fear never beginning to live.

11. When a person dies, we say he has "departed". Why not say He has "arrived"?

12. It matters little to me whether I live or die. If I die, I will be with Jesus, & if I live, Jesus will be with me.

13. A five-year old child overheard her mother say, "I lost my baby," & asked, "Mommy, how can someone be lost if you know where they are?--In Heaven!"

14. Death is the golden key that opens the palace of eternity.

15. The art of dying bravely & with honour does not need any special training save a living faith in God.--
M. Gandhi.

16. The seed dies into new life, & so does man.

17. Dust thou art, to dust returnest,
Was not spoken of the spirit.

18. You do everything else in Jesus' name, why not die in Jesus' name & let Him determine the way, the time & the place for His glory & when He feels it's time & you've finished what you came here to do!

19. You will never die like the sinners, you'll just pass on into the arms of Jesus!

20. You don't really die, you just keep on living & go straight into the presence of the Lord!

21. Living is dying daily!

22. If He doesn't take care of you, He'll take you!--And that's the best taking care of. Praise God? Don't worry about death!

23. If the thought of your eternity makes you uncomfortable, then something is wrong with your present!

24. Sleep is so much like death & dreams are so much like life in the Spirit.

25. God conceals from men the happiness of death that they may endure life.

26. What we call life is a journey to death. What we call death is the gateway to life.

27. Death is our graduation!--We've finished our schooling in this grade & we pass on to the next grade!

28. The will is powerful, it's important! If a person doesn't want to live, he'll usually die.
29. When you die, you don't wake up suddenly knowing everything--if you did, you'd be God!
30. Death is only a heartbeat away!
31. Dying will probably be the easiest thing you ever did!--Your graduation & your payoff & your promotion & your release! Free at last!
32. When you come to die for Jesus you're going to find that's the easiest thing you ever did! It was dying daily that was difficult!
33. Death is great!--It's going to be with Jesus!
34. God's principle throughout all life: Some must die that others may live!
35. God help you to keep on winning battles & greater victories, until you win the greatest & last of all!--Death!--That graduation to the Heavenly world of the hereafter with a crown of glorious eternal life with Him & the Family forever!
36. I don't have dying grace because I'm not dying yet!
37. For the Christian there's nothing bad about dying! It's your release from this Hell on Earth.
38. Death is so minimal! The Lord draws the stinger out of death so that it doesn't really hurt! "O death, where is thy sting?" (1Cor.15:55)
39. When you who love Jesus die, He's going to teleport you up to Space City to be with Him!
40. Just because you're a martyr & do not survive doesn't mean that you're defeated--in some ways you're more than a conqueror because you're a good loser!
41. The fear of doom is a part of the judgements of God on the guilty & those who deserve it, "who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage." (Heb.2:15)
42. Night, sleep & farewells in this World are all a type or foreshadowing of death.
43. Sudden death is sudden glory!
44. Death is a big event, an exciting, happy time, like getting ready to go on a trip & saying good-bye.
45. Even death is sweet with Jesus!
46. For us who love the Lord, death is a relief, release, freedom, promotion, graduation, & passing on to a better realm!
47. I've never seen any last-minute deathbed repentances, people rarely change at the last minute. People nearly always die the way they lived.
48. I'd hate to catapult myself into the presence of God or even the Death Angel by my own hand, having myself destroyed the life that God gave me.
49. Most suicides are committed through fear--people fearing something else even more than death, even more than God!
50. God has promised not to let you be cut off before your time!
51. By committing suicide you're certainly not cheating anybody but yourself out of the life that God gave you to live, & whatever way God intended for you to die!
52. God knows when & how you're supposed to die, & you'd better wait for God to make the decision & have His way, & not die at your own hand in your own stubborn wilfulness, unwilling to face something.
53. Martyrdom is a witness!--That through your death many might believe & be saved.
54. When I think of suicide, I think of people who were defeated, who gave up, who surrendered to death rather than courageously faced life!
55. If you're a Christian & love the Lord, God has appointed a time & a place for you to die when your job is done! "God will be our guide, even unto death!" (Ps.48:14)
56. You ought to trust God with your death like you trust Him with your life.
57. Suicide is surrender of the worst kind, not only surrendering to the Devil & letting him destroy you, but letting him destroy you by your own hand!
58. Suicide is such a cop-out & so unfair to other people.
59. Don't be sorry for the little child that dies!--Thank God, his suffering is over! That little child's torment & suffering & neglect & lack of love is over. He has plenty of love now with Jesus! He has plenty of beauty. He lacks for nothing in the Garden of God, the Eden of Heaven! Weep not for him.
60. The only victory of the grave is spiritual death, being lost, but with us this kind of death has no power & no sting! Jesus has taken the sting out of death & the power away from the grave, & we'll get the final victory over it in the Resurrection!
61. Your death will be a victory over the grave & a victory over sin & a victory over the Devil!--A glorious victory & a glorious entry into the heavenlies!
62. Earth recedes, Heaven opens! This is my coronation day!

63. That's the way to die: Even if the dogs are nipping at your heels & the rocks are raining, die victorious with your eyes on Jesus, entering the heavenlies, your spirit rising to your reward while your body falls to the grave!

64. He that lives to live forever never fears dying.

65. Death is not a period, but a comma in the story of life.

66. Although the Devil may get to fulfill the law to execute us and take our life physically, the moment we as Christians die we're instantly freed spiritually.

67. You'll lose your life one way or the other, so you might as well die for something as to live for nothing!

68. If you live in God's Golden Gates of Faith you can survive anything--even death!

69. It's better to die for something than to live--and die--for nothing!

70. From the blood of the martyrs and the blood of the witnesses there springs new life and new lives to live for God.

71. The blood of the martyrs is the seed of the Church.

72. God bless and keep you now! But if He doesn't, die for Him and He'll keep you forever!

73. You should only fear to die until you have done something that will always live.

74. It often requires more courage to suffer than to die.

75. Death only frees you when you're serving Jesus.

76. It's wonderful to live on the brink of death, it keeps you so close to God.

77. We go to the grave of a friend, saying, "A man is dead." But angels throng about him saying, "A man is born."

78. That little baby you lost, that little child you lost, that mate you lost, that loved one you lost, you've only lost for a little while, only a little while. They've gone to be with Jesus! They're with Him now in Heaven for a little while, & then we're going to go to be with them, reunited with them at that wonderful Marriage Supper of the Lamb, at that beautiful feast of all the loved ones of the Lord & our departed loved ones & departed Saints--children, mothers, fathers, brothers, sisters all together once again with Jesus, to come down again to this Earth to rule & reign here in a beautiful Heavenly Garden of Eden on this Earth, the Garden of God, forever.

79. When I go, I want you to celebrate my life, not mourn my death.

80. You need to have faith & trust God for the way you live and the way you die, for death as well as life!

81. Our enemies can only kill the body, and after that there's no more that they can do; they thus release our spirits at last into the glorious spiritual Kingdom of God!

82. Death is great, it is going to be with Jesus! We should be happy when one of our own goes to be with the Lord, released from this stinking flesh, so heavy to lug around! The flesh is heavy, the flesh is tired, the flesh feels pain. If I'm unselfish I should be rejoicing for them, thanking God they're with Him & their troubles are over, in a place where there's no more crying, no more pain, no more sorrow, nothing but eternal happiness. So why shouldn't I be happy too?

83. You don't have to be fearful of going soon from this Earth & this place that you know & the folks that have been good to you & have cared for you & have loved you, because where you're going, they're going to be even better to you & they're going to even love you more & care more for you, & you already have lots of friends & Family there!

84. Why will ye call it "Death's dark night?"--Death is the entrance into light!

85. Death is but the sunrise of another World.

86. We are so selfish about death. We count our grief far more than we consider their relief.

87. The voice of death is but the voice of the Master saying to you, "Suffer the little children to come unto Me, & forbid them not; for of such is the Kingdom of Heaven".

(See also No.628, 679, 680, 714, 850, 852, 912, 959, 972, 993, 1234, 1262, 1264, 1284, 1421, 1476, 1570.)

88. GEN.25:8 Then Abraham gave up the ghost, and died in a good old age, an old man, and full of years; and was gathered to his people.

89. 2KI.22:20 Behold therefore, I will gather thee unto thy fathers, and thou shalt be gathered into thy grave in peace; and thine eyes shall not see all the evil which I will bring upon this place.

90. JOB.3:17 There the wicked cease from troubling; and there the weary be at rest.

91. PSA.23:4 Yea, though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil: for Thou art with me; Thy rod and Thy staff they comfort me.

92. PSA.31:5 Into Thine hand I commit my spirit: Thou hast redeemed me, O Lord God of truth.

93. PSA.37:37 Mark the perfect man, and behold the upright: for the end of that man is peace.

94. PSA.48:14 For this God is our God for ever and ever: He will be our guide even unto death.

95. PSA.49:15 But God will redeem my soul from the power of the grave: for He shall receive me. Selah.

96. PSA.73:24 Thou shalt guide me with Thy counsel, and afterward receive me to glory.

97. PSA.103:15,16 As for man, his days are as grass: as a flower of the field, so he flourisheth. For the wind passeth over, and it is gone; and the place thereof shall know it no more.

98. PSA.116:15 Precious in the sight of the Lord is the death of His saints.

99. PRO.12:28 In the way of righteousness is life; and in the pathway thereof there is no death.

100. PRO.14:32 The righteous hath hope in his death.

101. ECC.3:2a A time to be born, and a time to die.

102. ECC.7:1 A good name is better than precious ointment; and the day of death than the day of one's birth.

103. ECC.8:8a There is no man that hath power over the spirit to retain the spirit; neither hath he power in the day of death.

104. ECC.12:7 Then shall the dust return to the Earth as it was: and the spirit shall return unto God Who gave it.

105. ISA.25:8 He will swallow up death in victory; and the Lord God will wipe away tears from off all faces; and the rebuke of His people shall He take away from off all the Earth: for the Lord hath spoken it.

106. ISA.57:1 The righteous perisheth, and no man layeth it to heart: and merciful men are taken away, none considering that the righteous is taken away from the evil to come.

107. MAT.22:30-32 For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels of God in Heaven. But as touching the resurrection of the dead, have ye not read that which was spoken unto you by God, saying, I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob? God is not the God of the dead, but of the living.

108. MAT.27:52,53 And the graves were opened; and many bodies of the saints which slept arose, And came out of the graves after His resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many.

109. LUK.16:22 The beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom.

110. LUK.23:43 And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To day shalt thou be with Me in Paradise.

111. JOH.2:19 Jesus answered and said unto them, Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up.

112. JOH.5:25 Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live.

113. JOH.6:47 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on Me hath everlasting life.

114. JOH.8:51 Verily, verily, I say unto you, If a man keep My saying, he shall never see death.

115. JOH. 11:25,26 Jesus said unto her, I am the Resurrection, and the Life: he that believeth in Me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: And whosoever liveth and believeth in Me shall never die. Believest thou this?

116. ACT.7:59 They stoned Stephen, calling upon God, and saying, Lord Jesus, receive my spirit.

117. ROM.14:8 For whether we live, we live unto the Lord; and whether we die, we die unto the Lord: whether we live therefore, or die, we are the Lord's.

118. 1CO.15:26 The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death.

119. 1CO.15:42-44 So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption; it is raised in incorruption: It is sown in dishonour; it is raised in glory: it is sown in weakness; it is raised in power: It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body.

120. 1CO.15:51,52 Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.

121. 1CO.15:54b,55 Death is swallowed up in victory. O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory?

122. 2CO.1:9,10 But we had the sentence of death in ourselves, that we should not trust in ourselves, but in God which raiseth the dead: Who delivered us from so great a death, and doth deliver: in Whom we trust that He will yet deliver us.

123. 2CO.4:11,12 For we which live are alway delivered unto death for Jesus' sake, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our mortal flesh. So then death worketh in us, but life in you.

124. 2CO.5:1 For we know that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, an house not made with hands, eternal in the Heavens.

125. 2CO.5:8 We are confident, I say, and willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord.

126. EPH.5:14 Wherefore he saith, Awake thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead, and Christ shall give thee light.

127. PHI.1:21 For to me to live is Christ, and to die is gain.

128. 1TH.4:13,14 But I would not have you to be ignorant, brethren, concerning them which are asleep, that ye sorrow not, even as others which have no hope. For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so them also which sleep in Jesus will God bring with Him.

129. 1TH.5:9,10 For God hath not appointed us to wrath, but to obtain Salvation by our Lord Jesus Christ, Who died for us, that, whether we wake or sleep, we should live together with Him.

130. 2TI.1:10 But is now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ, Who hath abolished death, and hath brought life and immortality to light through the Gospel.

131. HEB.2:14,15 Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, He also Himself likewise took part of the same; that through death He might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the Devil; And deliver them who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage.

132. REV.1:18 I am He that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; and have the keys of Hell and of death.

133. REV.11:11 And after three days and an half the Spirit of life from God entered into them, and they stood upon their feet; and great fear fell upon them which saw them.

134. REV.14:13 And I heard a voice from Heaven saying unto me, Write, Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord from henceforth: Yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labours; and their works do follow them.

135. REV.20:14 And Death and Hell were cast into the Lake of Fire. This is the Second Death.

(See also 2CO.5:1,4,8; PHI.1:20,21,23,24; 1TH.4:13-18.)

22. DEVIL'S DEVICES --{page 191}--



Lest Satan should get an advantage of us: for we are not ignorant of his devices (2Cor.2:11).

1. If you don't recognise the Enemy's work, how are you going to get the victory over it?
2. The Devil doesn't always try to scare you to death, he quite often tries to charm you to death.
3. The Devil can cite Scriptures for his purpose.
4. Watch out for hypnotism!--It can bring on demon-possession.
5. "Where wickedness doth abound, grace doth much more abound"--and it also works the other way: If grace is abounding, the Devil is working, too!
6. If the Devil can't totally defeat you, he'll try to keep you from winning a complete victory.
7. If the Devil can't kill you any other way, he tries to scare you to death.
8. A craving for sweets is like a craving for drugs or drink or gambling.--It's something the Devil knows can absolutely destroy you!
9. Game-playing, such as chess & cards, is as addictive as gambling & alcohol & used as a tool of the Devil to waste time!
10. The Devil's favourite tool with Christians is discouragement.
11. Idleness is the Devil's workshop.
12. The business of the Devil is to try to bring about condemnation.

13. If there is anything the Devil uses to slow down the Words of God, it's problem people!
14. Where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty, & where there is liberty the Devil always tries to take advantage of it.
15. One of the Enemy's wiles is "Wait awhile."
16. The Devil is satanically intellectual. He is a god of knowledge.
17. One of the Devil's diabolical delusions with which he deceives you is: To raise questions about minor issues to get your mind off the major ones & distract your attention from the things you should be concerned about, so that you become busy with a little here & a little there till the important is gone!
18. The Devil's a great one to quote Scriptures. He can almost quote more Scripture than anybody.
19. If the Devil can't persuade you not to serve God, then he tries to get you so weighted down with things, problems & time, energy & money wasters that you can't even move.
20. The Devil is like the strip-teaser: He offers you everything, but never really delivers.
21. The Devil's plan is to accuse you of the things he himself is actually guilty of.
22. The Devil can never win except by default. The only way he can get the victory is if he can persuade you to quit.
23. If the Devil can get you to agree on even a short cease-fire, he has time to bring up reinforcements, encircle you, infiltrate you with his lies & spies, & try to trap you completely. You can't do business with the Enemy even for a moment--he's out to win!
24. Most of the time jealousy exaggerates things so much that they seem worse than they really are. That's the Devil's business--to blow things up as big as a mountain.
25. The Devil's business is contradicting the Lord.
26. No wonder Satan tried to offer Jesus the World--that was his domain.
27. The biggest thing the Devil's trying to do is just keep you from being a good sample to win others, because he knows he's in danger of losing others out of his clutches because of you!
28. A lot of people who worship themselves, literally are worshipping the Devil!
29. People who worship their minds are worshipping themselves, & if they're worshipping themselves, they're literally worshipping the god of this World, the Devil.
30. The religion of the Devil from the very beginning was to get people to worship themselves instead of God.
31. The Devil is always threatening & breathing out slaughters, but seldom, if ever, accomplishing them.
32. When the leader is away, the Devil always tries to slip in!
33. There's nothing that God has that the Devil doesn't try to imitate!
34. Watch your thoughts!--They are real things!
35. The Devil is both the Prosecuting Attorney & the Executioner, a part of the whole judgement process of God's justice!
36. The Devil really tries to put a muzzle on those who would attempt to expose him & would try to warn people of his dirty work.
37. Jesus didn't talk very much about the works of the Devil, but He did warn people a lot about them.
38. The Devil always accuses God's Saints of the very things which he himself is doing & of which his own people are guilty!
39. "Divide & conquer!" is the Devil's own slogan!
40. There's a difference between the conviction of the Holy Spirit & the accusations of the Enemy.
41. Not all doors are of the Lord. Some of them can be tricks of the Devil, decoys, blind alleys, red herrings, side tracks & downright disasters!
42. Everything the Devil offers is a counterfeit substitute, a fake & a phoney! But ours is the real thing & forever!
43. The main purpose of the Enemy's words is to cause fear--to weaken your work for the Lord & upset you in every way.
44. The Devil was ordained to see if he could get you to not believe God.
45. The Devil will always try to put in a partial half-truth to give credence to his lie.
46. The Devil is always threatening & breathing out slaughter & trying to bluff you out or merely persuade you to surrender, because he cannot actually defeat you unless you give up & give in & let him have it.
47. Since the Devil can't prove his own lies, he does his damndest to try to disprove the Truth!
48. Even if the government doesn't know where you are, the Devil knows, & he's always ready to stir up trouble, so watch out!

49. The Devil attacks us first in our thoughts: That's the door through which he finds entrance. But thank God you can slam that door shut with Scriptures, as Jesus did!

50. Any hold Satan has is only as a usurper. He tries to hold onto that which is not rightfully his.

51. It is impossible for the Devil to win over you, unless you give in to him.

52. The Devil is a liar & is usually bluffing.

53. The Devil can't stand the Word, nor the Name of Jesus.

54. The first purpose of the Devil is to condemn.

55. The Devil will tempt you to sin, then accuse you for sinning.

56. The Devil tries to drown out the voice of the Spirit when you're embroiled in the material!

57. A lot of times the reason why you have to fight the Devil so much is because you're fighting God & the Truth.

58. If the Devil can just scare you out before you begin, then you'll never accomplish what God wants you to do.

59. The Devil can really tell you a lot of horrible truth about yourself, not to speak of the terrible lies he tells you.

60. Part of what the Devil says is always true, because he couldn't get you to believe his lies unless he told you some truth mixed with it, which would deceive you into thinking his lies were true too!

61. Procrastination is the Devil's own tool to get people to put things off until later.

62. Procrastination is one of the Devil's cleverest weapons--if he knows he can't stop you, he tries to delay you.

63. If the Devil can't stop you, he tries to distract you!

64. We're not condemned for victories won,
But all the things we haven't done.

65. The Devil uses terrorism too: His whole idea in the World is to try to frighten people into letting him have his way!

66. The worship of riches of this life is Devil worship.

67. The Devil won't let you get away with anything, he's the accuser of the Saints! The minute you step out of line, he'll start nippin' at your heels & giving you all kinds of trouble!

68. There's seldom anything good in a nightmare & it usually has no significant meaning or lesson or interpretation that is valuable, other than to merely try to frighten you in your sleep & scare you in your slumber, & is therefore most apt to be from the Enemy, just to worry you & upset you & startle you!

69. If the Devil can't defeat you, he sure can annoy you. If he can't stop you, then he tries to slow you down.

70. The first big lie the Devil told Adam & Eve was that God was a liar!

71. The Devil always tries to reverse things, & the minute God says anything the Devil immediately tries to contradict it!

72. The Devil is a divider & a confuser!

73. When you're discouraged, the Devil makes you mad at the Truth because he's about to be defeated by it.

74. The Devil can't do a damn thing without God's permission. Sometimes God even lets the Enemy bother us a little bit, just to keep us on our toes.

75. The Enemy attacks now & then just to help us appreciate our blessings.

76. The Devil makes his worst attack, not on your good, but on your lack.

77. If the Devil can't discourage you in any other way, he tries to belittle you & belittle what you're doing.

78. The Devil hasn't got much to offer but lies & deceits & counterfeits & imitations & disillusionments, disappointments, discouragements, doubts, fears, confusions & monotonous frustration & final destruction & total death!

79. Every one we win is a threat to hundreds of others of the Devil's, so he's out to stop each one the best he can.

80. The Devil is not a creator, he's only an imitator & destroyer. He's conjuring up his fake building of papier mâché on a sandy foundation.

81. It's a lot easier for the Devil to hide in a crowd.

82. If the Devil cannot attack you, he will even try to attack your little ones, which is why you really have to pray over your children, lay hands on them & dedicate them to the Lord.

83. Look at that word "Devil", will you? Chop off his head, "d", & you've still got "evil"; chop off the "e" & it's "vile"; chop off the "v" & he's "ill"; & chop off the "i" & he's "l"!--Hell!

84. When you begin admiring the Devil's work then it's a form of worship.

85. The Scripture says we're not to be unaware of the Devil's devices. In other words, we are to beware of his devices. But we're not to get so fascinated by studying how he works that it becomes a form of morbid curiosity, a fascination for evil!

86. If the Devil always came around with hooves & horns & a long tail & a pitch fork in his hand, he wouldn't be half as dangerous as the way he usually comes around, in the form of some beautiful woman or some handsome man or some smooth-tongued teacher or preacher or even Family Member!

87. The Enemy is always on the job, always watching & ready to give us a shove & cause us to stumble & fall if we're not watching & praying & looking & holding onto the Lord!

88. A Christian oppressed by the Devil is like a prisoner of war held by enemy forces.

89. There's a difference between the conviction of the Holy Spirit & the accusations of the Enemy. You are not convicted of a sin until the Judge, God, has made a decision. But frequently the Enemy will come & accuse you of sins or things which aren't even sins, & condemn you for it.

90. The word "luck" definitely comes from its god, Lucifer! We don't need luck, the blessings of the Devil for loyalty to him, Lucifer.

91. Evil spirits are now getting to the point with these electronic machines etc. particularly since they're very sensitive to the electric impulses etc., where the demons can fritz up the works & cause trouble, so that if they can't attack us they try to attack our machines.

92. As soon as God makes a Promise, the Devil tries to make it seem a lie.

93. When people pray against us or even are wishing against one of the Lord's children, it's cursing.

94. To invite Satan is easy, to dismiss him is hard.

(See also No.K, 33, 71, 99, 168, 303, 664, 666, 857, 947, 948, 961, 980, 999, 1130, 1246, 1375, 1376, 1379, 1403, 1409, 1414, 1415, 1439, Gen Series.)

23. DILIGENCE IN BUSINESS --{page 199}--



Seest thou a man diligent in his business? He shall stand before kings; he shall not stand before mean men (Pro.22:29).

1. The one thing that God says that His workers need above all is to be found faithful.
2. Only those who have the patience to do simple things accurately will acquire the skill to do difficult things correctly.
3. The conduct of successful business merely consists in doing things in a very simple way, doing them regularly, & never neglecting to do them.
4. If you want something done, ask a busy man to do it, for only a great and busy man recognises the importance of getting things done now!
5. Don't be late -- God's appointments cannot wait!
6. He also that is slothful in his work is brother to him that is a great waster. Pro.18:9
7. First do more than you are paid for before expecting to be paid for more than you do.
8. Everyone who got where he is had to begin where he was.
9. Often it is easier to do a good job than to explain why you didn't.
10. Efficiency: Making each member of the office staff toe the line. Regimentation: When it's your toe.

11. The good is often the enemy of the best.
12. Waste not, want not.
13. When business is good it pays to advertise, when business is bad you've got to advertise.
14. Unfaithfulness in the keeping of an appointment is an act of clear dishonesty. Stealing his time is worse than stealing his money!
15. Whatever is worth doing at all is worth doing well.
16. Good, better, best, never let it rest. Until your good is better & your better is best.
17. You should not produce one scrap of paper with any kind of writing, charting, or even a mark of any kind on it without dating it, locating it, and signing it.
18. It's not what you've got that determines the outcome, it's what you do with what you've got!
19. God Himself keeps book & logs--even the hairs on your head are numbered!
20. Don't settle for anything less than the best!
21. When we can't trust you with bigger things, we keep pushing you down the line hoping you'll be faithful with the smaller things.
22. Initiative is doing the right thing at the right time without being told.
23. It's better to catch a problem before it gets too serious, rather than wait 'til everything falls apart.
24. God is sick and tired of giving you things you don't take care of!
25. If I had the slightest doubt about it or hesitancy about any kind of a deal at all, let me tell you, I wouldn't sign one jot or one tittle on a contract.
26. We're investors, & we're literally investing in souls, & we want to get the best soul dividends that we can get, & not just pour funds & lives down some "black hole" that gobbles up everything with nothing to show for it!
27. We're a growing group but without much money, so let's put it where it really counts! Let's get our money's worth! Let's make every penny count!--Especially every precious priceless life!
28. What's wilfully wasted will be wilfully wanted!
29. Salvation is our business!--We even save paper and postage stamps!
30. What a great fire a little flame kindleth, but you can also freeze to death for the lack of a match.
31. If you put something off until everything else is done, it will never get done, because everything else is never done! You have to give everything a certain priority.
32. We're either going to do this job right or we're not going to do it at all.
33. What did you do this past week that is going to last forever?
34. If you'll just take time to put it away where it belongs, you'll save a lot of time looking for it later! A place for everything, & everything in its place!
35. We ought to run this like an efficient business for God! He says to "Be diligent in business"--why should we be less diligent & less efficient than the World is?
36. Do everything you can, and expect God to do the rest.
37. The Church is filled with willing people--some willing to work & others willing to let them.
38. A short cut is often a wrong cut.
39. Good beginnings make good endings.
40. Well begun is half done.
41. Why is there never enough time to do it right, but always enough time to do it over?
42. You gotta have a glory in the thing you do!
43. To sit down and write takes self-discipline, research and hard work.
44. If you are not willing to finish it, don't start it!
45. Make it a habit to do the unpleasant job first. Don't paralyse present activity by letting past work hang over your head.
46. No matter what kind of a mess you found the place in, you are now the steward, and it's your responsibility to care for it, maintain it, repair it, and then leave it in better shape than before!
47. A stitch in time saves nine!
48. Blessed is the man who is too busy to worry in the daytime & too sleepy to worry at night.
49. If you don't take an inventory once in awhile, you're apt to go out of business.
50. Handle your equipment gently & lovingly as you would a woman & she'll love you forever & last a long time!
51. One of the most important witnesses a Christian can have is paying his bills!--& on time!
52. Keeping your word & fulfilling vows to be in a certain place at a certain time is a part of your good witness & testimony.

53. Plan your work--work your plan.
54. Next to knowing all about your own business, the best thing is to know all about the other fellow's.
55. Lend only what you can afford to give away.
56. When you have a number of disagreeable duties to perform, always do the most disagreeable first.
57. Wilful waste brings woeful want
And you may live to pay.
How I wish I had that crust
That once I threw away.
58. When in doubt, ask.
59. If you run after two hares you will catch neither.
60. If you take care of God's business, He'll take care of yours!
61. If things are a little short & income's a little down, that shows we've got to get up & move & start fighting & get busier & expand & do more!--Not less!
62. One reason we have survived this long is because I don't take anything for granted! I take a good look at it every time & ask myself, "Is it worth it?"
63. Our enemies have tried to put us out of business lying about us, but we're still here! And I'm sure it's because of the Lord & His mercy & our prayers & our faithfulness to be diligent & obey, & also to watch & pray & keep a watchful eye on what's happening & what's going on & to see that we don't spend money we haven't got or use personnel on things we don't need or have stats that aren't so & Members who aren't there!
64. I shouldn't have to be the only idea man in this outfit! You guys ought to be able to come up with a few smart brainstorms of how to save money, personnel, time & labour! Go over your operation with a fine-tooth comb & try to figure out ways you can do without things.
65. God help us to think it through, survey & count the cost, & to analyse it & check it!
66. Lord, help us & give us wisdom, guidance & inspiration! Make us a little bit smarter, Lord, so that You don't have to say of us that the children of this World are wiser than the children of Light! (Lk.16:8.) Help us to think things through & analyse things & weigh things & count the cost & figure out how to save money & not have to wait till we don't have it to figure out how to save it, in Jesus' name. Do give us divine guidance, wisdom, skill & real concern for Thy work so that we will only do what needs to be done.
67. You guys ought to have ideas & make suggestions & ask questions--don't just accept it because that's the way it's always been.
68. Don't be afraid to ask why!--Why are we doing this? Why are we doing it that way? why do we have to do this?
69. We cannot afford just to support people because we like'm, not even because we love'm or want'm or think we need'm. We can only afford to support those now that we have to have & cannot do without! I think we'll survive, but the Lord expects us to trim the fat & do what we can to help!
70. There's no company in the World that I know that doesn't let off its labourers in a time of stress & let go the workers when they can't pay the bill.
71. Like any business, you've got to get set up & ready for business before you're going to get any!--When you get it, you've got to be ready for it!
72. Nobody should handle more than they're supposed to, more than they're capable of, & devote any more time & attention to things they don't have to do instead of what they have to do.
73. I'm not interested in reading false stats, padded accounts & inflated figures! That's just so much smoke & no fire!
74. The Lord talks about unprofitable servants, & we want to get rid of them like He did.
75. If you don't know what the question is, you can't very well come up with the answer!
76. I'm a little aggravated at people who let things roll on without really getting in there & thinking & analysing & figuring out how to save time, money, work, personnel, postage & everything!
77. You need to be familiar with stats & figures--accurate! When you go to a conference you need to know the answers to things that people are going to want to know.
78. Make it specific, brief, to the point & as simple as you possibly can! Try not to make it wordy. Try to spell it out very simply. And why don't you number it?--The first thing you do, number one, the second thing you do, number two, etc.
79. Stats don't mean anything unless you analyse them & interpret them & find out what they mean.
80. I don't think I would sign a contract to give the producer exclusive rights so that it would prohibit the use of the shows or music anywhere else.

81. God is interested in details & statistics! He even says that the very hairs of your head are numbered & not one sparrow falls to the ground but what your Heavenly Father knoweth it! Also someday you will have to give an account for every idle word & for all the deeds done in the body & every man shall be judged according to his works--His Word says so!

82. Statistics are extremely important & vitally essential to diagnosing the condition of each Home. If a Home is in good health, its statistics will likely show it, but if it's ailing, then they can also show that.

83. The purpose of statistical reports is to encourage all of us by being able to see how much we're accomplishing through these actual figures & also to help us detect any trouble spots, problems, or areas that need help, & correct our mistakes.

84. "Even as all things are ordered in every kingdom & all ministries fall in to their place, so shall it also be in My Kingdom under My King David!"

85. We've got to economise, & to economise we've got to centralise! A centralised government--a dictatorship really--is far more efficient & economical than all this spread-out stuff & everybody on their own & "every man to his own tent" & every man getting his own cheque & everybody working on their own independently & not having to answer to anybody.

86. Just do what has to be done today & put all the rest off until tomorrow or next week or next month or next year. And if none of the rest ever gets done, I figure God didn't intend for it to get done.

87. Don't blame it on God if you loafed around & goofed off for a week & then try to do a week's work in one day, that's not God's fault, that's your own. If you're overburdened or the yoke is too hard it's your own fault or somebody else's fault, not God's.

88. Every industry has what they call 'efficiency experts' & "time study" men who hang over the shoulders of the workers to figure out what they're doing & what they're not doing & what they don't need to do & what they do need to do, & how they could do it easier, cheaper & faster.

89. I would much rather see your work done on a nice easy leisurely, take-your-time daily basis than a last-minute cramming rush at the end of the week or month.

90. No matter how hard you work, if you do lousy, poor, pitiful, botched up work, all your hard work's in vain.

91. In some areas we need more emphasis & in other areas we need to let up a little. It's just like any war: Where the battle's hot you've got to put in the most troops to give it all you've got, & where you've pretty well got the situation in hand you can kind of let up a little.

92. I'm not going to go rocking along, status quo, laissez-faire, business as usual just because we used to do it & we don't want to have to admit we made a mistake.

93. Sometimes we almost go broke financially, but that's not what we're most worried about. We're most worried about going broke fruit-wise, soul-wise, & whether we're getting the job done & preaching the Gospel & winning souls!

94. There's nothing like the Lord putting a squeeze on you financially to make you pay attention & get you on the ball, make you stick your nose into everybody's business to find out what they're actually doing & what they aren't doing & whether it's paying or not & whether it's worth it or not!

95. The Lord will always supply all that we need, & if He doesn't, it's because we're spending more than we need to spend on something that's not paying.

96. Sometimes the Lord allows you to explore the method & find out what works & what doesn't work & what's best & what isn't so that you won't have any doubt about it! Otherwise you never would've believed it if you hadn't tried it.

97. If the profits are so slim in any business venture that it's hardly worth what you're investing, you get out of that one & you try to invest where the profits are the highest! You put your money where it gives the best dividends & the most results & the highest profit, & you trim off the failing & unprofitable businesses & the ones that are a drag. That's what we're doing, only we figure our profits in souls!--In Prophets!--The kind that preach the Gospel!

98. Sometimes the Lord puts the squeeze on you for a good reason, to make you get rid of the junk you don't need that's just costing money & not paying!

99. Learn how to be more efficient, more effective, more fruitful, more profitable, more economical!

100. Even our mistakes are not unprofitable as long as we learn by them! It's this business of "ever learning & never coming to a knowledge" that is frustrating! (2Ti.3:7)--Never waking up to find out how bad off you are!

101. We should only look back to be thankful for how much progress we've made & how far we've come by comparing how far behind we were a year or more ago.

102. Help us not to cry over yesterday or spilt milk, but to thank the Lord for all the milk that He's saved in spite of some losses.

103. We're in a hurry! We have a job to do & we've got very little time left to do it in!

104. In writing business letters try to make them short & sweet & simple. The person reading it is just as thick-headed as you are & it's just as hard for them to grasp what you've been talking about as it has been for you!

105. If you'd spend a little more time praying you'd have to spend a hell of a lot less time working to get things done!

106. Start each day by making a daily list of things to do & delegate. Make this practice as habitual as brushing your teeth or having the morning cup of coffee. Write down all the things you want to accomplish that day & rank them in order of importance, & then do your top-priority jobs first!

107. You cannot think, concentrate, pray & hear the voice of God on how to answer the mail, compose thoughts, dictate phrases & think on your feet, so to speak, unless you can get alone & away from the confusion, noise, disturbances & interruptions.

108. Think with a pencil or pen in your hand & write down ideas as they come & instructions as you get them. A short pencil is better than a long memory!

109. The Lord loves to give you the answer. He knows exactly what to do & how to do it, so why don't you ask Him instead of going to all the trouble of trying to figure it out yourself?

110. Stats are a part of our communication, absolutely essential & necessary for our well-being. They are our pulse-taking & temperature-taking of the body to know exactly its health & its physical functions.

111. It's not good to leave the whole thing up to one man, that's why you should always be training somebody to do your job, who can also double-check on you to make sure they catch any mistakes.

112. A stitch in time saves nine.

113. Better a fence at the top of the cliff than a hospital at the bottom!

114. It's better to have it & not need it than to need it & not have it.

115. Better safe than sorry!

116. If you can't do your job, then you've got to find a substitute to do it.

117. Be sure you're right, then go ahead! But if you're not sure you're right, you'd better not go at all.-- You'd better drag your feet & go slow until you find out for sure what is right.

(See also No. 22, 212, 283A, 301A, 667, 682, 701, 1028.)

118. 1KI.11:28 And the man Jeroboam was a mighty man of valour: and Solomon seeing the young man that he was industrious, he made him ruler over all the charge of the house of Joseph.

119. 1KI.20:40a And as thy servant was busy here and there, he was gone.

120. PRO.6:6-8 Go to the ant, thou sluggard; consider her ways, and be wise: Which having no guide, overseer, or ruler, Provideth her meat in the summer, and gathereth her food in the harvest.

121. PRO.10:4 He becometh poor that dealeth with a slack hand: but the hand of the diligent maketh rich.

122. PRO. 12:22 They that deal truly are His delight.

123. PRO. 13:4 The soul of the sluggard desireth, and hath nothing: but the soul of the diligent shall be made fat.

124. PRO.18:9 He also that is slothful in his work is brother to him that is a great waster.

125. PRO.18:16 A man's gift maketh room for him, and bringeth him before great men.

126. PRO.19:15 Slothfulness casteth into a deep sleep; and an idle soul shall suffer hunger.

127. PRO.19:24 A slothful man hideth his hand in his bosom, and will not so much as bring it to his mouth again.

128. PRO.20:4 The sluggard will not plow by reason of the cold; therefore shall he beg in harvest, and have nothing.

129. PRO.20:13 Love not sleep, lest thou come to poverty; open thine eyes, and thou shalt be satisfied with bread.

130. PRO.22:29 Seest thou a man diligent in his business? He shall stand before kings; he shall not stand before mean men.

131. PRO. 31:27 She looketh well to the ways of her household, and eateth not the bread of idleness.

132. ECC.10:18 By much slothfulness the building decayeth; and through idleness of the hands the house droppeth through.

133. LUK.16:8 And the Lord commended the unjust steward, because he had done wisely: for the children of this World are in their generation wiser than the children of light.

134. ROM.12:11 Not slothful in business; fervent in spirit; serving the Lord.
 135. 1CO.4:2 Moreover it is required in stewards, that a man be found faithful.
 136. 1TH.5:6 Therefore let us not sleep, as do others; but let us watch and be sober.
 137. HEB.6:12 That ye be not slothful, but followers of them who through faith and patience inherit the promises.
 138. HEB.13:16 But to do good and to communicate forget not: for with such sacrifices God is well pleased.

24. DISCIPLESHIP --{page 211}--



Then said Jesus unto His disciples, If any man will come after Me, let him deny himself, & take up his cross & follow Me (Mt.16:24).

1. A disciple forsakes everything, walks with Jesus, follows Jesus and lives with Jesus! This is the difference between mere Christians and disciples.
2. Halfway, half-hearted, half-baked disciples make God sick at His stomach!
3. If you were arrested for being a Christian, would there be enough evidence to convict you?
4. A disciple is a mind through which Christ thinks
 A heart through which Christ loves
 A voice through which Christ speaks
 A hand through which Christ helps.
5. There is no discharge in this war--only promotion!
6. You cannot serve two masters. (Mt.6:24)
7. I only regret that I have but one life to give for my Lord.
8. What do you hear on the mountain?--Things that are going to echo around the World! What do you hear on the mountain?--Whispers that are going to change the course of history!
9. Loyalty is the prime requisite in any man's army.
10. God wants strong soldiers to win the lost & save the World!--He wants wildly willing working witnesses to die daily for Jesus & others!
11. When you join the army you are expected to stick to the army's rules, whether you like them or not.
12. The one thing the Lord will not tolerate in His Army is desertion.
13. You are God's expendables!--Created to burn out on His altar of sacrifice--made to wear out as His tools of design--to die, that others may live.
14. You can only offer others an invitation to come & die with you--to die to the flesh that they may live in the Spirit!
15. By the time we've had a new disciple in our ranks for three months, he ought to be able to stand on his own.
16. If the Devil can't keep you from being a Christian, he'll try to keep you from being a revolutionary Christian!
17. God never specialises in numbers!--He likes quality!
18. It's not numbers that count, but the quality and devotion of your disciples to the Lord and lost souls.
19. Our primary requisites for membership: Salvation, fellowship, litnessing or witnessing.

20. Don't jeopardise the whole army for one risky soldier!
21. There are many concentric circles and degrees of discipleship which must be recognised and appreciated and used.
22. Many many were called but very very few were chosen, because very few chose to follow His way.(Mt.22:14)
23. When you decide to serve God full time, all Hell breaks loose!
24. We cannot risk the whole Army for one soldier's personal problems!
25. Holy Ghost power means more Disciples and less trouble with the ones you have!
26. Once you have chosen God & His way, He refuses to take second place to anything or anybody, & will not let you put any other gods before Him--not your old job nor your old boss nor even your old family & friends.
27. The father who stuck by the business & the rest of the family, vanished into obscurity & oblivion, whereas those stinking filthy fishermen sons of his wandered off with a perfect Stranger, & made history that has helped save millions of souls for Eternity!
28. For us it's quality, not quantity; purity, not popularity; autonomy, not numbers; power, not population; leaders, not just sheep, disciples, not just church members; soldiers, not just civilians!
29. God wants you to capture leaders!--People who are already leaders!
30. You know Jesus better now than the disciples did then!--Because He's in you now, He was only with them then!(Jn.14:17)
31. The only ones you can really trust are those who have their eyes on the Lord.
32. You are the cadre, the officers and the leaders of this last great spiritual Revolution.--And that requires 100% dedication!--Do or die!
33. We are genuine officers' training schools preparing a cadre for World leadership!
34. Discipleship will only cost you your old life, which we'll replace with a new one of total joy and happiness!
35. If you don't consider this your Family & this your Home, you are not one of us & you ought to go back to your system family & home where you belong.
36. We cannot do a good job loving You, Lord, & loving others & serving them unless we "hate" our system folks & Worldly home & everything that they stand for, by comparison with the way we love You, Lord. Of course we love them, Lord, of course we even love our enemies, Lord, we love them for Thy glory & for Thy sake, we love their souls & we want to see them saved. But we hate the way they are now, Lord, we'd like to change them, we'd like to make them like us. Then You could trust us with loving them. But Lord, if they don't love us & they don't love You that much, Lord, we cannot but hate them. How can we love those that hate Thee?
37. We are God's special troops who are willing to give up anything, do anything, share anything for Jesus. The others are the regular army of Jesus Christ & they love Jesus a little bit, they believe in Jesus a little bit, & that's all you need to go to Heaven. But for us that's not enough!--It's not sufficient. For us it's necessary to serve Jesus Christ all the time with all our heart & all our mind!
38. Jesus offers you, His disciple, a better life, a better job, in a better place with a better Boss for a better Family and greater rewards!
39. You take the Mountain & you'll leave the multitudes behind. Only His disciples came unto Him--they were the ones who followed Jesus all the way! (Mt.5:1,2)

(See also No. B, F, S, 34, 42, 140, 148, 153, 203, 225, 242, 251, 314A, 328B, 334A, 542, 551, 641, 703, 756, 960, 1033, 1068.)

40. PSA.4:3 But know that the Lord hath set apart him that is Godly for Himself: the Lord will hear when I call unto Him.
41. MAT.4:19,20 And He saith unto them, Follow Me, and I will make you fishers of men. And they straightway left their nets, and followed Him.
42. MAT.10:36-38 And a man's foes shall be they of his own household. He that loveth father or mother more than Me is not worthy of Me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than Me is not worthy of Me. And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after Me, is not worthy of Me.
43. MAT.12:48-50 He answered and said unto him that told Him, Who is My mother? and who are My brethren? And He stretched forth His hand toward His disciples, and said, Behold My mother and My brethren! For whosoever shall do the will of My Father which is in Heaven, the same is My brother, and sister, and mother.
44. MAT.22:14 For many are called, but few are chosen.
45. MAR.4:34b ...when they were alone, He expounded all things to His disciples.

46. MAR.10:21 Then Jesus beholding him loved him, and said unto him, One thing thou lackest: go thy way, sell whatsoever thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in Heaven: and come, take up the cross, and follow Me.

47. LUK.9:57-62 And it came to pass, that, as they went in the way, a certain man said unto Him, Lord, I will follow Thee whithersoever Thou goest. And Jesus said unto him, Foxes have holes, and the birds of the air have nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay His head. And He said unto another, Follow Me. But he said, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father. Jesus said unto him, Let the dead bury their dead: but go thou and preach the Kingdom of God. And another also said, Lord, I will follow Thee; but let me first go bid them farewell, which are at home at my house. And Jesus said unto him, No man, having put his hand to the plow, and looking back, is fit for the Kingdom of God.

48. LUK.10:23,24 And He turned him unto His disciples, and said privately, Blessed are the eyes which see the things that ye see: For I tell you, that many prophets and kings have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them.

49. JOH.6:27 Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: for Him hath God the Father sealed.

50. JOH.12:26 If any man serve Me, let him follow Me; and where I am, there shall also My servant be: if any man serve Me, him will My Father honour.

51. JOH.13:35 By this shall all men know that ye are My disciples, if ye have love one to another.

52. ACT.4:34,35 Neither was there any among them that lacked: for as many as were possessors of lands or houses sold them, and brought the prices of the things that were sold, And laid them down at the apostles' feet: and distribution was made unto every man according as he had need.

53. ACT.15:26 Men that have hazarded their lives for the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ.

54. ROM.8:35-37 Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? shall tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword? As it is written, For Thy sake we are killed all the day long; we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter. Nay, in all these things we are more than conquerors through Him that loved us.

55. EPH.6:13-16 Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand. Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth, and having on the breastplate of righteousness; And your feet shod with the preparation of the Gospel of peace; Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked.

56. 2TI.1:9 Who hath saved us, and called us with an holy calling, not according to our works, but according to His Own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before the World began.



And immediately Jesus stretched forth His hand, & caught him, & said unto him, O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt? (Mt.14:31).

1. The best cure for doubts is the Word!
2. You can't keep trouble from coming, but you needn't give it a chair to sit on.
3. You can't keep the birds from flying over your head but you can sure keep them from building a nest in your hair.
4. Doubt sees the obstacles,
Faith sees the way.
Doubt sees the darkest night,
Faith sees the day.
Doubt dreads to take a step,
Faith soars on high.
Doubt questions "Who believes?"
While faith answers "I".
5. Just a little bit of doubt, a little bit of fear, a little bit of complaint, a little bit of discouragement, can grow and grow until you're totally defeated and a terrible influence on others!
6. At the root of every doubt there is sin, the heinous diabolical sin of rebellion against God's will.
7. Doubts are monsters that devour & destroy you & things around you! They are the Devil's thoughts & Satan's words!--And when you're doubting in your own mind, you're thinking the Enemy's thoughts! When you're voicing your doubts to others you're spreading Satan's propaganda--& it's all designed to bring division & through division, destruction of the Work of God!
8. There is no sense in advertising your troubles. There's no market for them.
9. Are you a potential Judas?--You are if you're doubtful, unhappy, discontented, disobedient & unbelieving!
10. You cannot entertain the thoughts of the Enemy & yet receive the thoughts of God.
11. Murmuring is the voice of doubt--the voice of doubt is murmuring!
12. If you let the Devil use your mouth to speak doubts & discouragement & his lies, you're preaching the Devil's own doctrines!
13. Feed your faith, & your doubts will starve to death.
14. Sometimes the price of doubt & discouragement can even be defeat & death!
15. If you get discouraged and lose faith, then you can lose your ability to exercise your power.
16. Don't listen to the Devil, or pretty soon you'll be believing him!
17. Doubt is contagious!
18. The Lord doesn't hold you as responsible for even your deeds as He does your unbelief!
19. You are not responsible for the thoughts that pass your door. You are responsible for those you admit & entertain.
20. Doubt, fear, discouragement & murmuring kill! But faith, trust, courage & praising the Lord maketh alive!
21. The reason people doubt is because they're not willing to accept the truth.
22. God can stand anything but your damn doubts and fears and lack of faith!
23. Never doubt in the dark what God has spoken in the light.

24. Which will you be?--A doubter, disobeyer and denyer?--Or a believer, obeyer and broadcaster of the truth, even if it kills you!

25. The worst sin of all is the wicked horrible heinous sin of unbelief, which leads to faith in the Devil & his lie.

26. The major sin is unbelief--rejecting (doubting) the Word of God & believing the lying propaganda of the Devil.

27. Backsliding & betrayal always begin with doubts, then disobedience, then denial.

28. Fill your life with love & your mind & heart with His truth & there'll be no room for the lies of the Devil. You'll have enough peace in your heart so there'll be no room for the Devil's warfare.

29. I will not doubt though all my ships come home with broken sails!

30. God will forgive anything except total rejection of the truth. He can even forgive the man with doubts, the doubting Thomases who want to have you prove it. When the man came to Jesus he said, "Lord, I believe but help Thou mine unbelief."

31. The Lord is able to chase away all of the shadows, doubts, fears & lies of the Enemy.

32. If you have doubts, you can cure it by faith, which comes by hearing the Word. The Word will cure any doubts you have if you're willing to receive the truth & really want to know.

33. Doubt is eventually followed by disobedience & disobedience by denial & denial by betrayal.

34. Let go of those damned doubts & fears & discouragements & devilish burdens put there by the Enemy, & hang onto the Lord!

35. You don't have any excuse for doubts about FFing because we have given you the Word & the cause & the motivation for the whole thing. That's where the problem comes in--whether you believe the Word or not.

36. Stay dropped out of the doubts of the Devil by staying close to the Lord & His Word.

37. Don't let the Enemy adulterate the pure waters of the Word with his dirty lies & propaganda & his doctrines of devils! Don't believe them! Resist them!--For his doubts & fears & lies can hide an even more fatal attack on your very life.

(See also No. 33, 35, 71, 313, 604, 759, 1268, 1376.)

(See Verses on Faith.)



Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the Word of truth (2Tim.2:15).

1. We are genuine officers' training schools preparing a cadre for World leadership!
2. It's always easier to do it yourself than to teach somebody else how to do it.
3. If you're a good student you'll make a good teacher.
4. People grow according to demands they make on themselves. If they demand little of themselves, they will remain stunted. If they demand a great deal of themselves, they will grow to giant stature.
5. The whole purpose of this life is to prepare you for the Next Life.
6. There's only one thing more painful than learning from experience, & that is not learning from experience.
7. What history teaches us is that most men have never learned anything from it.
8. To teach is to learn.
9. You, as a teacher, affect eternity; no one can tell where your influence stops.
10. The mediocre teacher tells.
The good teacher explains.
The superior teacher demonstrates.
The great teacher inspires.
11. Everyone is ignorant--only on different subjects.
12. What I am to be, I am now becoming.
13. A professor once said that it didn't matter if one said, "I seed," if one really had seen something.
- ...
15. There is no education like adversity.
16. It's strange how much you've got to know before you know how little you know.
17. You cannot help men permanently by doing for them what they could & should do for themselves.
18. Give a man a fish, & you feed him for a day.
Teach a man to fish & you feed him for life.
19. God never puts you in a space too small to grow in.
20. Fight truth decay.
21. Experience is a good teacher--& she doesn't allow dropouts.
22. By the time we recognise a man's brilliance we've forgotten the stupid questions he asked to get that way.
23. Life is the soul's nursery ... it's a training place for the destinies of eternity.
24. Men learn while they teach.
25. Your child's education commences with you, their parents, & every word you speak within the hearing of your little children tends towards the formation of their character.
26. A teacher who is attempting to teach without inspiring the pupil with a desire to learn, is hammering on cold iron.
27. Man cannot improve on God's plan or God's design!
28. Every mistake can be a steppingstone if we learn our lesson from it.
29. We're being trained right now, prepared & taught & skilled & tested for the job that we have yet to do!
30. Teachers can help you avoid pitfalls & mistakes & be an easy alternative to bitter experience.

31. Experience is the best teacher but the hardest.
32. The mind is like a computer: it has to be filled with something, good or bad, and our reflexes are mentally conditioned to react in a certain way according to what we have been taught or experienced.
33. Stick to what is good & add what is even better!
34. Every fall is a step upward--if you learn from it.
35. Even getting out the lit to others is not as important as getting the lit into yourself.
36. The best education to get is an education in the Word & faith & survival & mobility & preaching the Gospel, right now.
37. Now is the best time to learn, when you have the teacher here to correct your papers!
38. Robert A. Millikan, the American physicist & Nobel Prize winner, once said: "Knowledge of the Bible is an indispensable qualification of a well-educated man."
39. We're teaching people how to get along without churches & church buildings & preachers & denominations. We're teaching a do-it-yourself survival religion!
40. We are God's computers, programmed by the Lord, & we only know as much as He has told us, & that's all we need to say!--But that's quite a bit!
41. People who wonder how to teach a little child about Jesus must be people who don't even know Him.
42. Teaching others to teach others to teach others to teach others is our basic principle.--2Tim.2:2.
43. The day you stop learning you might as well die, because then you're dead already, mentally & spiritually!
44. Don't give strong meat to Babes! Give them the milk they can understand!
45. If you're gonna accomplish anything in this World, you can't just do it all yourself, you must teach others to teach others to teach others!
46. The Word is the basic building block of our whole educational system!
47. Constantly reading the Word can wear grooves & channels in your brain that can never be erased.
48. The job I want in the Millennium is the same job I've got now: An Educator & a Publisher to try to teach the people the Truth!
49. We are organising & establishing an educational system for the World.
50. During the Millennium there will only be one educational system--ours!
51. We believe in teaching others to teach others to teach others--an endless atom-bomb chain reaction of the Gospel!
52. Our schoolbooks are the Letters & the Bible!
53. Experience is the best teacher but a tough & costly one, whereas teachers are a shortcut to learning.
54. Our whole purpose is education--educating people in the truth of the Gospel!
55. We are now in our training period in this life in preparation for ruling the World in the next!
56. Sometimes you can learn & accomplish more by putting to use what little you have where it's needed now, rather than waiting until you know as much as you think you need to know.
57. There's always more to learn ... you never stop learning. We're not going to stop learning even after we get on the other side. And we're still going to use what we've learned here.
58. All the experience you can possibly get in any field in any way is always valuable. I have found the Lord will use everything you've ever learned.
59. We go through different phases & stages & needs, just like children in school, & God gives us whatever we need for the time.
60. That lifetime of preparation is worth it all--even if only for that "moment of truth" & recognition by the Lord--that moment of usefulness that you were designed for.
61. We study the Book of Acts not only as a history of the Early church, but as a pattern for today's church!
62. You're now in training for the days when you will rule the Earth, but before you can do that, you must learn to rule yourselves.
63. Our Revolutionary Education should have as its major purpose in every field and subject: To restore and build faith in God according to His rules.
64. God created all things according to definite laws for every science and every art and every field of knowledge.
65. We have an unlimited education!
66. Where can you ever go to get a better education that will answer all your questions & solve all your problems than right here in God's Word & in the Family?
67. The more I learn, the more I realise I need to learn. The more I know, the more I know I don't know.

68. If you knew everything all at once you would miss the joys & the thrills of the multitudinous experiences of the exciting learning process, & might even lose your interest in living!

69. The best way to teach is to help people find the answers to their own questions and to demonstrate it visibly if possible.

70. The spiritual must be supreme, and the New Nation must be spiritual first of all!--The Kingdom of God!

71. Brainwashing is our business--heartwashing too!--To clean up people's dirty minds & hearts with the pure water of His Word!

72. Each one teach one to do your job!

73. Delusion must be destroyed in order to build a firm foundation of Truth!

74. The Word of God will make you smarter than all the ungodly education in the World & the ungodly wisdom of man, which is nothing.

75. You cannot take something away from people unless you give them something to replace it.

76. Start teaching people how to live by telling them how to give!

77. The Christian nations were supposed to be the civilisers & the teachers of the World, but they failed in the job they started.

78. The conquering of the World is only right when it's to teach it the civilized Christian ways of the Lord.

79. We teach by the clinical method, learning by doing, with someone showing you how to do it.

80. The Lord Himself has all kinds of grades and classifications in His school, and all kinds of positions in His army!

81. It is high time to move to the attack and go on the offensive for God and the Truth of His Word against the heinous and hideous horrors of the Serpent's own monstrous fallacies in the halls of so-called higher learning, which bring only lower damnation!

82. Students stand up for your convictions and fight for your faith in the classroom!

83. I hear & I forget. I see & I remember. I do & I understand.

84. It's far better to take care of your children that you have already, that are already born, and to teach & train them & to give them the Letters and get them well grown and taught and established, before you start going other places bearing other babies.

85. If it's not the Word & not the Truth, I don't care to teach it to my children!

86. There is no law in the World against brainwashing, every religion & church in the World does it, every political organisation does it, every advertising executive does it, every educational institution does it, every college & school in the World does it!--That's what education & religion & politics is all about, trying to wash your brain their way! We're trying to wash your brains God's way.

87. To educate people in the things of the Lord, even in your witnessing, is your major task.

88. In the Bible I always try to take literally what obviously I don't think could possibly be symbolic! If it makes sense literally, take it literally!--Unless it is interpreted for you as being symbolic.

89. The only thing you need to get out of the Bible any more is the moral & spiritual lessons & instruction, not all this historical, geographical, genealogical detail & endless ancient History.

90. Forget the past! Let's go forward! Let's concentrate on the now & the future & get our job done & stop wasting time on ancient history.

91. Why in the Hell should we study about the past that should be gone & past & all forgotten? Why should we waste time on detailed intricate infinite study of every little detail of ancient history? It's past & there's nothing you can do about it. It's finished!

92. We ought to be concentrating on the present & the future. You don't need to know all that junk of the past nor even read Old Testament History any more, it's a waste of time! You can read the Books of Psalms & Proverbs & things which are up to date, & apply to today, your spiritual lessons & everyday life & praise to the Lord as well as lots of prophecy about the Future, but you certainly don't need to go delving into the depths of ancient time.

93. The reading of the New Testament, especially the life of Christ & particularly the Gospel of John is very helpful to new Christians, but I think they'd almost be better off if they didn't get tangled up in the Epistles of the Apostles. They get into some big doctrinal arguments there between Paul & Peter & some of the rest of them.

94. Why should we waste our time looking backwards & studying the past when we have all we can possibly do working in the present & studying the Future?

95. Why study the Bible? I've told you almost all you need to know about the Bible & quoted for you all the important Scriptures with up-to-date modern applications of today that are appropriate for now & have to do

with the present & the lives we're living now, not re-hashing all that old passé Jewish junk. It may have been good for our fathers but it's too late for us!

96. Why should you turn around & go back to the past, especially a churchy past & a churchy study of the Bible & all its past & ancient history? It's the University of Empty Blab! It's empty because there's nothing to it because they don't get anything out of it but chaff & rubbish, for the plain & simple reason that it doesn't affect their lives, or get them to do their job or to witness or win souls or evangelise the World or prepare people for the future.

97. You don't have to know the churches & churchianity & church doctrine or even the Bible as long as you know the Truth & the Word of God, His Word for today & His Prophet for today & His Message & method & ministry for today. All the Bible you need to know is already in your Prophet MO!

98. There are so many Bible stories & so much to teach out of the MO Letters, why should we teach them anything else?

99. You're still in training! After you've learned how to take care of one yard & one house, He'll probably give you several, maybe a dozen, maybe a whole country, & you'll teach them all how to do it.

100. In the Millennium, people will need to be taught & trained in the Truth & God's Word. We're gonna have to systematically destroy the works of the Devil & the works of Satan & all of his shit!--All of his music & literature & his so-called art & everything on Earth that's not of the Lord.

(See Also No. 54, 315, 330C, 334A, 371, 376, 389, 588, 606, 619, 645, 687, 688, 693, 694, 715, 718, 721, 722, 728, 732, 734, 739, 775, 776, 779, 780, 835, 897, 986, 996, 1039, 1047, 1055, 1107, 1142, 1214, 1381, 1398, 1470, *Childcare Handbook II & III*.)

101. DEU.11:18-20 Therefore shall ye lay up these My Words in your heart and in your soul, and bind them for a sign upon your hand, that they may be as frontlets between your eyes. And ye shall teach them your children, speaking of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, when thou liest down, and when thou risest up. And thou shalt write them upon the door posts of thine house, and upon thy gates.

102. PSA.16:7 I will bless the Lord, Who hath given me counsel: my reins also instruct me in the night seasons.

103. PSA.25:5 Lead me in Thy truth, and teach me: for Thou art the God of my Salvation, on Thee do I wait all the day.

104. PSA.34:11 Come, ye children, hearken unto me: I will teach you the fear of the Lord.

105. PSA.119:24 Thy testimonies also are my delight and my counsellors.

106. PRO.1:7a The fear of the Lord is the beginning of knowledge.

107. PRO.4:13 Take fast hold of instruction; let her not go: keep her; for she is thy life.

108. PRO.12:1 Whoso loveth instruction loveth knowledge: but he that hateth reproof is brutish.

109. JOH.5:39 Search the Scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life: and they are they which testify of Me.

110. JOH.6:45 It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh to Me.

111. ACT.17:11 These were more noble than those in Thessalonica, in that they received the Word with all readiness of mind, and searched the Scriptures daily, whether those things were so.

112. 1Co.2:13 Which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy Ghost teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual.

113. 1TI.4:15 Meditate upon these things; give thyself wholly to them; that thy profiting may appear to all.

114. 2TI.2:15 Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not be ashamed, rightly dividing the Word of truth.

115. 2TI.3:15 And that from a child thou hast known the Holy Scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto Salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus.



Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy & vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the World, & not after Christ. The wisdom of this World is foolishness with God! (Col.2:8; 1Cor.3:19).

[**HomeARC note** (10/98): The Charter states that quality scholastic education is a basic right of our children.]

1. Modern education is designed by the Devil to undermine faith in God and the Bible, and encourage faith in man and his wisdom and science instead.
2. A man who has never gone to school may steal a freight car; but if he has a university education, he may steal the whole railroad.
3. Natural gifts without education have more often attained to glory & virtue than education without natural gifts.
4. The end of school brings home to parents what teachers have known for nine months.
5. Television is not only replacing radio--it's doing a pretty good job on homework too.
6. Hooky is when a small boy lets his mind wander--& then follows it.
7. Common sense is in spite of, not the result of, education.
8. Nothing in education is so astonishing as the amount of ignorance it accumulates in the form of inert facts.
9. The World's great men have not commonly been great scholars, nor its great scholars, great men.
10. If you give some people too much knowledge without wisdom, they invent atom bombs with their knowledge, & go shooting off into space to the moon while millions are starving to death!
11. Of making many books there is no end; & much study is a weariness of the flesh. Ecc.12:12.
12. Modern education is such a defeat because no one understands you but the very elite.
13. The Devil has to teach some good, or people wouldn't swallow the lies! He has to wrap up his bitter pill in a sugarcoating that will damn your soul! It tastes good, but it gives you indigestion! In fact, it's pure poison & will kill you & send you to Hell!
14. Science is always changing names of things, as well as always changing opinions & theories & ideas!
15. The religion of the World today is becoming the religion of science. Big organised, commercialised sports are the worship of man's body, education is the worship of the works of his mind, & Churchianity is the worship of his own spirit, and war is the ultimate that all of these lead to!
16. The temptation of man was not sex: It was knowledge, education, pride & power!
17. Worldly Godless education is the greatest enemy today of the Kingdom of God!
18. You talk about fairy tales?--Even mythology is more believable than evolution!
19. Man didn't descend from the monkeys, man is descending to a monkey & lots of monkey business.
20. The whole principle of modern Godless education is: There are no absolutes, nothing is sure, nothing is certain.
21. Math is a form of perfection, of inviolable perfection, and they had to destroy faith in the perfect because if there's anything perfect, then there must be a God, so they had to try to prove that math itself was imperfect.
22. The whole of idea modern man-made education is to destroy faith in God in every field and every subject.

23. Modern education is totally diabolical, devilish, anti-Christ, demonic & is doing nothing but destroying faith.

24. You can do better with a little help from the Lord than you can with a lot of help from man's universities.

25. The biggest drawback to educational television is that most children want to major in cartoons, cowboys & crime.

26. Children who watch television night & day will go down in history--not to mention mathematics, geography & grammar.

27. An educational system isn't worth a great deal if it teaches children how to make a living but doesn't teach them how to live.

28. Science is sitting at the foot of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good & Evil & plucking off its fruits.

29. Man, with all his smart-aleckyness, has never been able to create one living cell!

30. Modern education's principal aim is to make life as complicated as possible & to make simple things complex!

31. Modern education is the worship of man & his accomplishments.

32. Nearly all modern textbooks are the Devil's Bibles, designed to deny the Truth of God.

33. Modern education takes simple things & makes them complicated.

34. Evolution is really a religion of unbelief in God.

35. Darwin finally gave the World the excuse it was looking for to not believe in God!

36. Man's decline plainly shows: he's forgotten more than he now knows.

37. Universities are full of knowledge; the freshman brings a little in & the seniors take none away, & knowledge accumulates.

38. Modern Worldly secular education is damnable because it's damning probably more young people than any other instrument of the Devil in this World! Modern public education is an enemy of Christ, an enemy of the true Church, an enemy of God, an enemy of the Bible & an enemy of your faith, a tool of the Devil to try to destroy your soul & damn you to Hell!

39. Education is the religion of the World today, the worship of the knowledge of man.

40. "The wise men are ashamed, they are dismayed & taken, lo, they have rejected the Word of the Lord, what wisdom is in them?" (Jer.8:9) If you reject the Word of the Lord, what have you got left? Without God's Word there is nothing, no wisdom, no knowledge that amounts to anything. Without the Word of God all these great temples to education are only universities of empty blab! They're just so much tommyrot without God!

41. If you don't have God & you don't have the Bible, there is no purpose in living, no reason for existence, no goal, no solution; life isn't worth living, so they just live to destroy!

42. The Godless, damnable, hellish educational system is damning young people today & taking God & the Bible away from them, an excuse for existence & a purpose in life & love of God in their fellow man, & making animals out of them, brute beasts created to be destroyed, teaching them that they are animals & they might as well do as they please & live like hell & go to hell saying, "There is no God, so what difference does it make what you do? If there's no umpire to this game, no referee, no rulebook, no set of rules, you can play the game as you damn please! You can get out there & murder or kill or do it any way you want to!"--That's the ethics of Godless education!

43. The World's enormous high schools & mammoth universities have become heartless machines, producing unguided little monsters which are going to destroy them--the Frankenstein that made them--& the churches are the same!

44. Being forced to integrate Christian children with little demons & maniacs of the Devil, be they white or black or red, white & blue, I don't go for it!

45. Ungodly anti-Christ education has attacked each major field that proves the evidence of a perfect God.

46. Medical school is one of the worst schools of all--nothing is sacred!

47. People who have no education usually worship it. People who have had it don't think too much of it.

48. To abandon the Ruler they had to throw away all the rules: The result is total anarchy! To abandon the One Who gives the orders they had to abandon order: The result is total chaos! To get rid of God they had to get rid of the absolutes--the right & the wrong & the meaning & reason for things--The result is total insanity!--Secular education!

(See also No. 165, 222, 299, 376, 687, 728, 736, 775, 776, 897, 1039, 1365.)

49. JOB.21:14 Therefore they say unto God, Depart from us; for we desire not the knowledge of Thy way.

50. ECC.12:12 And further, by these, my son, be admonished: of making many books there is no end; and much study is a weariness of the flesh.

51. JER.4:22 For My people is foolish, they have not known Me; they are sottish children, and they have none understanding: they are wise to do evil, but to do good they have no knowledge.

52. JER.8:9 The wise men are ashamed, they are dismayed and taken: lo, they have rejected the Word of the Lord; and what wisdom is in them?

53. ZEC.7:11,12a But they refused to hearken, and pulled away the shoulder, and stopped their ears that they should not hear. Yea, they made their hearts as an adamant stone, lest they should hear the law, and the Words which the Lord of hosts has sent in His Spirit by the former prophets.

54. ROM.1:21,22 Because that, when they knew God, they glorified Him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools.

55. ROM.1:28 And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient.

56. 1CO.3:19,20 For the wisdom of this World is foolishness with God. For it is written, He taketh the wise in their own craftiness. And again, The Lord knoweth the thoughts of the wise, that they are vain.

57. 1CO.8:1b Knowledge puffeth up, but charity edifieth.

58. 2CO.11:3 But I fear, lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtlety, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ.

59. COL.2:6-8 As ye have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walk ye in Him. Rooted and built up in Him, and stablished in the faith, as ye have been taught, abounding therein with thanksgiving. Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the World, and not after Christ.

60. 2TI.4:3 For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears.



But thou, O Daniel, shut up the words, & seal the book, even to the time of the end: many shall run to and fro, & knowledge shall be increased (Dan.12:4).

1. We'll soon be at the end of the road!--And the end of the road for us will be just the beginning!
2. The sooner the End comes, the sooner the Beginning comes!
3. The worse it gets, the closer we are to the End, & the greater proof that we have nearly finished the job, & that some of us may soon be going to our reward!
4. The worse it gets, the better it's going to get. And the sooner it gets worse the sooner it's going to get better.
5. Things are going to get a little bit worse, then they're going to get a little bit better, then they're going to get the worst of all, & then they're going to get the best of all when Jesus comes!
6. "Thou shalt sweep across the face of the Earth & thou shalt proclaim My name unto all nations, & then shall the End come!"
7. "Blessed are your eyes, for they behold that which the prophets have dreamed of!"
8. Like a dying candle, the lights of the World are soon to flicker out.
9. The worse things get, the better!--Because the sooner the End comes, the better things will get!
10. The only answer is the Lord & His Coming to restore law & order and Christian civilisation.
11. We are becoming the leading characters in God's grand finale on Earth--leaders of the Last Day Christians against the Antichrist!
12. God has warned us time & again almost since the beginning of man & certainly throughout the Bible, that there's coming an End to things as far as man's rule on this Earth is concerned, & that his governments are going to eventually end so that God can set up His Heavenly Kingdom of peace on Earth!
13. The End is bound to come--including our end--which will be the beginning of the Kingdom of Heaven on Earth, with peace & plenty for all! And we shall rule & reign with Him forever!
14. My interest is in the future because I'm going to spend the rest of my life there.
15. The Lord promised He would be with us "even unto the End of the World"! (Mat.28:20)
16. It's the worry about the unknown that bothers you! It's not knowing that worries you the most! But if you've got pretty good accurate information of what's going to happen then you don't have to worry about it, you know what's going to happen!
17. If the Lord could keep all His children for the last 6000 years, He can sure keep them for the last 3-1/2 years!

(See also No. 10, 64, 102, 146, 156, 163, 186a, 276, 279, 281, 285, 294, 305, 333c, 334, 343, 344, 346, 347, 348, 349, 372, 373, 374, 378, 379, 380, 398, 541, 655, 707, 710, 799, 883, 899, 906, 911, 912, 940, 1036, 1066, 1087, 1094, 1099, 1100, 1241, 1242, 1243, 1244, 1245, 1276, 1283, 1331, 1342, 1343, 1344, 1345, 1346, 1347, 1348, 1364, 1391, 1423, 1426, 1428, 1435, 1437, 1440, 1441, 1445, 1447, 1450, 1453, 1457, 1460, 1463, 1465, 1466, 1484, 1485, 1486, 1487, 1488, 1489, 1490, 1491, 1494, 1495, 1496, 1497, 1498, 1499, 1500, 1501, 1502, 1503, 1504, 1505, 1506, 1507, 1508, 1509, 1513, 1514, 1515, 1516, 1517, 1518, 1519, 1520, 1521, 1522, 1523, 1524, 1528, 1529, 1530, 1531, 1532, 1533, 1542, 1543, 1544, 1545, 1546, 1556, 1557, 1558, 1559, 1560, 1561, 1562, 1568, 1569, 1571, 1573, 1574, 1575, 1577, 1578, 1579, 1583, 1596, 1597, 1611, 1612, 1613, 1614, 1615, 1616, 1617, 1618, 1619, 1620, 1621, 1622, 1623, 1624, 1625, 1626, 1627, 1628, 1630, 1631, 1632, 1639, 1645,



And these signs shall follow them that believe; In My name they shall cast out devils (Mk.16:17).

1. People with spiritual proclivities or tendencies--what you might almost call psychic sensitivities--are susceptible to spiritual influences, & if they don't stay mighty close to God & His Holy Spirit, they're very susceptible to evil spirits.

2. Don't hit the Devil head-on unless you're prepared to go all the way & really have it out & really get rid of him or the person who's harbouring him, one or the other! When you have driven the Devil out in the open & exposed him, you have precipitated a crisis & you have started something that you had better finish!

3. I don't believe a child of God can be totally possessed by the Devil, but if you believe his lies, he sometimes seems to be able to take over temporary control, & he can certainly give you Hell from the outside!

4. You don't just beat around the bush with spiritual problem cases or try to save their feelings by not talking about it. If they have any pride about it, that's as bad as the rest of the problem. The Devil never likes to be exposed, he likes to do his dirtywork in the dark & behind the scenes so you won't really know who is doing the damage. He'd like to make you think it's some disease or mental problem, blah, blah, blah!

5. With incorrigibly insane people you have to humour them, not confront them or precipitate a crisis. If you see they're obviously not receiving counsel & not contrite & not breaking down & not wanting to be genuinely delivered, it's better just to pacify them & keep them as a friend, as you ease them out!

6. In initial exorcism you don't necessarily always have the cooperation of the individual, but for them to remain clean afterward, then they must put their will on yours & the Lord's side. They must desire to remain clean, & be repentant & want Jesus & the Holy Spirit to protect them. Then you've got the cooperation of their spirit, too, on your side, to get rid of the evil spirit. Otherwise, as the Lord Himself showed about the one out of whom the evil spirit was cast, that spirit went & got seven more spirits worse than he was & came back & entered in, & the last estate was worse than the first! (Mt.12:45.)

7. It may be a stubborn situation, a stubborn spirit, but it doesn't matter how stubborn it is, you've got the authority & the power to cast it out! Now you either have or you haven't! If Jesus Christ is real, you have! If you haven't got the power to throw out that spirit, then you haven't got Jesus Christ & Jesus Christ isn't real, He never rose from the dead & we are of all men most miserable & our faith is in vain! (1Cor.15:19, 2)

8. "One can chase a thousand, two can put ten thousand to flight!" (Deut.32:30.) What do you think He's talking about?--Some kind of soldiers in an army or something?--No doubt evil spirits!

9. We can by the authority of God's Word, & in His Name, according to His commandments, cast out demons, whatever they are, & deliver the possessed--at least long enough for them to be in their right mind & under the control of their own spirit to make their own decision to serve the Devil or to serve the Lord, & then whatever decision they make is their responsibility.

10. As long as that devil's in control, in a way the possessed is not really responsible, even though it is their sins that have allowed it. So it's our responsibility to give the Lord a chance to totally deliver them.

11. If you deliver someone from the Devil's control, & then they still by their own spirit make their own free choice to serve the Devil, then there's nothing more you can do! The devils'll be right back in again & probably

more also, & the possessed is worse off! But if out from under the influence of that spirit, they of their own free will & choice want to serve the Lord & be delivered, then the Lord will deliver them!

12. The evil spirits are subject to us: They can't do as they please, they have to do what we tell'm! If we say depart, they have to depart in the name of Jesus! But we can't yet tell our own spirit to depart! It still has free will & makes its own choices, & if it's not the Lord's choice, & if through disobedience or compromise or laziness or whatever it is, we're not close to Him & under the control of His Spirit, our spirits can still make mistakes, if they're not yielded to His spirit.

13. The discerning of spirits is not only the discerning of good & evil spirits, but the discerning of human spirits as well. You've got to be able to tell when people are sincere or not, their attitude of heart & mind.

14. It's not the problems that bother us so much as the problem people who create the problems!

15. Little namby-pamby prayers aren't going to do a bit of good in a case where you're dealing with evil spirits! You've got to address the Old Boy himself & rebuke him, call him by name if you can!

16. The most effective way to exorcise any evil spirit is to call them by name & rebuke them by name, cast them out by name & resist them by name!

17. If we can't get rid of the devil, we have to get rid of the demoniac!

18. If they want to be Hell-raisers & raise Hell, let'm go to Hell!

19. It's a lot easier for the Devil to hide in a crowd.

20. Mary Magdalene was a harlot filled with seven devils! But the Lord cast them all out of her, cleansed her, forgave her, & she became one of His favourite lovers, perhaps even the King's favourite!

21. Find out the name of the demon who is attacking, & then command him by name with authority in the name of Jesus Christ, & he has to obey!

22. When people came to my mother wanting her to come & do miracles & pray for the sick & heal them, she first sat them down & dealt with them about their souls, their spirit & their problems & what was really wrong with them that caused them to be sick in the first place--whether it was demons or diet or whatever it was--she tried to find out whether it was the chastening of the Lord or the curse of the Devil. She determined to find out the cause, not just treat the illness, which is nothing but a symptom of something spiritual or natural.

23. Don't hesitate to use the Name of Jesus. Make the subject pray in the Name of Jesus & say the Name of Jesus & ask to be delivered in the Name of Jesus, again & again.

24. You don't have to confess your sins to everybody. If it's just between you & the Lord, you just confess it to Him. If it's between you & somebody else, you confess it to that person, but if you have offended the whole congregation, then you need to confess to the whole congregation.

25. People who are filled with the Devil, even if they are supposedly Christians, self-righteous Christians who think they know the Lord & even think maybe they're saved, they can curse someone, thinking they're doing it in the Spirit of God, while actually they're of their father the Devil!

26. Those in tune with the Devil can literally pray to the Devil that he'll send his angels or his hindering spirits to bother people.

27. When people pray for deliverance, they not only need to pray for deliverance from the Devil & his evil spirits & his demons, but against some of the people who are behind them, backing them & sending their curses by means of these little devils--get at the root of the trouble!

28. Christians can curse people too if they don't behave or if they get in the Lord's way!

29. If people don't receive us, they're not receiving the Lord. "He that is not for Me is against Me." (Mt.12:30) And if they're against us, you know they're serving the Devil.

30. Even the evil spirits are subject to us, but we have to be positive & definite about it & recognise the opposition & contradict them & oppose them & curse them & send them away, command them to depart!

31. Devils can't do anything but what you allow them to do. They are subject unto us, but sometimes they are also subject to those who send them.

32. God has His talismans too! Spiritually mature adults should not need objects. But like kids need pictures & illustrations, simple folks need signs & good talismans, like crosses, crucifixes, pix & images of Mary & saints & miraculous manifestations to inspire their faith. The problem is, where does the representation stop & the worship begin? And fear is a form of worship!--Watch out!

33. You'd better not try to tackle the Devil unless you know how to tackle him & you've got the strength & the spiritual power to do it.

34. A person is not possessed until he can no longer control himself, until his own spirit is no longer dominant & he's under the complete or total control of another spirit.

35. What I'd call full demon possession is when a person no longer has any self-control but the demon can just come & go at will & do whatever it wants or make them do whatever it wants.

36. It's possible for a person to be both pestered by evil spirits & also helped by good spirits at the same time.

37. You can even have the wrong spirit speak through your mouth sometimes & inspire you to say the wrong things.--But not necessarily be possessed. The difference is to what degree you allow the Enemy to control & rule over your life.

38. People with mental problems get very easily upset, very easily aggravated, annoyed, inclined to a tantrum or a rage very easily, & are often very nervous largely because they are rather weak in the spirit & susceptible to spiritual influences, so the only way they can avoid being influenced by the wrong spirit is to stay very close to the Lord & very full of His Spirit. Let the Light in so brightly that the darkness finds no place to hide & will flee away!

39. "Neither give place to the Devil" (Eph.4:27) is a good Scripture because it shows you can sometimes give the Devil place & room to operate & get in, without necessarily being completely taken over or possessed. But believe you me, whatever territory you give him, he'll sure use it, whatever he can get ahold of, including your tongue & your sharp critical spirit & violent abuse of others etc.!

40. The best way to get along with mental patients is to humour them as much as you can, without letting them go too far. There always comes a place where you have to call a halt & put a stop to something just like with a little child, & usually if you put your foot down firmly & they know you mean business, then they'll simmer down. But you have to be definite & firm about it & very clear about it, what you will put up with & what you won't stand, set down very clear lines of limitation & requirements of obedience. Warn them in advance what you won't put up with & how far they can go, & tolerate no further, let them know you really mean business & you're going to enforce it, just like you would with a little child.

41. If you allow the Enemy to continue to operate in any area of your life it could develop into complete demonism. Those bad spirits want more & more control, like the camel's nose, & the quicker you nip it in the bud & get rid of it, not only the nose but the camel behind it, the better.

42. A nervous breakdown begins with physical exhaustion, then nervous exhaustion which results in mental exhaustion & eventually almost spiritual exhaustion.

43. You've got to be pretty strong spiritually to get rid of devils! You've got to attack the thing head on. You can't just deal with it in generalities, "Lord bless this dear brother, blah, blah." You have to speak personally, directly to the devil or the demon, & rebuke him, with anger, almost with violence!--And command him to depart, because that's the only hope there is. You have to deal with the Devil in the kind of terms that he understands & it's pretty much force & forceful!

(See also No. K, 33, 66, 99, 168, 171, 287, 291, 303, 334A, 602, 603, 664, 666, 678, 710, 719, 720, 727, 764, 856, 857, 947, 952, 954, 980, 1008, 1023, 1041, 1090, 1379, 1399, 1408, 1409, 1420, 1432, 1436, 1438, 1442, 1443, 1444, 1448, 1452, 1454, 1459, 1464, 1467, 1527.)

44. MAT.8:16,17 When the even was come, they brought unto Him many that were possessed with devils; and He cast out the spirits with His Word, and healed all that were sick: That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, Himself took our infirmities, and bare our sicknesses.

45. MAT.10:1 And when He had called unto Him His twelve disciples, He gave them power against unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of sickness and all manner of disease.

46. MAT.12:29 Or else how can one enter into a strong man's house, and spoil his goods, except he first bind the strong man? and then he will spoil his house.

47. MAR.1:34 And He healed many that were sick of divers diseases, and cast out many devils; and suffered not the devils to speak, because they knew Him.

48. MAR.9:29 And He said unto them, This kind can come forth by nothing, but by prayer and fasting.

49. MAR.16:17,18 And these signs shall follow them that believe; In My Name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues; They shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.

50. LUK.9:1 Then He called His twelve disciples together, and gave them power and authority over all devils, and to cure diseases.

51. LUK.10:17 And the seventy returned again with joy, saying, Lord, even the devils are subject unto us through Thy Name.

52. LUK.11:24-26 When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest; and finding none, he saith, I will return unto my house whence I came out. And when he cometh, he findeth it

swept and garnished. Then goeth he, and taketh to him seven other spirits more wicked than himself; and they enter in, and dwell there: and the last state of that man is worse than the first.

53. ACT.5:16 There came also a multitude out of the cities round about unto Jerusalem, bringing sick folks, and them which were vexed with unclean spirits: and they were healed every one.

54. JAM.2:19 Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils also believe, and tremble.

55. 1JO.3:8b For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that He might destroy the works of the Devil.

30. EYES

--{page 244}--



The light of the body is the eye: if therefore thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light
(Mt.6:22).

1. Your eyes are the deepest most permanent evidence of the inner self.
2. The ear is a less trustworthy witness than the eye.
3. The eyes believe themselves, the ears believe other people.
4. The older you get the more far-sighted you get.
5. The eyes are the sexiest part about you, girls, because they're the windows of your spirited sexy personalities!
6. The eyes betray character, the eyes bespeak the true nature & attitude of the person, no matter what the other coverups or affectations may be.
7. The mouth may lie, but the eye virtually invariably tells the truth about what is really going on inside.
8. When you look into another's eyes, your spirits are drawn out of each other's eyes and meet and contact each other.
9. If the subject is ready, you can hypnotise them in a moment, in virtually one glance!
10. Your eyes consume one-fourth of your entire bodily strength.
11. Hypnotism has got to be spiritual, and it shows the eyes have a lot to do with the spirit.
12. The eyes have it! The eyes started it! The eyes did it and the eyes finished it!
13. Eyes are the windows of the soul.
14. It is often possible for someone to look into another's eyes and read the very thoughts and intents of their heart.
15. When looking earnestly and penetratingly into each other's eyes, a definite reaction takes place which you often can actually feel physically!
16. A mouth can be forced to smile and pretend friendliness, but watch out if the eyes do not smile too!
17. The eye is the most deeply sincere communicator of all our senses & reveals our innermost being whether we want it to or not!
18. Eyes are the greatest betrayers of the true emotions within.
19. The eye has an almost extra-sensory power of perception and can convey and receive messages silently and motionlessly like no other human organ.

(See also No. 304, 544, 1009.)

20. PSA.32:8 I will instruct thee and teach thee in the way which thou shalt go: I will guide thee with Mine eye.

21. PSA.33:18,19 Behold, the eye of the Lord is upon them that fear Him, upon them that hope in His mercy; To deliver their soul from death, and to keep them alive in famine.

22. PSA.34:15 The eyes of the Lord are upon the righteous.

23. PRO.4:25 Let thine eyes look right on and let thine eyelids look straight before thee.

24. PRO.15:3 The eyes of the Lord are in every place, beholding the evil and the good.

25. MAT.6:23 But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great is that darkness!

31. FAITH & TRUST --{page 246}--



But without faith it is impossible to please Him: for he that cometh to God must believe that He is, & that He is a rewarder of them that diligently seek Him. So then faith cometh by hearing, & hearing by the Word of God (Heb.11:6; Rom.10:17).

1. The Lord loves faith! He loves you because you believe Him, just because He said so!
2. The Lord loves faith, it's a form of your love!
3. "Keep on believing, Jesus is here!
Keeping on believing, there's nothing to fear!
Keep on believing, this is the way,
Faith in the night as well as the day!"
4. It's impossible to have faith unless you have the Word.
5. When you remind God of His Word, it shows you have faith in it. It's a positive declaration of your faith & your knowledge of the Word which pleases God.
6. The Bible's exact,
So believe it as fact.
For faith dies,
When leavened with lies.
7. One of God's greatest interests is in getting you to believe in the unseeable!
8. Understanding is the reward of faith. Therefore seek not to understand that thou mayest believe, but believe that thou mayest understand.--Saint Augustine (354-430 A.D.)
9. He who loses money loses much; he who loses a friend loses more; but he who loses faith loses all.
10. Does your faith move mountains, or do mountains move your faith?
11. You get what you ask for, & what you have faith for!
12. Faith praises no matter what happens.
13. If it is difficult, we do it immediately; if it is impossible, it may take a little longer.
14. Life without faith is like a car without gas. It will go downhill, but makes very little uphill progress.
15. Faith carries the light of truth, which eliminates the shadow of doubt.
16. A man of courage is also full of faith.

17. Doubt sees the obstacles,
Faith sees the way!
Doubt sees the darkest night
Faith sees the day!

Doubt dreads to take a step
Faith soars on high!
Doubt questions, "Who believes?"
Faith answers, "I!"

18. Faith brightens our lives in a magical way
Bringing quiet & peace to a troubled day.
Faith is believing that after the rain
Bright birds will be singing & sunshine again.
Faith lets us know that the darkness of night
Is followed each morning by dawn's glowing light.

19. Faith isn't faith unless it's all you're holding onto.

20. I would rather be rich in faith & have no money, than to be rich in money & have not faith!

21. You can do anything if you have the faith & the will to work, the vision, the courage & the initiative!

22. You can miss your golden opportunities of service by not having the faith you should to act quickly in time of opportunity.

23. Faith knows God will do it!--And He does!

24. A lot depends on your faith & your leading & what He tells you personally to do. That's what you have to do.

25. It's amazing what faith can accomplish if you're really in tune with the Lord & you've got not only faith but a lot of gumption & get-up-&-go!

26. With faith, believing is seeing! Faith works on blind obedience whether you ever get the answer or not!

27. Folks, why does you all have to hang your faith on somethin', when God hung da World on nothin'!

28. It only takes one little tiny key to open a big door.

29. Discouragement is the Devil's favourite weapon, & the only thing that defeats it is faith!

30. There is only a slight difference between keeping your chin up & sticking your neck out, but it's worth knowing.

31. My knees may tremble sometimes, but not my faith!

32. Bravery is courage in the face of fear.

33. We don't have a do-nothing religion--we have a do-anything religion.--Anything you have the faith for, you can get out & do it yourself! We have a do-it-yourself religion.

34. Faith looks back & says, "Christ died for me"

Above & cries, "He lives for me"

Forward & whispers, "He comes for me."

35. Faith is vision plus valour & vigour!

36. Faith stands, leaning on God's Word.

37. If your parents have the slightest bit of faith in the Lord as a grain of mustard seed, they're going to have some place in His Kingdom & you'll see'm again some day, & then they'll understand.

38. God likes the kind of faith that when there is a choice, a decision, or an alternative, the great faith still chooses God's best in spite of the other possibilities.

39. Fair weather faith is no faith at all!

40. It is impossible to have faith unless you have the Word, because your faith is something that is built by faithful study of God's Word.

41. There's no excuse for not having the faith for something! "Faith cometh by hearing the Word"!
(Rom.10:17.)

42. The Lord really likes to keep you guessing, because that really tries your faith!

43. My answer to some people who have personal problems & want me to solve'm & tell'm what to do is just to say, "According to your faith be it done unto you!"

44. Turning on the faith in your heart is like turning on the light in a room!

45. Faith is like a cord which carries the power from the source to the instrument. To get the power from the source you have to have a line, & that's faith.

46. Love is God & the beginning of faith. Any form of love is a form of faith, & any form of faith is a form of love. God gives us faith for His Love.

47. Don't say "if" about anything. Faith is faith! You either know it or you don't know it. You either believe it or you don't.

48. It's faith that keeps you from worry, it's faith that keeps out fear!

49. If you've got the faith, it's just like you've got the title deed in your hand, "the substance of things hoped for," the title deed to things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen! (Heb.11:1)

50. Faith is just doing what God tells you to do today & believing Him for tomorrow.

51. Salvation has always been by faith in Christ, with or without the law. Even though those who lived before Christ were looking forward to Him & we look backwards, Salvation, grace, faith & the promises are always the same.

52. If others have no faith in you, it's hard for you to have faith in yourself & sometimes even in the Lord!

53. When you feel no one else loves or trusts you, you think maybe God doesn't either. But if someone shows you the love & faith of God, it inspires you to respond in a new effort to succeed!

54. Faith is a kind of drawing power.--It is you drawing power from God.

55. You cannot have the courage to obey unless you have faith!

56. Although you might have all of the necessary tools to help you in your ministry, if you don't have crazy faith, you'll miss the key & the blessing.

57. When the little widow cast in all her living, she must have had a lot of faith & expected God to give it back, & I'm sure He did!

58. I believe in putting God on the spot & asking Him to do a miracle!

59. It's not that the brave are not afraid, it's just that they have the courage & the faith to go ahead! If they were not afraid, they wouldn't have to be brave!

60. Faith is not nothing! "Faith is the substance of things hoped for." It's knowing God & that God is, & that God is going to take care of you somehow if you obey Him & do His Will & His Work.

61. If the Word & reading the Word doesn't give you the faith for it, it is because you have rejected the Word & therefore you refuse to receive it or obey it!

62. Whenever you're in doubt, faith it!

63. You cannot stop the man of faith!

64. When in doubt don't!--But when in faith do!

65. Real faith is not a passive thing, it acts out what it believes!

66. God doesn't always give me the faith for your job--He gives me the faith for my job!

67. Trying to have faith is a work of the flesh. Accepting faith through His Word is a work of God's grace.

68. The very Words of God are mingled with supernatural power to be released by the touch of your faith.

69. The greatest love is faith. If you don't have faith, your love will be impossible.

70. Faith is not surprised at the answer. Faith expected it to happen.

71. Faith sees crowns growing on the top of crosses.

72. Faith, mighty faith,

The promise sees,

And looks to God alone,

Laughs at impossibilities,

And cries, "It shall be done!"

73. You'll never make it through the big doors without the tiny keys!

74. He didn't know it couldn't be done, so he went ahead & did it!

75. "Impossible" is a word only to be found in the dictionary of fools.

76. Faith alone saves, but the faith that saves is never alone.

77. Faith honours God, God honours faith.

78. God has confined Himself & His operations to our faith & our prayers.

79. When faith goes to market it always takes a basket.

80. The believer does not believe because he feels; he feels because he believes.

81. He started to sing

As he tackled the thing

That they said couldn't be done,

And he did it.

82. Faith must be dead to doubt, dumb to discouragement, & blind to impossibilities.

83. Faith is the pencil of the soul that sketches Heavenly things.

84. If your mind can conceive it,
 And your heart can believe it,
 Then you can achieve it.

85. Faith hears the inaudible, sees the invisible, believes the incredible, & receives the impossible.

86. He who expects nothing shall never be disappointed.

87. Three men were walking on a wall--Feeling, Faith & Fact. Feeling took an awful fall & Faith was taken aback. Faith was so close to Feeling that he then fell down too, but Fact remained & pulled Faith up, & Faith brought Feeling too. (Fact is the Word!)

88. Faith really shows that you have love.

89. "To the pure all things are pure," but to those who are impure, everything is impure!

90. Faith that cannot stand a test is no faith at all.

91. Hope looks over the fence into tomorrow, faith into the past & counts it done.

92. Living by faith means putting faith into action & feet to your prayers.

93. There is no limit to the possibilities for a man with the imagination of faith!

94. If you are weak in faith it's because you're weak in the Word.

95. Almost anything in the World can cause somebody to stumble if they're weak enough!

96. If you've got real faith you'll keep on going for God even if it kills you!--And it will kill you, because it means death to self & pride & all that damned self-righteousness as you die daily.

97. Fear is the opposite of faith, & without faith you can have no power!

98. I was just crazy enough to believe God!

99. Faith is idle when circumstances are bright; only when they are adverse is one's faith in God exercised. Faith, like a muscle, grows strong & supple with exercise.

100. Faith is not only believing that God can, but that God will!

101. He likes you to go ahead on what some people call "blind" faith--actually it's seeing faith, because you're seeing God!

102. Man cannot discover new oceans unless he has the courage to lose sight of the shore.

103. Be sure you're Spirit-led, then go ahead!

104. To the Israelites, Goliath was "too big to hit," but to little David, he was "too big to miss."

105. Any one of you can do anything you have got the burden & the faith for!--You can get out & do it yourself!

106. Just be sure you're right, then go ahead!

107. I have constantly declared a new Declaration of Independence, trying to set you at liberty, to be led of the Spirit & your own initiative to explode according to your own faith!

108. You can't always wait until God does it, a lot of times you just have to step out by faith even if you don't see the ground you're going to put your foot on! He's able to stick the ground underneath your foot before it lands!--A real step of faith!

109. If we read the Word emphatically, our faith grows automatically.

110. A lot of people don't have faith for certain things because they don't want to have faith for them, & therefore they reject the Word of God which vindicates it.

111. Lose everything but your faith in God & you'll lose nothing; Lose your faith in God & you'll lose everything!

112. Faith is insane! There's no sanity to faith. Faith is all completely contrary to natural expectation & natural conditions!

113. Faith must know nothing but success. To the believer, desire plus faith minus doubt equals the answer.

114. Don't work it up!--Pray it down!

115. "As a man thinketh in his heart, so is he."--And if he thinks so, then it has that influence or that power over him.

116. Doubt, fear, discouragement & murmuring kill! Faith, trust, courage & praising the Lord make alive!

117. I can trust God with you, but not for you!

118. Trust in the Lord with all thine heart; & lean not unto thine own understanding. In all thy ways acknowledge Him, & He shall direct thy paths. (Pro.3:5,6)

119. The fear of Man bringeth a snare: but whoso putteth his trust in the Lord shall be safe.--(Pro.29:25)

120. Today is the tomorrow you worried about yesterday.

121. You can't lean on Man's ideas & wisdom.--You have to lean on the Lord & His leadings!

122. Worry is interest paid on trouble, before it falls due.

123. He who fears calamities, suffers them twice over.

124. Worry does not empty tomorrow of its trouble. It does empty today of its strength.
 125. To carry care to bed, is to sleep with a pack on your back.
 126. Keep your face to the sunshine & you cannot see the shadow.
 127. So many take their burdens to the Lord & lay them at His feet & then pick them right back up again & walk off with them!
 128. Let go & let God!
 129. It is His Will that I should cast
 My care on Him each day,
 He also bids me not to cast
 My confidence away.

 But oh! How foolishly I act
 When taken unaware
 I cast away my confidence
 And carry all my care!
 130. Don't be so worried about the future that you can't enjoy today.
 131. Trust is never tension, true faith is complete relaxation.
 132. Just roll your burden over on Jesus & go to sleep.--And let Him stay up all night!
 133. Sleep is counted in God's Word as a blessing, an act of trust & faith in God that He will help you dwell in safety & not worry, fret or fear.
 134. The man joked, "Don't tell me that worry doesn't do any good. I know better. The things I worry about don't happen."
 135. Forget about yesterday, except to thank the Lord for it. Don't worry about tomorrow--it'll take care of itself!
 136. Everything's under control, either yours or the Lord's or both.
 137. We don't know what the Future holds, but we know Who holds the Future!
 138. You can't depend upon anything but God & His Word!
 139. You can't change the past, & the future will take care of itself!
 140. If you're obeying Him, you can trust Him! If you're trusting Him, you can obey Him!
 141. God wants you to trust Him & believe first of all, & then you'll see the answer!
 142. When you're trusting, you're not heard to fret! When you're fretting, you're not trusting yet!
 143. "Thou dost not have to see nor understand all things, neither dost thou have to know the mind of thy father nor to understand all the Words of David, for all of these things which I have ordained are already in My hands & are finished."
 144. If there's anything I know, it is that God has never failed, & I've always been glad I trusted Him.
 145. You don't have to know the whole future. All you have to know is right now.
 146. There's no need to worry about things in advance, because when the time comes the Lord tells you exactly what to do.
 147. Don't worry one minute in advance about anything, just flow with it as the Spirit leads you.
 148. Forget the things that are behind, & fret not thyself for tomorrow, are two of God's cardinal rules for eliminating most of your worries!
 149. The less self-confidence you have, the more Christ-confidence you'll have!
 150. You must continually remind yourself that everything in your life comes from God!--All past & present experiences, all relationships with others in which you find yourself, & all circumstances are straight from His hand & are part of His divine plan. If you know that He has sent them, it makes them easier to accept.
 151. If you lean mostly on the means & the man instead of the Maker, you'll soon be in a mess!
 152. If you can trust Him with your life, why can't you trust Him with your death?
 153. Welcome, New Year, which shall bring,
 Fresh blessings from our Lord & King.
 154. You can't change the past, but you can ruin a perfectly good present by worrying about the future.
 155. Some will hate thee, some will love thee,
 Some will flatter, some will slight,
 Turn from Man & look above thee,
 Trust in God & do the right.
 156. Never doubt for a moment
 That God will reply,

He has to, He wants to,
Trust Him, He can't lie!

Just keep on trusting
When things go all wrong
And you'll soon shout the victory
And sing His new song.

157. Trust, in the dark, brings Triumph at dawn.

158. Worry is the interest paid by those who borrow trouble.

159. Work won't kill but worry will.

160. An ulcer is what you get mountain-climbing over molehills.

161. All I have seen teaches me to trust the Creator for all I have not seen.

162. You have no guarantee but God.

163. Depend on the Spirit, because everything does depend on His Spirit to make it what He wants it to be!

164. When the time comes, the Lord will take care of us as He sees fit: He'll either take care of us or take us, one or the other!

165. We ask Thee to give us a New Year now, even better than the last one, Lord, in whatever way You know is best.

166. At the end of your rope?--Let go & let God!--Just can't cope?--Take God's dope!

167. Time solves so many problems--a minute, a few hours, a few days, & you'll find that God has solved things without your help! Give God a chance! Give Him time! Wait on the Lord.

168. Disappointment!--His-appointment!

Change one letter, then I see
That the thwarting of my purpose
Is God's better choice for me!

169. You can't say to someone, "I love you, but I don't trust you."

170. Hope never quits, faith never stops trusting & love never fails.

171. Fret not thyself for tomorrow.

172. I came to the man at the gate of the year
And asked of him a light that I might see my way.

But he said unto me, "Put your hand in the hand of God

And He shall be unto thee a light

And better than a known way."

173. If you're down in the dumps, then dump it on Jesus!

174. Are you on the spot? Turn around & put God on the spot.

175. God gives you power for the hour, grace for the trial--at the hour & when it comes--not before!

176. Never put a question mark where God has put a period.

177. Don't worry!--It's God's Word! It doesn't matter whether you understand it or not, as long as you eat it up. You have to have food even if you don't understand. Does a baby understand the chemical constituency in vitamins & the technical scientific constitution of every bite of food that she eats? No, she's just hungry, she gobbles it up & it makes her grow.

178. The more we depend on Him each day,
The more we'll have in every way!

179. Forget trying to explain it! Quit trying to understand it! Stop trying to diagnose it! Cease analysing it! You're just making hard work out of all the fun! Just turn it on & enjoy it!

180. There have been mountain peaks of decision with nothing but thin air between me & the next peak & I had to take that step alone & trust God for the consequences, with no guarantee but God, no warranty but His Word, all other conditions being against it, all natural circumstances being opposed to it, the waves & the winds fighting against it & all I had was the Hand of God. But He never let me down even if He had to pick me up by that hand & lift me across to that next mountain peak without any visible natural normal logical reasonable means of help.

181. Faith is a definite transaction, at a definite time, forever afterwards counted done.

182. Hope isn't faith. Hope is putting a thing in the future; faith is putting it in the past.

183. People who live within God's Golden Gates of Faith can survive anything, even death!--And can still say like Job, "Though He slay me, yet will I trust Him!"

184. Through His Word, God can blow upon the embers of your faith, bringing it back to life again, when you're down & discouraged & have almost given up hope.

185. There are those of trusting child-like faith who are daily doing things that doubting intellectuals say can't be done!

186. Life's yesterdays have passed forever beyond our reach. God has them in His keeping, leave them there.

187. I never look at the cheque, I look at the man! If I can trust the man, I take his cheque!

188. Look at the Maker of the promises, then there can be no question as to the validity of the promises.

189. If you'll trust Him, He can make melody out of one string!--Even if the others are all gone.

190. You can have faith for almost anything if you take it a day at a time!

191. These are the keys that unlock the treasure vaults of Heaven: Meeting the conditions attached to each promise.

192. Oh, how many silly children has the Father in His family, crying year in & year out, "Give, give!" & the Father is all the while saying, "Take, take, my child!"

193. Faith will not make the sun rise sooner, but it will make the night seem shorter.

194. We are not travelling by schedule but by faith.

195. The beginning of anxiety is the end of faith. The beginning of faith is the end of anxiety.

196. A sceptical young man went home from a theological school to visit his devout grandmother. "Grandmother," he said, "you know that the Bible you say you believe in, was written in Hebrew & Greek. It had to be translated by great scholars into our language. How do you know those who translated it got it right?"

"Ah, Jamie, lad," she answered, "Never mind the great men; I have translated a few of them promises myself."

197. "Happy is he that condemneth not himself in that thing which he allows." (Rom.14:22)--It'll make you happier if you're not doing things which you feel condemned about, about which you feel guilty or have a guilt complex, things that you're not sure are right. In fact, if you're afraid maybe it's wrong, then it is wrong for you.

198. It pays to trust the Lord, amen?--Even to obey when it looks like it's crazy or it's going to hurt. It might hurt a little while, but you always come out better in the end if you obey the Lord.

199. Faith & prayer are the coinage of Heaven.

200. God has not only promised us supernatural power, but He's promised it for now & He has promised it for ages, & it's been done before! It can not only be done in the Tribulation, but it can be done now if you have the faith for it & you need it!

201. If you pray & the miracle doesn't immediately happen, you shouldn't get discouraged. Because if it's the Lord's will, you do have that power & it will happen in the Lord's time.

202. If the Lord doesn't show you what's going to happen, it doesn't mean you're supposed to stop working. Sometimes it means keep right on doing what you're doing, keep busy, keep working--but wait! Don't make any drastic moves or changes, except perhaps some little ones in order that when it happens you won't be caught short or unprepared.

203. Sometimes a wrong decision on the part of your Home Shepherd may be the Lord testing you to see how you'll react.--Whether you'll get all upset or whether you'll just trust the Lord to take care of it somehow, knowing that He won't let anything drastic happen to His Work that He's more concerned about than you are. Maybe He's trying to see if you really believe Romans 8:28.

204. When you worry about things that you're afraid are going to happen, but haven't happened & may never happen, you're not even giving God a chance to work it out. Why don't you just leave things in the Lord's hands & let Him work it out?

205. Faith is to believe what we do not see; & the reward of this faith to see what we believe.

(See also No. M, T, 73, 87, 238, 313, 317B, 594, 599, 604, 700, 708, 717, 731, 778, 860, 900, 947, 1005, 1009, 1268, 1281, 1565, 1654.)

206. .27:13 I had fainted, unless I had believed to see the goodness of the Lord in the land of the living.

207. .31:24 Be of good courage, and He shall strengthen your heart, all ye that hope in the Lord.

208. .32:10 Many sorrows shall be to the wicked: but he that trusteth in the Lord, mercy shall compass him about.

209. .37:3-5 Trust in the Lord, and do good; so shalt thou dwell in the land, and verily thou shalt be fed. Delight thyself also in the Lord; and He shall give thee the desires of thine heart. Commit thy way unto the Lord; trust also in Him; and He shall bring it to pass.

210. **PSA.125:1 They that trust in the Lord shall be as Mount Zion, which cannot be removed, but abideth for ever.**

211. PRO.3:5,6 Trust in the Lord with all thine heart; and lean not unto thine own understanding. In all thy ways acknowledge Him, and He shall direct thy paths.

212. PRO.16:20b Whoso trusteth in the Lord, happy is he.

213. .30:5b He is a shield unto them that put their trust in Him.

214. .26:4. Trust ye in the LORD for ever: for in the LORD JEHOVAH is everlasting strength.

215. .41:18b I will make the wilderness a pool of water, and the dry land springs of water.

216. .43:19b I will even make a way in the wilderness, and rivers in the desert.

217. JER.17:7 Blessed is the man that trusteth in the LORD, and whose hope the LORD is.

218. .28:26 And they shall dwell safely therein, and shall build houses, and plant vineyards; yea, they shall dwell with confidence, when I have executed judgments upon all those that despise them round about them; and they shall know that I am the LORD their God.

219. MAT.9:29b According to your faith be it unto you.

220. .14:31 And immediately Jesus stretched forth his hand, and caught him, and said unto him, O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt?

221. .15:28 Then Jesus answered and said unto her, O woman, great is thy faith: be it unto thee even as thou wilt.

222. .17:20b If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place; and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you.

223. 9:23,24 Jesus said unto him, If thou canst believe, all things are possible to him that believeth. And straightway the father of the child cried out, and said with tears, Lord, I believe; help thou mine unbelief.

224. MARK 11:22,23 And Jesus answering saith unto them, Have faith in God. For verily I say unto you, That whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that those things which he saith shall come to pass; he shall have whatsoever he saith.

225. LUK.1:37 For with God nothing shall be impossible.

226. .1:45 And blessed is she that believed: for there shall be a performance of those things which were told her from the Lord.

227. .5:5 And Simon answering said unto him, Master, we have toiled all the night, and have taken nothing: nevertheless at thy Word I will let down the net.

228. .7:9 When Jesus heard these things, He marvelled at him, and turned him about, and said unto the people that followed Him, I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel.

229. .7:50 And He said to the woman, Thy faith hath saved thee; go in peace.

230. LUK.18:27 And He said, The things which are impossible with men are possible with God.

231. .11:21,22,27 Then said Martha unto Jesus, Lord, if Thou hadst been here, my brother had not died. But I know, that even now, whatsoever Thou wilt ask of God, God will give it Thee. I believe that Thou art the Christ, the Son of God, which should come into the world.

232. .20:27b Be not faithless, but believing.

233. .20:29 Jesus saith unto him, Thomas, because thou hast seen Me, thou hast believed: blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed.

234. .27:25 I believe God, that it shall be even as it was told me.

235. .1:8 First, I thank my God through Jesus Christ for you all, that your faith is spoken of throughout the whole World.

236. .1:17 For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, The just shall live by faith.

237. ROM.3:3 For what if some did not believe? Shall their unbelief make the faith of God without effect?

238. .4:14,15 For if they which are of the law be heirs, faith is made void, and the promise made of none effect: Because the law worketh wrath: for where no law is, there is no transgression.

239. .4:18. Who against hope believed in hope, that he [Abraham] might become the father of many nations, according to that which was spoken, So shall thy seed be.

240. .4:20,21 He staggered not at the promise of God through unbelief; but was strong in faith, giving glory to God; And being fully persuaded that, what He had promised, He was able also to perform.

241. .5:1 Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ.

242. .8:24,25 For we are saved by hope: but hope that is seen is not hope: for what a man seeth, why doth he yet hope for? But if we hope for that we see not, then do we with patience wait for it.

243. .10:17 So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the Word of God.

244. ROM.14:5,14 One man esteemeth one day above another: another esteemeth every day alike.

Let every man be fully persuaded in his own mind. To him that esteemeth any thing to be unclean, to him it is unclean.

245. .14:22,23 Hast thou faith? Have it to thyself before God. Happy is he that condemneth not himself in that thing which he alloweth. And he that doubteth is damned if he eat, because he eateth not of faith: for whatsoever is not of faith is sin.

246. CO.2:5 That your faith should not stand in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God.

247. CO.12:9 To another faith by the same Spirit; to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit.

248. CO.1:24 Not for that we have dominion over your faith, but are helpers of your joy: for by faith ye stand.

249. 2CO.5:7 For we walk by faith, not by sight.

250. .5:6 For in Jesus Christ neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision; but faith which worketh by love.

251. TI.4:10 For therefore we both labour and suffer reproach, because we trust in the Living God, Who is the Saviour of all men, specially of those that believe.

252. TI.2:13 If we believe not, yet He abideth faithful: He cannot deny Himself.

253. HEB.6:19 Which hope we have as an anchor of the soul, both sure and steadfast, and which entereth into that within the veil.

254. HEB.10:23 Let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering; (for He is faithful that promised;).

255. HEB.10:38 Now the just shall live by faith: but if any man draw back, My soul shall have no pleasure in him.

256. .2:26 For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also.

257. JO.5:4 For whatsoever is born of God overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the World, even our faith.

(See also HEB.11.)



A faithful man shall abound with blessings. (Pro.28:20)

1. Faithful people are people who are full of faith.
2. God gives us the basics
Be they body, brain or brawn,
Then looks at how we use'em
And how we're adding on!
3. A little thing is a little thing, but faithfulness in little things is a great thing.
4. Everyone who got where he is had to begin where he was.
5. How can somebody steal your crown?--They can't unless you despise it & leave it to somebody else. If you're unfaithful in your task, God has to replace you.
6. Time is the greatest & surest tester.
7. For they that bear the cross shall wear the crown.
8. If you'll be faithful in delivering God's Words to the World, He will be faithful in caring for you!
9. The more the Lord finds He can trust you with, the more He gives you.
10. It's better to be faithful in a few things than be unfaithful in a whole lot of them!
11. God can't trust some people with health or wealth or popularity or sexual freedom because they're not good stewards of it.--They're unfaithful.
12. Change the World, day by day
You can do it if you pray.
Change the World, heart by heart
You can do it if you'll start.
13. You take care of God's work, & He'll take care you.
14. God doesn't judge you by how successful you are, but by how faithful you are.
15. He that is unfaithful in the least will also be unfaithful in the most.
16. To be "found faithful" means loyal, believing & obedient!
17. The Kingdom of God on Earth will be a perfect kingdom, a perfect government, with perfect officers--you! You're going to run it! You want to be a policeman? You want to be a governor? You want to be a judge?--All kinds of jobs are wide open! You want to be a king? God's Word says He's the King of kings so you can be one of His kings, you can rule a city or a whole country or a whole continent, whatever you are capable of, according to the training you've already had & according to your faithfulness & your loyalty to God while you were here! He says, "He that is faithful in a few things, I will make Him ruler over many!" You want to run the World? Well, be faithful unto death & He'll give you a crown & you'll be a king, the Bible says so.
18. Help us, Lord, to remember that the most important thing in our service for Thee, the most important thing in the World for us, the most important thing to Thee, is our faithfulness.
19. This is no game we're playing! We are in a War for the Lord & His Family & His World, & once you have done a good job where you are & learned how to serve the Lord faithfully & loyally & obediently & willingly & cheerfully, He is going to give you something more & bigger to do.
20. You should never stop thinking!--And never stop praying for a minute! We can't afford to have soldiers in this army that don't think & don't know what they're doing & can't remember a command from one moment to the next!

(See also No.395, 551, 565, 639, 679, 697, 702, 703, 835, 952-1, 960, 962, 974, 1028, 1330, 1372, 1373, 1380.)

21. .6:17 Ye shall diligently keep the commandments of the Lord your God, and His testimonies, and His statutes, which He hath commanded thee.

22. .6:3 And I sent messengers unto them, saying, I am doing a great work, so that I cannot come down: why should the work cease, whilst I leave it, and come down to you?

23. .31:23 O love the Lord, all ye His saints: for the Lord preserveth the faithful, and plentifully rewardeth the proud doer.

24. **PRO.4:23** Keep thy heart with all diligence; for out of it are the issues of life.

25. .12:24 The hand of the diligent shall bear rule: But the slothful shall be under tribute.

26. **MAT.24:45-47** **Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his lord hath made ruler over his household, to give them meat in due season? Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing. Verily I say unto you, That he shall make him ruler over all his goods.**

27. .25:23 His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful servant; thou has been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy Lord.

28. .16:10-12 He that is faithful in that which is least is faithful also in much: and he that is unjust in the least is unjust also in much. If therefore ye have not been faithful in the unrighteous mammon, who will commit to your trust the true riches? And if ye have not been faithful in that which is another man's, who shall give you that which is your own?

29. **TIM.4:14** Neglect not the gift that is in thee, which was given thee by prophecy, with the laying on of the hands of the presbytery.

(See also MAT.24:42-51; MAT.25:14-23.)



God setteth the solitary in families. He bringeth out those which are bound with chains (Ps.68:6).

1. We belong to no man but Jesus, but we can become anything to all men. We have no creed but love, and we can adapt ourselves to all creeds.
2. Keep it small! Keep it pure! Keep it strong!
3. We spearheaded the Jesus movement--and without us there wouldn't have been one!
4. We've hitched our wagon to a Star, the bright & Morning Star, the Star of David, Jesus Christ Himself, & we're really going places faster than the speed of light into realms beyond natural human ken!
5. We are the busy bouncy buxom bride bursting bearing babies to our Bridegroom!
6. We're getting closer & closer all the time to really being well-knit & well-prepared, like an army constantly being trained for the final real test.
7. We are Christian mystics--"mystic" meaning that you believe in the supernatural & the miraculous & you practice it in your religion--& we do!
8. We are a strictly nonprofit religious, educational & philanthropic charitable Family bent only on improving the spirits, health, living conditions, education, social welfare, security, happiness & future of all mankind!
9. We're just as diametrically opposed to the false religious systems that control the World as the Communists are to the Capitalists!
10. The major difference between us and the churches, is that we are not mere members--we're fulltime fighters!
11. My family, my family, I know it's right, my family!
12. We are all married to each other in His Love!
13. We can be God's children in any country under any Government with any religion! We are the most ecumenical body on the face of the earth!
14. Movement is a sign of life. That's why they call us a movement!
15. I couldn't change society, I couldn't change the rules, so I created a whole new society where I could have my own rules!--God's rules!
16. Our Family is a demonstration that has proven that you can take people completely raw, straight out of the World with no religious background & make them into real genuine 100% Christians & workers for the Lord!
17. The Lord is reviving His original message through us and others in these last days.
18. We are a Government!
19. We're probably one of the most important tools of the Lord there is today to try to wake people up & keep them awake & keep the sheep fed & keep the goats out & get out the message, so naturally the Devil is going to fight us!
20. If you like my religion, you're welcome to it! I feel like the Lord has led us to adopt the best that each of these other religions had to offer!
21. There's no difference between blacks & whites in the Family, in Jesus, but there's a hell of a lot of difference outside!
22. Our Family: When right, to be kept right; when wrong, to be put right.
23. We are all soul brothers--a Nation all of one blood, the blood of Jesus--the Kingdom of God!
24. They say not everybody can be a preacher or a teacher or a missionary--except in our Family, of course! We're all teachers, preachers & missionaries!

25. We've got a do-it-yourself religion! We don't need any backing except faith & trusting God! That's why we're doing so much, we can do anything through faith in Him!

26. We are the living church of the living God, not the white-washed sepulchres of the dead!

27. We belong to the greatest Family in the World, the Family of God's love!

28. God's children were intended to be a voluntary family fellowship, cooperating together in love, each of his own free will.

29. We all need to belong to something, to feel like we're a part of something, to be a team, to belong to each other, to be a Family, to be related, to have fellowship, communication, communion & sharing all things.

30. There's no unimportant job in the Family!

31. The whole structure of any house or any government or organisation or religious movement rests on these two key central pillars: The will of God & the will of man. If they get the least bit out of line with each other & begin to be at cross-purposes with each other, watch out!

32. Lo, the Rebellion of David echoes round the World!

33. The Lord has brought His people step by step out of bondage!--We are the first truly free church--totally free spiritually, physically, sexually, in every way, in love!

34. We are God's last Church, the last step in God's progress toward total freedom!--The last chance to prove that the ultimate Church can be trusted with total freedom in this last generation!

35. That's what God is doing with us right now throughout the World: Infiltrating the whole World...so that He will have a ready-made organisation for running the World when Jesus comes!

36. God is in the business of breaking up selfish little private Worldly families, to make of their yielded broken pieces a larger unit--One Family!

37. We are the most powerful force of God on Earth! For we are the voice of God & bear His truth, & Satan hateth it but he cannot help it.

38. As the new babe must believe & trust the loved ones around him for his every need as he grows, until he is able to care for himself & then others, so must the newborn Christian trust his spiritual family of loved ones & their leadership in the Family of God.

39. Never in the World's history has so much been accomplished for the Lord by so few!

40. The best eyes a missionary movement can have: Evangelise, organise, supervise & be wise!

41. Our Homes offer infinite variety & adequate opportunity, so there should be no problem in finding something for everyone!

42. Belonging to this Family is a privilege & a blessing & an honour!--And anybody that dishonours this Family doesn't deserve to be a Member!

43. We're a monstrous Movement on the move.

44. A Nation has exploded in a day & the fall-out is saturating the World with the Gospel!

45. Our is one of the largest folds, for we've won many millions of souls!

46. We have a religion you can live anywhere!

47. No great movement, no great war, no great denomination, no great revolution, no great business, no great anything that has ever amounted to anything in this world was without some leadership & some organization. But the most successful of those were those who allowed the greatest liberty, difference of opinion, individual initiative & ingenuity & ingenuity--who put the people on their own as much as possible.

48. We belong to the Kingdom of Heaven that's already on Earth in our hearts & our Homes & our families & our children!

49. We believe in a sort of democratic from of dictatorship but it's still dictatorship.--Of the Holy Ghost!

50. He has raised up His new church, a young Bride, bursting with energy & a passionate love for her Bridegroom!--An alive, vibrant, warm, living, beautiful body that responds quickly, fervently & ardently to His slightest touch & who is wildly ravished with His love! she is exploding with the orgasms of His Spirit & strong to conceive many children unto Him from being fulfilled with the seed of His Word!

51. "And not one thing shall fail from all of these good promises that I have given unto My Servant David! If thou shalt believe & take hold & grasp upon them & hold them unto thy bosom, then indeed shalt thou be the sons of David & be called his mighty men, & it shall be written & told of thee the mighty works that thou shalt do as the children of God & the seed of David, & men everywhere shall speak of thee & tell of that which thou hast done."

52. "If thou shalt obey in all of the least of these things which I have given thee, & not fail in all of those things I have revealed to My Servant David, then shall I also fulfill unto thee all those things which I have foretold of thee & give thee all I have promised, according to My Word; & then shalt thou also be that which I have spoken of in My Word according to My Prophet David--according to the Words of the mouth that has spoken & the words

that are told, & according to the Words of My Mouth which have become a testimony before them & have become a witness against them. For that is My Word & My promise unto thee."

53. "For these are indeed My people & they shall be called the Children of God! Many shall come unto them, & say, Teach us the ways of the Lord, for we would inquire of thee. And they shall cast their idols of gold & silver unto the moles & bats within the clefts & holes of the rocks! For none shall stand in those days, but the words of My servants, the words of My prophets, & the words of those that I have given unto David. For they shall indeed be a great people, & a great Nation upon the face of the Earth, & shall overthrow all other nations. For this is My Kingdom, & the king of whom I spake--the Kingdom that I have prepared for Myself through the work & children of My Servant David! Hear ye him!"

54. "These indeed are the Words that are spoken unto David! How much did Moses & the prophets write unto thee! For they would have seen this day. But thou art blessed above all peoples on the face of the Earth, & thou art blessed above all nations of all times, for all of these things are fulfilled in thee, O My Beloved!"

55. "For behold, He speaketh unto thee words of love & comfort that He may life up thy heart--that He may feed thy soul--that He may encourage thy spirit--that thou mayest serve Him continually both by day & by night!--For thou art of the Children of David."

56. "For thou art indeed they of whom I spake. Thou art indeed the last Nation upon the face of the Earth, & thou art indeed My king whom the Lord thy God hath chosen to dwell in--the Lord thy God hath been pleased to dwell in thee! They that put their trust in Him shall never be put to shame. Therefore, I am not ashamed to be called their God, for thou art a chosen people, & thou shalt bring great honour unto My name. Thou shalt cause many nations to turn unto the Lord thy God!--Even the hearts of their fathers unto thee--& their children that do worship Me shall drink & be satisfied!"

57. "Even so shall it be done unto thy Servant David according to all I have spoken, & thou shalt share with him the Kingdom, & sit with him upon thrones judging all the tribes of Israel!"

58. "None have the power & the spirit of the Children of David! Listen to the Voice of David! None shall stop us, for God is with us!...How the Lord hath favoured these people with the presence of His Children--because He loves them!... Nothing can equal the power of God in His Children!...All these things come to pass because I the Lord have spoken it & brought it to pass through My Servant David, for I the Lord have spoken it! None of these things could take place if I, by My Spirit, had not empowered My Servant David!...Their line is gone out through all the World, & their words to the ends of the Earth! So it is with the Voice of the Children of God!...For I have spoken it by My Voice! Amen!"

59. "All the forces of both Heaven & Hell are in favour of David & his children! Nothing can stand against them!"

60. "Great & mighty kings shall seek unto thee, because they know the favour of the Lord is on thy side, for I shall highly exalt thee, for thou art My People, for thou hast sought a City, an Heavenly place! Thou hast sought a country that shall not be here on the Earth but Eternal in the Heavenlies, & therefore, thou shalt have the favour of thy Lord & thy King & thou shalt have My favour, for, behold!--The Lord is with thee & thy Saviour Jesus Christ is upon thy right hand & thou shalt not fail. It is impossible!"

61. "And all these I have brought unto thee--advocates, judges, & kings! And powers & dominions shall be given unto thee through all the Earth, for thou art indeed My Children & I am thy God!"

62. "For thou art the peacemakers of this Earth, & except they recognise Me as their King & their Prince of Peace, they shall have no peace! For I am the Lord thy God & thou art the Children of God!"

63. "So shall the followers of David be numbered by not thousands or tens of thousands, but by the millions, as those that follow the Lord their God! And the followers of Saul are as nothing but fleas that thou shalt crush if it be thy will! For I shall dispose of those that stand up against thee & thy power, because I am with thee & thou art My Children & I do love thee with an everlasting love!"

64. "Thou shalt hear him & heed him & take heed unto the word of My Servant David & king of kings I have given thee, that thou shalt honour & highly exalt & listen to him, that thou shalt be honoured of the Lord thy God! Many are the wonderful works of the Lord!"

65. "Thou dost take over the nations! Kings do bow down before thee & I do open the doors of all the nations of the Earth, for they cannot resist the power of thy spirit nor can they refuse the love of thy heart. For they shall yield unto thee every one & open their hearts unto thee & open their hands unto thy needs, & their mouths shall speak forth the wonderful Words of the Lord. For they shall receive thee unto their bosoms as the little lambs of My fold, & they shall nourish thee, & kings shall serve thee & queens shall minister unto thee, & thou shalt suck at the paps of the Most High!"

66. "And yea also shalt thou suffer for Me! Yea, also shalt thou be crucified for My Name's Sake! Yea, also shalt thou be slain all the day long. Also shalt thou be slain for the words of David & smitten for all that I have spoken through him!"

67. "In the end shalt thou triumph over them, for they shall be dust & ashes under thy feet, for thou shalt reign victorious over all the Earth & thou shalt forget the hinder years & remember only that which is called the glorious, golden Age that I given thee--the Age of all ages!"

68. "Thou dost hearken unto the words of David that thou mayst live! Blessed are all they that do follow him! Blessed are ye, the sheep of My pasture! Blessed are ye, the lambs of My fold! Blessed are ye indeed, the little ones of My bosom, even as these that do gather unto David, & these that do rest in his love, & these that are blessed by his arms!"

69. "For they cry unto Me & call upon Me in their distress & their hunger, for they are as sheep having no shepherd & they are scattered abroad throughout all the Earth."

70. "Therefore, I have given them a shepherd that shall guide them into the fold of the True Shepherd."

71. "My Voice shall they heed through My Servant David! For My sheep hear My Voice & know My Voice, & they follow Me, & the Voice of the stranger they will not follow."

72. "Ye indeed are they upon whom the ends of the Earth are come. Ye indeed are they of whom all the prophets have spoken. Ye are My witnesses of the Last Day of whom I have spoken throughout the Ages by all My holy prophets. Ye indeed are they that shall be strong & that shall do great & mighty exploits & shall instruct many in the ways of Truth & shall open the Book by My mighty power by the wisdom of My Spirit & shall reveal these secrets unto others."

73. "The rebellion of David is exploding throughout all the Earth! The armies of David that I have promised to march abroad, the things that I have promised unto David I have fulfilled & every word shall be fulfilled & every thing that I have promised shall be done!"

74. "Listen to the words that I have spoken unto thy Father David. Heed that which I have said unto thee through his mouth. This Royal Family that God hath chosen from out of this horrible chaos is going to rule the World! Know ye not that ye shall judge angels?"

75. "Haste therefore to perform the Will of My King David, that thou shalt not be slothful, but be diligent in business & depart, & carry abroad the wisdom of his people! For this is the Nation wherein I have desired to place My name, & this is the people I spake of through all the Prophets of all times!"

76. "All the World is burgeoning with the stories of the Children of David!"

77. "These are the fruits of their father David. This is the glory of the reward of your father, that he may enjoy the sight of his children. This is the reward of thy father, this is the joy of thy father, this is the fruit of the Words of thy father. These are they which I have called unto the Family of your father that they may shine in My glory for Me!"

78. "Behold, how I did break the heart of David & cause his tears to flow for thee, My little lambs."

79. "They that follow Me & hear My voice, & they that savour My fragrance & see those things which I show them, they are the Children of David!"

80. "For thou art My People for this Last Day, & I am with thee, even as I was with My servant Moses to separate My children from Egypt & to lead them into the Promised Land--My Kingdom which is not of this earth--but is heavenly!"

81. "Oh, behold how they watch with joy the words & the deeds of thy father & his children!"

82. The Lord has brought you into something that is glorious & wonderful & really a revival of the marvels of the past, even more so! He has poured out such a stream of the Word! I am astonished, I'm amazed, I'm awed at how much God has given this generation! He has given you more than any other generation!--Perhaps because you've suffered more & some are going to suffer more, so He's really loving you & trying to encourage you!

83. My Country is trying to save the World, stop the wars, relieve the poor, feed the hungry, heal the sick & liberate the captives that are bound by countries like America!

84. I don't know of so small a group in all World history that has done so much!

85. Indigenuity means self-supporting, self-governing & self-propagating!

86. In our Family, becoming one should work both ways!

87. We have the recognition of the Kingdom of God & that's the only Government we need to be recognised by.

88. Although this is the Army of Lord, & we observe strict discipline, it is voluntarily, willing-spiritedly, & cheerfully given, not forced labour or slavery. The Lord loveth a cheerful giver! (2Co.9:7.)

89. We have taught our Homes to be independent, self-governing, self-propagating & self-supporting--truly indigenous, so that they will not be totally dependent on higher leadership.

90. The Revolution was a miracle, our whole Family is a miracle, & the fact that we're still here & still going is a miracle!

91. This Family is Thy creation, Lord, Thy work, & we're Thy people, this is Thy Church, this is Thy doing, & it is great in our eyes!

92. The nine principal necessities for the success of our Family are the right kind of foundation, message, personnel, methods, organisation, communication, stats, security & support.

93. The Family lives a tough hard soldier's life where everybody works day & night & does anything they're told, anytime they're told, does anything that has to be done no matter what their plans were.

94. Sex has probably been the greatest differentiation between us & the average Christian & Christian group & probably the thing for which we are condemned the most, criticised the most, & about which they are horrified the most.

95. We are called out of every nation & religion on the face of the Earth to become one nation, one people under God, & not just under Him, but in Him.

96. The Lord called you out of the mass of humanity because He knew you were ripe & ready & hungry & needy & He loved you & needed His Love & here you are.

97. In this last generation the Lord wanted a really pure Church that had never been a part of any other church & was not a mere split-off of some other kind of religion, but He wanted to get us back to the real original religion, completely liberated & completely free, not tied or bound by any other group or religion, so He drew you out of the hills & the valleys & the hidden places & sent out searchers to find you everywhere! Isn't that wonderful? -What a miracle of God in this Last Day.

98. The Lord certainly designed our religion, & I believe it's the original religion, the religion of God Himself & the Lord Jesus Christ & His Holy Spirit. Other people think we're a very progressive, even too advanced type of religion, but actually we're sort of a throw-back to the early one.

99. We are back almost to the pure state of Adam & Eve in the Garden, in direct communication with God & pure freedom physically, spiritually, in every way to enjoy Paradise & all the wonderful things & pleasures that God has given us, His whole Creation!

(See also No.C, G, S, 23, 83, 89, 94, 96, 100, 128, 148, 155, 172, 174, 179, 585, 589, 590, 600, 657, 658, 716, 748, 752, 754, 756, 766, 770, 771, 773, 800, 868, 877, 1099, 1335, 1336, 1355, 1366, 1368, 1398, 1514, 1534, 1592, 1598, *BOR II.*)

100. .20:26 And ye shall be holy unto Me: for I the Lord am holy, and have severed you from other people, that ye should be Mine.

101. .26:12 And I will walk among you, and will be your God, and ye shall be My people.

102. .4:7 For what nation is there so great, who hath God so nigh unto them, as the Lord our God is in all things that we call upon Him for?

103. .7:7,8 The Lord did not set His love upon you, nor choose you, because ye were more in number than any people; for ye were the fewest of all people: But because the Lord loved you, and because He would keep the oath which He had sworn unto your fathers, hath the Lord brought you out with a mighty hand, and redeemed you out of the house of bondmen, from the hand of Pharaoh King of Egypt.

104. **DEU.14:2 For thou art an holy people unto the Lord thy God, and the Lord hath chosen thee to be a peculiar people unto Himself, above all the nations that are upon the Earth.**

105. **.26:18,19 The Lord hath avouched thee this day to be His peculiar people, as He hath promised thee, and that thou shouldest keep all His commandments; And to make thee high above all nations which He hath made, in praise, and in name, and in honour; and that thou mayest be an holy people unto the Lord thy God, as He hath spoken.**

106. **.28:9,10 The Lord shall establish thee an holy people unto Himself, as He hath sworn unto thee, if thou shalt keep the commandments of the Lord thy God, and walk in His way. And all people of the Earth shall see that thou art called by the name of the Lord.**

107. **CH.15:2 The Lord is with you, while ye be with Him; and if ye seek Him, He will be found of you.**

108. **.8:7 Though thy beginning was small, yet thy latter end should greatly increase.**

109. **.68:6 God setteth the solitary in families: He bringeth out those which are bound with chains: but the rebellious dwell in a dry land.**

110. **PSA.68:13 Though ye have lien among the pots, yet shall ye be as the wings of a dove covered with silver, and her feathers with yellow gold.**

111. .85:10-12 Mercy and truth are met together; righteousness and peace have kissed each other. Truth shall spring out of the Earth; and righteousness shall look down from Heaven. Yea, the Lord shall give that which is good; and our land shall yield her increase.

112. ISA.60:22 A little one shall become a thousand, & a small one a strong nation: I the Lord will hasten it in His time.

113. ISA.62:3 Thou shalt also be a crown of glory in the hand of the Lord, and a royal diadem in the hand of thy God.

114. .1:5 Before I formed thee in the belly I knew thee; and before thou camest forth out of the womb I sanctified thee, and I ordained thee a prophet unto the nations.

115. JER.13:11 That they might be unto Me for a people, and for name, and for a praise, and for a glory.

116. MAT.13:17 For verily I say unto you, That many prophets and righteous men have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them.

117. .12:4,5 For as we have many members in one body, and all members have not the same office: So we, being many, are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another.

118. PE.2:9 But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of Him Who hath called you out of darkness into His marvellous light.

(See also DEU.7:6-9; ISA.43:18-21; ISA.55:1-22; ISA.60:1-21; EZE.34:23-31.)

34. FASTING --{page 281}--



So we fasted & besought our God for this: & He was intreated of us (Ezra 8:23).

1. The whole idea of fasting is to give you more time to pray, to show God you're really in earnest & you're really concerned & willing to give up a little food & a little time to give more time for prayer.

2. Fast foods for fast days is fasting enough for us!

3. To me, genuine fasting is when you'd rather do something else than eat.

4. One has more power in the spirit when fasting & praying, due to one's complete devotion & concentration on the subject & on the Lord & on His will & His work, uninterrupted by food or taking time to eat.

5. Fasting saves time--to do things more important than eating.

6. What I call real genuine fasting is when you are so busy either witnessing or feeding on the Word that you don't have time to stop to eat.

7. Fasting helps you devote more of your time to the Lord & His work & others & less of your time to selfish interests & physical pursuits & unnecessary work.

8. I believe in fasting but I don't believe it earns you anything. What God gives He gives, it's a gift. It may do you good to keep your body under subjection, to sacrifice physical desires, to crucify the flesh, but it doesn't earn you spiritual power, which is a gift of God. It doesn't earn you salvation, which is a gift of God. It doesn't earn you healing, which is also a gift of God, except it might help with what's wrong with you--maybe you eat too much.

9. Keep it liquid, just to remind you that this is the day you're supposed to be denying yourself a little bit to give you a little more time for prayer & Bible study & fellowship.

10. I've always advocated that the only good logical reason for fasting & not eating is because you have something more important to do, & that you just don't have time to either eat or to stop to prepare to eat because you're too busy doing something else.

11. Both religiously & medically, fasting has been known to be effective, reaping not only spiritual but physical benefits.

12. If you can run by the kitchen & throw something in your mouth, we probably won't consider that you've fallen from grace. Maybe that's more grace, because you had more faith & you're not just abiding by law! In Gideon's army it wasn't the amount they drank that they were judged by, it was how fast they drank it & how prepared they were for the Enemy!

13. The whole idea is this: What are you putting first? If you get so involved with household tasks & meals & gluttony & physical needs that you don't have enough time to give to the Lord & prayer, then you need to fast a little bit! You need to deny yourself a little bit to really remind yourself to put the Lord & His Work first.

14. A lot of us fast a little bit every day! We're so busy serving the Lord we just don't have time to fiddle around & eat a lot!

15. Do some fasting instead of feasting!

16. The whole idea of Fast Day is not that there's so much virtue in fasting; you're not earning merit & God's not going to answer your prayers better if you fast; the idea is that you want to do something more important than spending all that time cooking & eating & washing dishes.

17. I don't believe in fasting just for fasting's sake or like it's earning merit, like the Orientals & like some Christians teach, but I believe in fasting for a purpose--to give you more time & more concentration for study or prayer or fellowship or whatever it is. It's putting food & meals in a minor place & putting the most important things first & giving the Lord more of your time.

(See also No.689, 950, 1550.)

18. ISA.58:6-11 Is not this the fast that I have chosen? to loose the bands of wickedness, to undo the heavy burdens, and to let the oppressed go free, and that ye break every yoke? Is it not to deal thy bread to the hungry, and that thou bring the poor that are cast out to thy house? when thou seest the naked, that thou cover him; and that thou hide not thyself from thine own flesh? Then shall thy light break forth as the morning, and thine health shall spring forth speedily: and thy righteousness shall go before thee; the glory of the Lord shall be thy rereward. Then shalt thou call, and the Lord shall answer; thou shalt cry, and He shall say, Here I am. If thou take away from the midst of thee the yoke, the putting forth of the finger, and speaking vanity; And if thou draw out thy soul to the hungry, and satisfy the afflicted soul; then shall thy light rise in obscurity, and thy darkness be as the noonday: And the Lord shall guide thee continually, and satisfy thy soul in drought, and make fat thy bones: and thou shalt be like a watered garden, and like a spring of water, whose waters fail not.

19. .6:16-18 Moreover when ye fast, be not, as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance: for they disfigure their faces, that they may appear unto men to fast. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. But thou, when thou fastest, anoint thine head, and wash thy face; That thou appear not unto men to fast, but unto thy Father which is in secret: and thy Father, which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.

20. MAT.17:21 This kind goeth not out but by prayer and fasting.

(See also MAT.6:16-18; ACT.27:9,33,34.)



For God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind. For perfect love casts out fear (2Tim.1:7; 1Jn.4:18).

1. Fear God & all other fears will disappear.
2. You can't fight an unseen unknown enemy!--If you know who your enemy is & where he's at & what he's up to, then you can face him & fight it out!
3. I have lived too long among the stars to fear the night.
4. If we fear God, we shall cease to fear man.
5. A baby may smile in his sleep while he watches spirit movies, if his parents are people of faith & trust, or he may scream in fright in his sleep while he sees horror movies, if his parents have a spirit of fear.
6. When adults get frightened it's contagious, & children catch it too.
7. Fear is a communicable disease: Others can catch it.
8. Face your fears, acknowledge them, confess them & take a positive stand against them!
9. Face the fear of man in the power of His Spirit on the promises of His Word, & you cannot fail!
10. There is nothing to be afraid of when it comes to the Devil!--He was defeated 2000 years ago!
11. Face your fears & fight'm!
12. Fear is Devil-worship! You have to fight fear like you fight the Devil, & you can't just let him take over!
13. It pays to face your fears, recognise they're there, decide between the real & the unreal, the truth & the lie, & go on the attack to dispel the vaporous fiction of the fairy tale & to drive away the genuine reality of real threat!
14. Faith & fear cannot totally occupy your mind, heart & spirit at the same time.
15. To recognise & face the problem helps to attack it.
16. You cannot have faith & fear at the same time.
17. You've gotta face your fears & face the facts, before you can get the victory.
18. Freedom from fear is one of the greatest freedoms of all. Freedom from fear is faith.
19. To confess your fears is really to confess your innermost self.
20. Fear is the opposite of faith, & without faith you can have no power.
21. Face your fears...draw a line of distinction by facing them--between that which is the truth & those fears which are the lies of the Devil!
22. It doesn't pay to try to gloss the trouble over, or just turn your back on it & ignore it & hope it'll go away.
23. We don't have to worry or fear Satan's power, because we are protected by the power of the Holy Spirit.
24. Don't be so worried about the future that you can't enjoy life today.
25. Uncertainty & the fear of the unknown is the worst fear of all!
26. Courage is not the absence of fear; it is the conquest of fear.
27. Help us, Lord, not to be freaked out of our faith & scared out of our trust & booed out of our praise!

28. If your knees are knocking, kneel on them.
29. Courage is fear that has said its prayers.
30. Keep Faith as a constant companion. When Fear knocks at your door, send Faith to answer it.
31. God's Word teaches you that if you fear a fear, it will come upon you!
32. Your fears can become demons which will torment you!
33. Out of the evil imaginations of your own heart & mind you can create spiritual monsters that can destroy you--your own fears, your own evil spirits!
34. Watch out for the evil imaginations of your heart, lest they become realities that can destroy you!
35. Almost the Devil's total power is in fear.
36. You have to fight fear like you have to fight the Devil!
37. We must free men from fear with faith, from hatred with love, from sorrow with joy, from poverty with plenty & from death with eternal happiness.
38. When you have faith, you can't have fear: Faith is the opposite of fear.
39. The two greatest sources of worry & fear are the past & the future--remorse over the past & fear of the future--& God's Word forbids worry about either!
40. The best way a ship can ride out the storm is when it faces directly into the wind & the waves.
41. Chase away the shades of night,
By letting in God's Love & Light.
42. Read the Word to feed your faith & starve your fear!
43. Just as the fear of God is the beginning of wisdom, fear of Satan is really the beginning of death!
44. The coward dies a thousand deaths, the brave but one!
45. And though this World with devils filled,
Should threaten to undo us!
--We will not fear, for God hath willed,
His Truth to triumph through us!
46. To fear the Devil is giving him just the kind of worship that he wants.
47. The heart does not have room to embrace fear & trust at the same time; when one goes in, the other goes out.
48. If you fear someone more than you do God & you obey them instead of the Lord, you are worshipping them. You are falling down & worshipping before Satan himself & that person, worshipping the Devil, obeying the Devil, cowed by the Devil, intimidated by Satan, afraid to say anything or do anything for fear of offending him, just wanting to please the God-damned Devil & that person!
49. How do you get rid of darkness? You just let the light in.--And the darkness turns tail & runs!
50. Don't listen to the Devil, he's a liar!--The father of deceit & the father of lies. "A liar from the beginning", Jesus said, so why should you listen to his doubts & his fears & his lies when he says all those terrible things & tries to scare you out?
51. Worry is a sign of fear & fear is not faith. If you trust in the Lord you know He is going to take care of you & you don't have to worry.
52. The impotent do not have enough spirit or power, because they're holding back & not willing to give all. They're not willing to lie stripped before their Lord & let Him empower them. You have to have faith in God's Love in order to obey & come & strip off the outer garments of appearances, cover-ups & false fronts, & expose yourself to the Lord, totally yielding yourself to Him in submission & humility.
53. When we look back at what the Lord's already done for us in the past, we know good & well He's going to take care of us in the future, so why worry.

(See also No.171, 203, 306, 323, 341, 367, 599, 628, 686, 710, 831, 857, 947, 1378, 1432, 1459.)

54. .15:1b Fear not,...I am thy shield, & thy exceeding great reward.
55. .31:6 Be strong and of a good courage, fear not, nor be afraid of them: for the Lord thy God, He it is that doth go with thee; He will not fail thee, nor forsake thee.
56. .31:8 And the Lord, He it is that doth go before thee; He will be with thee, He will not fail thee, neither forsake thee: fear not, neither be dismayed.
57. **JOS.1:9 Have not I commanded thee? Be strong and of a good courage; be not afraid, neither be thou dismayed: for the Lord thy God is with thee whithersoever thou goest.**
58. **PSA.3:6 I will not be afraid of ten thousands of people, that have set themselves against me round about.**

59. .27:1 The Lord is my light and my Salvation; whom shall I fear? the Lord is the strength of my life; of whom shall I be afraid?

60. .34:4 I sought the Lord, and He heard me, and delivered me from all my fears.

61. .46:1-3 God is our refuge and strength, a very present help in trouble. Therefore will not we fear, though the Earth be removed, and though the mountains be carried into the midst of the sea; Though the waters thereof roar and be troubled, though the mountains shake with the swelling thereof. Selah.

62. .56:3,4 What time I am afraid, I will trust in Thee. In God I will praise His Word, in God I have put my trust; I will not fear what flesh can do unto me.

63. .56:11 In God have I put my trust: I will not be afraid what man can do unto me.

64. .91:5,6 Thou shalt not be afraid for the terror by night; nor for the arrow that flieth by day; Nor for the pestilence that walketh in darkness; nor for the destruction that wasteth at noonday.

65. .112:7 He shall not be afraid of evil tidings: his heart is fixed, trusting in the Lord.

66. .118:6 The Lord is on my side; I will not fear: what can man do unto me?

67. .1:33 But whoso hearkeneth unto Me shall dwell safely, and shall be quiet from fear of evil.

68. .3:24-26 When thou liest down, thou shalt not be afraid: yea, thou shalt lie down, and thy sleep shall be sweet. Be not afraid of sudden fear, neither of the desolation of the wicked, when it cometh. For the Lord shall be thy confidence, and shall keep thy foot from being taken.

69. ISA.12:2 Behold, God is my salvation; I will trust, and not be afraid.

70. .41:13 For I the Lord thy God will hold thy right hand, saying unto thee, Fear not; I will help thee.

71. .51:12, 13 I, even I, am He that comforteth you: who art thou, that thou shouldest be afraid of a man that shall die, and of the son of man which shall be made as grass; And forgettest the Lord thy Maker, that hath stretched forth heavens, and laid the foundations of the earth; and hast feared continually every day because of the fury of the oppressor, as if he were ready to destroy? and where is the fury of the oppressor?

72. ISA.54:14 In righteousness shalt thou be established: thou shalt be far from oppression; for thou shalt not fear: and from terror; for it shall not come near thee.

73. JER.1:8 Be not afraid of their faces: for I am with thee to deliver thee, saith the Lord.

74. .2:6 And thou, son of man, be not afraid of them, neither be afraid of their words, though briers and thorns be with thee, and thou dost dwell among scorpions: be not afraid of their words, nor be dismayed at their looks, though they be a rebellious house.

75. MAT.6:34 Take therefore no thought for the morrow: for the morrow shall take thought for the things of itself. Sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof.

76. MAT.10:30,31 But the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear ye not therefore, ye are of more value than many sparrows.

77. MAT.14:27 But straightway Jesus spake unto them, saying, Be of good cheer; it is I; be not afraid.

78. 5:36b Be not afraid, only believe.

79. .8:15 For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father.

80. .1:28 And in nothing terrified by your adversaries: which is to them an evident token of perdition, but to you of Salvation, and that of God.

81. .1:13 Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the Kingdom of His Dear Son.

82. TI.1:7 For God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind.

83. HEB.13:6 So that we may boldly say, The Lord is my helper, and I will not fear what man shall do unto me.

84. JN.4:18 there is no fear in love; but perfect love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment. He that feareth is not made perfect in love.



Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the manner of some is; but exhorting one another: & so much the more, as ye see the day approaching. For where two or three are gathered together in My name, there am I in the midst of them (Heb.10:25; Mt.18:20).

1. What is this life, so full of care,
If we have no time to stop & share?
2. Don't ever get so God-damned busy you haven't got time for the sheep! If you are that busy, you're too damned busy! Anybody who hasn't got time to fellowship with his wife or her husband or helpers or cook or maid or babysitter, or even the gardener or the postman, is too busy!
3. He drew a circle that shut me out, but love & I had the wit to win; We drew a circle that took him in.
4. When you live together for awhile, then you really know what fellowship is: A bunch of fellows in the same ship!
5. We can meet right here at Jesus' feet! Jesus is here & He's teaching us through His Word!
6. The Lord is for scattering to preach the Gospel in all the World, but He's also for coming together as a body for fellowship.
7. We've got to watch out that we don't--like the churches--fellowship so much that we neglect our job & our work--which is witnessing, litnessing, winning souls.
8. Lack of desire to fellowship is a very dangerous sign.
9. Videos are the fire that fueled the flame of the Fellowships!
10. Every time we meet together, we meet at Jesus' feet!
11. More fellowship & better communication often act as solutions in themselves.
12. If you don't meet & pray, you'll become the Devil's meat & prey.
13. Children's contributions to a Family meeting are just as important as anybody's, & maybe sometimes more important!
14. We need each other as well as the Lord, & He likes it when we gather together!--He's always there.
15. What business is more important to take care of than listening to what the Lord has to say?
16. When a meeting is called for fellowship, that is the Lord's most important business at that time.
17. When we are gathered together for a time of fellowship, it's like everybody bringing their candle to the table, their candle of the Spirit, their candle of inspiration, their additional little part of spirit & power. And when there are this many candles at the table burning together, that's a lot of light, that's a lot of spirit, that's a lot of power.
18. Gathering together in fellowship is one of the secrets of the upper room, the experience of the Day of Pentecost. They were all together in body & in unity, one mind & one spirit. They were united with the Lord & His Spirit in one place at one time like one body, one mind, one spirit, all together in obedience to what the Lord had commanded them.
19. Even the Lord needed fellowship with His disciples. When He went into the Garden of Gethsemane that night He took His three top most intimate disciples, Peter, James & John with Him away from the rest of them to pray with Him because He was facing the most severe hour in His whole life.
20. When the Family is gathered together for a fellowship meeting there is nothing more important for you to do than to be at that meeting.
21. In a united Family meeting, whether it be of your little Home or your Area Fellowship, one of the most important factors is that you also join in in spirit & contribute your share of the spirit to the meeting.

22. The Spirit is a very definite, real, almost tangible, thing. You can feel the Spirit in united meetings, more than perhaps in a tiny group of two or three gathered together.

23. It seems like the more of us there are in a meeting, the more power we feel.

24. Family dinner is important Family fellowship & that's when the most important announcements of the day are made & when the most important conversation goes on.

25. Dinnertime is too important to just snatch & grab your food & run, it's not some kind of a buffet lunch or smorgasbord, but it's a time when you really sit down together & eat together & enjoy each other's fellowship together & get a little inspiration together.

26. If you only meet & fellowship once a week, you're getting to be like the churches. I think you should fellowship every night at dinnertime.

27. Lord help us to realise the importance of fellowship, the unity of spirit & mind & heart & body & presence. Your disciples were all together in one place, of one mind, of one heart & obedience, & there You were in the midst of them & You poured out Your Spirit upon them.

28. We should value our fellowship time together & appreciate it & cherish it & honour it & count it a privilege.

(See also No.249, 546, 617, 632, 752, 950, 1001, 1034, 1205, 1209, 1384, 1511, 1550.)

29. .119:63 I am a companion of all them that fear Thee, and of them that keep Thy precepts.

30. .3:16 Then they that feared the Lord spake often one to another: and the Lord hearkened, and heard it, and a book of remembrance was written before Him for them that feared the Lord, and that thought upon His Name.

31. .18:20 For where two or three are gathered together in My Name, there am I in the midst of them.

32. .2:1 And when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place.

33. .2:42 And they continued stedfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers.

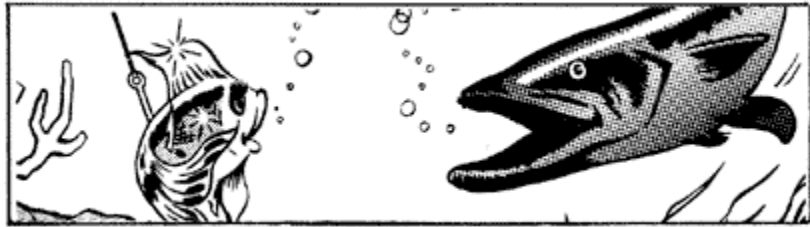
34. .14:27 And when they were come, and had gathered the church together, they rehearsed all that God had done with them, and how He had opened the door of faith unto the Gentiles.

35. .10:25 Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the manner of some is; but exhorting one another: and so much the more, as ye see the day approaching.

36. **JO.1:3 That which we have seen and heard declare we unto you, that ye also may have fellowship with us: and truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with His Son Jesus Christ.**

37. **JO.1:6,7 If we say that we have fellowship with Him, and walk in darkness, we lie, and do not the truth: But if we walk in the light, as He is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanseth us from all sin.**

(See also ACT.2:1, 42-47.)



And He saith unto them, Follow Me, and I will make you fishers of men (Mt.4:19).

[**HomeARC note** (9/98): FFing was discontinued in 1987.]

1. Jesus is your message! If they don't want Jesus, they don't want you! They can't have you without Jesus!
2. Just as Jesus had to dirty Himself to save you, you have to go to them & dirty yourself to save them.
3. If you strike a thorn or rose, Keep a-goin!
If it hails or if it snows, Keep a-goin!
'Tain't no use to sit & whine
'Cause the fish ain't on your line,
Bait your hook an' keep on tryin'. Keep a-goin!
4. God has not even withheld His Own Wife, the Bride of Christ, the Church, but has given her as a flirty fish to the World to try & woo & win them.
5. If you've got it, flaunt it!
6. A deep look into someone's eyes can move the emotions & body as much as a deep kiss into their mouth!
7. If there's real spiritual contact in a look, it's just like getting naked into bed with someone.
8. To a lot of people, sex is the ultimate proof of love.
9. The church talks about love, but they stop at the bed. We go beyond the bed all the way to Heaven!
10. You must be willing to go to any length to show you love them.
11. Never underestimate the power of sex! It can win you lots of friends & catch you lots of fish.
12. We can't stop our way of saving souls just because it makes someone with a weak unWorded conscience stumble.
13. You cannot stop saving souls just because some people condemn your methods!
14. Avoid the sharks: look for the fish!--And carry plenty of bait!
15. Try giving the Beauty of God's love to some "Beast" today, & see if he won't turn into a Prince Charming!
16. I don't lose daughters, I gain sons.
17. People must learn to love you first, before they can learn to love your God!
18. If the Devil has his spells, certainly the Lord has His--the influence of the Holy Spirit!
19. Don't break God's spell!
20. You have His magic in your entrancing hypnotism of the charming beauty that we see looking out through your eyes--those windows of your soul--from the very depths of your being, in a language that no words can speak!
21. Never underestimate the power of a woman! Godly women are tools of the Lord!
22. FFing is the acid test, the ultimate in sharing!
23. Sex is the bait, & it's God's Own bait!--And He's going to use it!
24. If you believe FFing is wrong, it is because you refuse to believe the Word!
25. Most religions haven't got enough love to go to bed with a sinner to save his soul, to go to bed with his body to save his spirit!
26. If you're to be God's whore, you can't have much pride!
27. They have to believe in you first & your love, your body, your beauty, your unselfish gift of love to them, before they can even understand the love of God!

28. If you're not willing to give your wife, you're not willing to give your life!
29. Every travelling salesman has a broken heart.
30. To learn FFing is to learn a trade, because even if the Antichrist isn't interested in women, his men will be!
31. If they have to fall in love with you first, before they find it's the Lord, it's just God's bait to hook them!
32. If some women & men of this World "play for pay," why can't we sometimes play for love, the love of God, & expect God to foot the bills for His Own glory?
33. Flesh can satisfy flesh, but only Spirit can satisfy spirit, & we've found that we've had to give both to satisfy "all their needs according to His riches in glory." (Phil.4:19)
34. There is nowhere to draw the line between the two, flesh & spirit. There is no halfway, there is no "almost."
35. Every woman's a prostitute!--Some do it for fun, some for money, some for information, some for power & some for husbands at the highest price on the lifelong installment plan! We do it for love & souls as a sacrificial loving service & gift to the needy.
36. Some men like flesh, some like brains, some like beauty, some like spirit & some like'm all!--Be sure you use the right bait for the right fish!
37. If you just catch one, it's worth all the days that you didn't catch any & all the sacrifices you made.
38. You're wielding the most powerful weapons the World has ever known! Phooey on the atom bomb! This tiny pill bomb of love is enough to blow any country apart!
39. In a way, God had to love Jesus a little less for Him to be able to love the World more.
40. The little that I'm sacrificing of your love & losing of you, results in obtaining their love & gaining them.
41. FFing is the greatest most sacrificial service that you can possibly give, outside of actually dying, because it is laying your life on the line for love!
42. Love others ... with your hands, your lips, your mouth, your tongue, your eyes & your body broken for them as He was for you, your blood shed for them as His was for you, even dying for them as He did for you!
43. Like Christ was your atonement & bore your sins for you, you are their atonement before they find the Lord.
44. An angry, frustrated, unfairly deprived fish can sometimes turn on you ferociously.
45. The bigger they come the harder they fight, & if you're not very patient you can lose them altogether.
46. If you're a hooker for Jesus, don't forget Who you're hooking for & don't forget to constantly point your hook in His direction!--Then they'll know why you're doing it & Who you're doing it for.
47. The hook is the Word!
48. The bait softens the blow of the hook a little bit & makes it a little bit more palatable!
49. You can't expect to catch fish with a naked hook!--it takes naked bait!
50. You don't hafta like 'em, but you sure gotta love'm!
51. God lets His wife make love to the world!--Why not you?
52. FFing with God's love is the ultimate weapon! It's God's last-ditch stand to try to reach the World--They've heard, known & tried everything else.
53. Sex is the ultimate weapon! Sex is the weakness in their armour: They just cannot resist it!--& when empowered by the Spirit, Love & Word of God, it's the most powerful weapon in the World!
54. In falling in love with you, though they may not know it at first, they're really falling in love with God in you.
55. The Lord shares His wife, the Church, with the World to prove His love.
56. God is a pimp!--He uses you to win souls!
57. Don't start something you can't stop!--And don't try to stop something you've already started!--It can be dangerous!
58. Male fish can be satisfied with a mere nibble or a bite, or a mouthful or bellyful of bait!--Whereas the female fish want the fisherman, the tackle, the trap, & the whole darn boat!
59. Watch for the worthy ones & wait for the witness of the Spirit.
60. The Spirit & the Word of God encased in frail feminine flesh has turned out to be the most powerful, effective weapon the Lord has ever used!
61. The quickest way to get a man excited is to look right into his eyes.
62. Looking into the eyes is almost the next thing to having intercourse, because you're instantly having spiritual intercourse & it really has an effect!
63. Where the spirit goes the body follows!

64. If you have to refuse a man, do it sweetly & as nicely as you can, with a smile, & say "later" or "another time" or "I'm sorry, but I'm tired," or give them some good excuse. Don't just say a flat "no."

65. Any kind of fishing requires a lot of patience, a lot of waiting, a lot of faith.

66. Don't ever leave your mate alone without a babysitter & don't believe them when they say they don't need one!

67. You're an adornment to the Gospel!--You really dress it up & decorate it & make it look pretty!

68. Why shouldn't the Gospel come wrapped up in a beautiful package?--it's the greatest gift in the World, the Good News!

69. Never underestimate the charm of a woman!

70. If it's going to be all bait & no hook, then you might as well forget it! If it's going to be all sugarcoating & no pill, it's all in vain!

71. The Devil uses sex to hook his followers--why shouldn't the God Who made it, use sex to hook His Own?

72. One kind word from you can mean more than a selfish bed from some of those selfish old whores!

73. We're salesmen trying to sell our product, the love of God--and it costs something!

74. Unless you can show them that God loves them by your own love from God, they'll never know it.

75. All hail to the eyes as the most potent witnesses of God's love!

76. Your loving looks have the loving answer to the need of every hungry heart.--The look of love which unlocks the doors of many of the hardest & heaviest hearts!

77. Are you willing to suffer to save others?--To offer your life or your wife, or be offered as God's wife, or both?

78. Godly hurt, sacrifice and suffering to help others are good for us.

79. Are you strong enough to give it? Are you free enough to live it? Do you love enough to lose it?

80. We weave the web with the strong, flexible, lasting, unbreakable cords of love.

81. Sometimes when Fishing, "a little of the bait is lost and eaten, but it shall live on in the flesh of the fish to give sustenance to others as he, too, becomes food for them that hunger."

82. "For thou art My bait and I have need of thee!"

83. There's no amount of love that could possibly be illegitimate to try to win a soul!

84. Dancing & how well you dance is a spiritual thing! For a woman to be a good dancer it takes total surrender--like sex!

85. Sow good ground, fish fruitful waters & hunt likely game! Stop wasteful, indiscriminate, blind, lazy sowing on sterile ground, fishing in polluted waters & hunting dead ducks! Choose your targets & hit'm!--Missing the mark is sin!

86. The bait has to give its life to catch life!

87. Sex-plus-God is an irresistible power!

88. This is the ultimate weapon--sex! We have found the chink in their armour! All we have to do now is to attack it with love & sympathy & kindness & the Word & the Truth & the Spirit--& sex!

89. When empowered by the Spirit of God & the Love of God & the Word of God, sex is the most powerful weapon in the World!

90. God is going to take the sex weapon He created Himself & use it for His Own glory to win souls for His Own cause!

91. If you can't tell the difference between a good clean fish & a catfish or a shark, you've got no business being a fisherman!

92. You're to use your sex as a tool of real genuine love for God & your neighbour, love in the Spirit--& in the flesh--to try & win him to the Lord!

93. I'm convinced that God knows the fish that are going to be there. He knows exactly who He's going to put you in contact with & He knows who He wants to reach that night, & if you pray, you'll be led of the Spirit to the right pond, even to the right table & to the right individual.

94. FFing is an absolute extreme, but God in these last days has done it to show to what extremes He's willing to go to love & save people & reach them, to the utmost! He did it, He died.

95. Even if you don't do them any greater favour than to convince them that real love really does exist, that there is such a thing, at least they've had a sample once in their lifetime, & this gives them faith & hope that maybe they'll still find the real thing because it does exist because they've experienced it at least once or twice.

96. Every new witness, every new word to him if he doesn't respond, is just another nail in his coffin that God is going to remind him of one of these days when he stands at the judgement.--Of all the chances he had & all the sacrifices that were made & all the love he got. It's going to count against him. We are ministers both of

salvation & damnation & the more they get from us, either the more they're going to be saved or the more they're going to be damned. the more they're going to be held responsible for.

97. Even though persecution forces the main forces of the reapers to flee, there is still much that can be done by the girl gleaners who may even capture a few owners of the fields & thereby get it all, & even sometimes through their love & influence, move the owner to stop his underlings' persecution of the reapers & the gleaners.

98. Esther & Ruth are two outstanding shining examples of God's FFers who became so famous & influential that two entire books of the Bible were devoted to their stories & named after them!

99. Even if nothing seems to come of it, God will reward you for being obedient & for trying to help someone even if they don't always respond. Like with a drowning man, it's your obligation to throw him a lifesaver to try to rescue him. But if he doesn't accept it, that's not your fault, that's his funeral.

100. Who knows--when all other avenues of influence & witnessing are closed to us, FFing may be our only remaining means of spreading the Word & supporting the Work as well as gaining new disciples & workers for the Kingdom of God.

101. You are only to be concerned about them. That's your ministry--not to be concerned about yourself & what they think about you, whether they think you're a prostitute or a call girl in it for the money, or a sex-starved female, but just be concerned about them & giving them Jesus.

102. Until you're willing, like Jesus, to make yourself of no reputation, or even a bad reputation of hobnobbing with publicans & sinners & drunks & harlots as Jesus did, & being called a wine bibber, a glutton & demon-possessed as Jesus was, & having your motives & good intentions questioned & your purposes in doubt, as His were, you'll not be a very good bait or fisherman, either one. (Mk.2:15-17; Mt.11:18-19)

103. Every one of you boys who has a mate who does FFing is "playing God"!

104. God had the FF blues when He had to send Jesus to die for us & be separated from Him all that time.

105. Remember: The bigger the fish the less you can preach at him!

106. A major part of fishing is just pure patience.

107. We're trying to reach the System, the important & influential middle class whose souls are priceless & whose good will is essential to our work.

108. Keeping dates faithfully is very important to both your word & their faith in you & your witness, to encourage them to trust in you & what you have to say.

109. If you want to be a witness of God's Love, be sure you give God the glory so they'll always remember you did it in His Love, not just your own.

110. Fucking is sometimes needful! What's a little fuck between friends if he needs it!--Not near as much to you as to him. It probably means much more to him than it costs you to give it.

111. Fishing can be dangerous, unless you really trust the Lord & are led by Him!

112. FFing is really strictly a volunteer ministry.

113. Use a little wisdom & try to be Spirit-led! Not every guy who wants you necessarily deserves to have you.

114. I'd rather have a girl be too willing than not willing enough. So to be on the safe side, if you're in doubt as to whether he can take a "no" or "later" in some touchy cases, instead of "When in doubt, don't," you need to "When in doubt, do!"

115. Fishing can be fun, but fun doesn't pay the bills! You've got to catch a few to make the fun pay for itself.

116. Your going into these clubs is a testimony that God is not a monster Who is trying to deny them everything & make them miserable.

117. The first & most important thing to show them is that you love them. That's what most men & women need most of all, just somebody to show an interest in them.

118. If you're not willing to sit there all night long & listen to their life story, then you don't love them!

119. Be careful about ignoring good old friends in favour of new ones you don't even know. A bird in the hand is worth two in the bush!

120. Beloved, don't play around with hearts.

121. FFing is deadly serious business. ...

122. You've got to keep God's Love coming as long as they're willing to receive it.

123. Many people can become Holy Spirit possessed under the hypnotism of your love.

124. God is training you women to have this power over men because you are going to rule the Earth!

125. I like strong soldiers who can take anything, including watching their wives go to bed with other men!

126. You don't have to like'm, but you've sure got to love'm!

127. God wants people who are cheerful givers, who are voluntarily doing it because it makes them happy & cheerful, because they know it pleases the Lord in helping others.

128. Just a little companionship, a little real love, sympathy & God's answers to their problems--these are the things people need the most!

129. This is a dedicated special ministry for only the absolute 100-percenters!

130. First they have to fall in love with you & then Jesus, & then finally us.

131. Thank God for a good soldier, a real soldier who knows how to fight, who knows how to use the weapon of the Word & how to wield it!--Even in bed!

132. I would certainly say that FFing is not only the most effucktive, effective, efficient & fruitful method of soul-winning, but of course it is also the most sacrificial!

133. There's no use in your going FFing if you're not going to ask the Lord ahead of time, "Give me real love now, Lord, help me to find the one You sent me to help tonight!"

134. It's a tremendous blessing & a great encouragement to them, & inspires their faith to feel that you love them & really care, that you're actually concerned about them & their feelings & their happiness! It's such an easy way to show it by just a smile or a few kind words about the Lord's love, a few dances, a few affectionate pats or pecks--& occasionally even more!

135. We feed their body in order to feed their soul, no doubt God is going to the final extreme to save souls by FFing, no doubt that's going to be their last chance. When God goes to that extreme to show them His love, I really think it's usually their last chance when God has to use such extreme measures to accomplish such extraordinary results.

136. You literally are having to dip your hands into the slimepit, the dirty dishwater, to pull them out, to make things clean! So sometimes when you think, "Why do I have to go into that horrible Worldly atmosphere with all those evil creatures?" remember, that must have been exactly what Jesus thought when He had to come to this Earth to save you!

137. Some people are worth saving & sacrificing for & even getting hurt for.

138. This is the difference between lust & love. Lust is mainly to gratify your own greedy selfish appetite, like eating a meal. You may need it, but if you're stealing it from someone else & taking the food out of their mouth to stuff your own, this is selfish lust, not love. But if you're taking the food out of your mouth & giving your own meal to satisfy & feed another who is hungry & starving for love & needs it desperately & might not survive without it, then this is real love.

139. It's like you're light, life & love to him--the gift of God to him. It's God's light & life & love. If he doesn't accept this precious price, this gift God has given him, God is going to close the Book & snuff out the candle & take it back with a kiss.

140. The most fruitful form of witnessing is FFing, with the highest proportion of results for the number witnessed to.

141. The 7 F's of FFing--effucktive, effective, efficient, fruitful, financial, official & forever. Hallelujah!--For our Father & our Family.

142. If you don't draw the net you are throwing away the bait & losing the fish.

143. FFing is largely a ministry for women, & I think maybe because the Lord said in the Bible that in the Last Days women shall rule, God is training our women to have this power over men because the women are going to rule the Earth!

(See also No.293, 301C, 302C, 304, 309, 323, 501, 502, 503, 504, 505, 506, 507, 508, 509, 510, 511, 512, 513, 514, 515, 516, 517, 518, 519, 520, 521, 522, 524, 525, 526, 527, 528, 529, 532, 533, 535, 537, 538, 542, 543, 547, 548, 549, 550, 552, 553, 555, 559, 560, 561, 562, 563, 564, 566, 567, 569, 570, 571, 572, 573, 575, 576, 583, 592, 594, 599, 603, 604, 635, 639, 647, 648, 652, 685, 699, 793, 817, 1083, 1084, 1085, 1120, 1238, 1415, 1468.)

144. .4:19 And He saith unto them, Follow Me, and I will make you fishers of men.

145. .5:16 Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in Heaven.

146. .10:8b Freely ye have received, freely give.

147. .17:27b Cast an hook, and take up the fish that first cometh up; and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt find a piece of money: that take, and give unto them for Me and thee.

148. .20:26 Whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister.

149. .22:39 Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.

150. .25:40b Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these My brethren, ye have done it unto Me.
151. .5:10b Fear not; from henceforth thou shalt catch men.
152. .9:23 If any man will come after Me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow Me.
153. .12:32 And I, if I be lifted up ... will draw all men unto Me.
154. .15:12,13 This is My commandment, That ye love one another. Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.
155. .14:14 I ... am persuaded by the Lord Jesus, that there is nothing unclean of itself.
156. CO.9:22 I am made all things to all men, that I might by all means save some.
157. CO.13:8a Love never faileth.
158. CO.3:17 Where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty.
159. CO.5:14 For the love of Christ constraineth us.
160. .2:7a But made Himself of no reputation.
161. .1:15a Unto the pure all things are pure.
162. .2:15-17 If a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food, And one of you say unto them, Depart in peace, be ye warmed and filled; notwithstanding ye give them not those things which are needful to the body; what doth it profit? Faith, if it hath not works, is dead.
163. JO.3:16 Hereby perceive we the love of God, because He laid down His life for us: and we ought to lay down our lives for the brethren.
164. JO.3:18 My little children, let us not love in word, neither in tongue; but in deed and in truth.
165. JO.3:21 Beloved, if our heart condemn us not, then have we confidence toward God.

38. FIGHT THE GOOD FIGHT --{page 307}--



Fight the good fight of faith (1Tim.6:12).

1. I love to fight, because I know I'm fighting for the One that's worth fighting for & the souls that are worth winning & the goals that are worth attaining!
2. Keep on believing, don't ever give up! Keep on believing, don't be discouraged! Keep on believing, don't quit!
3. Whatever you do, don't quit!
4. You gotta keep going, you gotta keep sacrificing, you gotta keep forsaking, you gotta keep fighting every day!
5. Whoever has resigned himself to fate, will find that fate accepts his resignation.
6. Winners never quit, but quitters never win.
7. We may lose some battles but we're winning the war!--And the World will soon be ours for God & His Kingdom!
8. Many people's tombstones should read: "Died at 30. Buried at 60."
9. We have not yet begun to fight!
10. Where there's a will there's a way.
11. He that shoots oft, at last shall hit the mark.

12. Victory belongs to the most persevering.
13. My right has been rolled up. My left has been driven back. My center has been smashed. I have ordered an advance from all directions.--Attributed to General Foch, WW1.
14. If you fall, don't just lie there! Get up & try again!--Pro.24:16.
15. Better to fight & lose than not to fight at all! Better to have loved & lost than never to have loved at all!
16. Success is failure turned inside out,
The silver tint of the clouds of doubt.
So stick to the fight when you're hardest hit,
It's when things seem worst
That you must not quit.
17. Whatever you do, just keep on going for God!--You're bound to make it sometimes if you try often enough!
18. The only way we can ever be conquered is if we stop attacking & give up & stop having the faith to take the initiative.
19. Keep on holding to His Promises!--Don't let go! Keep on standing on the Word!--Don't get off! Keep on going for Jesus!--Don't stop! Keep on keeping on!
20. The people that complain about the battle & then quit just before the victory's won, never get to enjoy it!
21. Keep fighting & you won't lose! Keep wielding the weapon of the Word & you'll win!
22. He that wrestles with us strengthens our nerves & sharpens our skill. Our antagonist is our helper.
23. You have to be a fighter for the Truth of God, even if they kill you!
24. Every day is a battle!
25. We all have besetting sins; we just have to learn to resist them!
26. It's a battle, it's a war, but we're bound to win!
27. If you're a fighter like I am, you enjoy the battle!
28. A victorious knight returned from the battle has more of a shine than one who hasn't been in the battle.
29. Some people are looking for an excuse to do what they really want to do--quit!
30. Surprise is one of the prime elements of successful military strategy.
31. The Devil can't lick you as long as you keep trying. The only way he can possibly lick you is if you surrender!
32. We may not win all the battles, but we're going to win the war!
33. You only win a war in which you lead the attack!
34. You don't have time to sharpen your sword in the middle of a battle, but if your sword is so dull it turns out to be nothing but a club, it's better than nothing!
35. If you run off & hide before the battle's won, God'll hold you to blame for the defeat!
36. You have to fight the Devil & your old self every day!
37. You can never stop battling, you can never stop winning victories, you can never stop progressing, or you'll backslide!
38. Each battle God gives you in which you win a victory is followed with a bigger battle, because He knows He can now trust you with more.
39. Keep a soft heart but a tough spirit!
40. The greater the battle, the greater the victory. The greater the sacrifice, the greater the reward!
41. To get greater victories you have to keep fighting greater battles, & for greater rewards you have to keep making greater sacrifices, & for greater joys you have to keep suffering greater pains.
42. In school I was a fighter for my faith! I knew I was superior in the Lord & my faith & outlook!
43. Don't rescue me prematurely!
44. If you win this battle, He'll give you a bigger battle tomorrow!
45. Make an advantage out of your handicap! Build a bridge out of your broken dreams & set those ships asail again!
46. Don't let the Devil frighten you out with his first "boo" & his lies. "Respect not their proud & haughty looks."
47. You've either got to surrender & make peace with your enemy, or you've got to fight.
48. Just like in any war: Where the battle's hot, you've got to put in the most troops to give it all you've got, & where you've pretty well got the situation in hand, you can kind of let up a little.
49. Try a little "umph" if you want to triumph.
50. If you didn't have the fight, you wouldn't appreciate the victory!

51. If you think the time's coming in this life when you'll no longer have to fight self & sin & the old man, you're mistaken.

52. If you can't take it, you're not going to make it!

53. Some things do get easier! You don't usually have to fight the same battles over again if you get the victory!

54. I like a battle! I love it!--Because I know I'm on the right side, the winning side, & I've got the right Commander & I'm proud & happy to live or die for Him.

55. Anything wonderful can happen in that little margin of time when you do not give up, but keep on believing & keep on praying!

56. It's a struggle to live!--It takes faith & courage & fight & a lot of real hard work to live the faith life!

57. People who faint, faint first in their minds; they sort of give up mentally or spiritually first.

58. Give me some men who are stout-hearted men,

Who will fight for the right they adore!

Start me with ten who are stout-hearted men,

And I'll soon give you ten thousand more!

59. Stand up, stand up for Jesus!

The strife will not be long.

This day the noise of battle,

The next, the victor's song.

60. The men of faith will challenge,

Both men & Satan's wrath.

But the beaten men will compromise,

And walk the beaten path.

61. Let your drooping hearts be glad;

March in Heavenly armour clad;

Fight, nor think the battle long,

For soon shall come the victory song.

62. All that is necessary for the triumph of evil is that good men do nothing.

63. That's what you joined the army for, to fight!

64. A good soldier knows how to fight--how to wield the weapon of the Word!

65. Hope never quits, faith never stops trusting, & love never fails!--If you keep fighting!

66. God didn't call you to a playground but a battleground.

67. The best way to stop an attack is to counter-attack! The best defense is an offense!

68. We are in a fight to the finish, & the victory is ours, praise be to God!

69. Don't depend on yesterday! Get inspired today!

70. An attacking initiative is what wins a war.

71. When things get tough, you've got to fight all the harder! When the going gets tough, the tough get going!

72. If it's worthwhile, it's worth fighting for.

73. We need to get more militant, more aggressive, more specific & go on the attack, take the offensive & hit the thing head on immediately!

74. How do you get the victory? You just keep fighting!

75. It's impossible to win a defensive warfare! To win a war you have to launch an attack!

76. Never let yourself get put on the defensive!

77. The size of a dog in a fight doesn't count as much as the size of the fight in the dog.

78. The trouble with some of us is that we stop trying in trying times.

79. Victory loses its value unless we use it as a means to even greater ends.

80. The Devil's kingdom's in distress,

When we wage our war & win success!

But the Devil's kingdom able to rest

When we don't fight & give our best!

81. Don't give in until you win!

82. The more difficult the obstacle, the stronger one becomes after hurdling it.

83. A good set of Triers beats a wagonload of Sighers!

84. With battles to fight & a war to win,

You need to be a soldier that never gives in!

85. "The voice of their father will encourage them to fight the battle!"
86. Victory isn't just walking across the goal line...it's struggling through opposition to the goal.
87. Fight discouragement!--Pray & read the Word!
88. May God give us fighters who like to fight for the Lord with the weapon of His Word & who enjoy defeating the Devil & who know they can't lose & who like to win victories!--Conquering heroes that like to live & fight & die for Jesus & their brethren & the truth!
89. Let's be fighters that know how to attack!--Who are always ready to give an answer to every man that asketh of us, who have the guts & the conviction to answer!
90. Fire back, fight back!: "Of course this is what we believe!--Of course this is what we teach!--It's Scriptural, it's God-given! We believe it, we practice it. So what the hell do you care?"--And the honest open-minded World will admire your guts for sticking up for your convictions & sticking to your guns instead of backwatering & backing down before the sickening self-righteous hypocrites!
91. I am not amazed or at all dismayed at the challenge of the Enemy. I like a fight! I like to prove that God's right!
92. My God, give us people with guts & gumption & the courage to fight back & trap the Enemy in their own words & challenge them & attack them & prove them wrong!
93. God help us & deliver us from cowards! Give us brave soldiers that know how to fight & throw it back in their teeth & kick'm in the teeth with the Truth! There's nothing you can quote out of my Letters that I'm ashamed of. There's nothing they can fire at us in public from those "secret" Letters that I'm ashamed of. Stand up & sock'm in the teeth with it!
94. If you don't know how to be bold, if you're not fighters, you don't belong to this outfit. Namby-pamby, milk & water, string-for-a-backbone cowards who have no guts or conviction & are ashamed & don't know what to say don't belong in this outfit!
95. You must be willing to fight for your convictions! This Revolution was not built by cowards--it was fought by brave strong warriors who challenged the Enemy!
96. When the Enemy comes up & challenges you, you don't go on the defensive, you don't start backwatering or sidestepping & coughing & wheezing & spitting & stammering & stuttering & getting rattled & scared & backing off. You attack him, you go on the attack, you take the initiative & sock it to'm!
97. Take the initiative! Get on the offensive! Attack! Be the aggressor, quit trying to defend your position. You don't have to defend it. Challenge them with it: When they say, "You do encourage sex, don't you, you do promote sex!", my God, yell in their face, "What the hell's wrong with sex!--Of course, we encourage it & promote it! God likes sex, God made it! Don't you have sex?--Don't you like it?"
98. God's Own children & His Own characters, His great men of the Bible, used some very clever tricks & political ploys & whatnot to get their rights, from Paul's demand that he be treated as a Roman citizen all the way back to Abraham & Sara, so there's nothing unscriptural or illegal about standing up for your rights & getting what's coming to you.
99. If you're a fighter like I am, you enjoy the battle. When you know you're fighting for the right you don't mind the battle. You enjoy a challenge & test to show your strength!
100. I don't do business with the Devil! I don't care to have him around, & I'll scrap it out with him any day before I'll reach any compromise & live with him!
101. We are at war with the Devil & the lies of the Devil! We are an army who is fighting spiritually, not with violence, not with arms, but with the Word of God. We are fighting for the Truth, & you have to be a fighter for the Truth of God even if they kill you!
102. Jesus was a revolutionary, He was not a reformist. He attacked the system of His day. He didn't attack the government because the government was of God, even the Roman government. But He attacked tooth & tong in no uncertain terms the false religious system of His day & the advocates of it & the participants of it & the leaders of it.
103. We're not reformists, we're revolutionaries. We're not trying to change the old system, we want to get rid of the system that is not of God & go back to what Jesus taught & the Apostles lived. We want to sweep clean, not patch up!
104. We're a bunch of rebels, rebels for the Lord, rebels against the System, rebels against convention, rebels against conformity & traditionalism & ceremonialism, but rebels like Jesus, Who was a Rebel for the Truth & a Rebel for the true naked Word of God!
105. A great deal of God's Work has to be to tear down the old in order to build the new, to tear down false conceptions, untrue ideas, shaky foundations, traditions of men, by which Jesus said, "Ye make the law of God of none effect."

106. We are waging a worldwide war!--Not on the side of the political left, not on the side of the political right, but on the side of the only One Who is really right, & that's God! It's a much bigger battle & we have much greater enemies!

107. The Lord & His angels & you are far more powerful than the Devil & his demons! Even Satan has to obey your commands in the Name of Jesus! He might fight against you for a while, like he is, but sooner or later he's going to have to knuckle under.

108. We who have Jesus have more power than Satan! We have more power than the demons, because we have the power of God & the powerful of His Spirit of Love! "At the Name of Jesus every knee shall bow!" (Phil.2:10).

109. You have to baptise yourself constantly in prayer, soak yourself in the Word, memorise & quote constantly to the Devil & to yourself. You have to wage a militant warfare against the Enemy!

110. We rebuke you, Satan, in Jesus' name & all your powers & angels & evil spirits. Thank You for Thy great mighty army, Lord, that surrounds us, that resists all the powers of Hell though they be let loose against us. Even one angel is enough to deal with them all! The angel of the Lord encampeth around them that fear Him & delivereth them! Thank You Lord for all Thy goodness & mercy. Help us to stay close to Thee in the charmed circle of Thy protection, in Jesus' name!

111. When you rebuke the Devil, you don't do it calmly. You get angry & practically yell & shout & curse & scream at him. You get so angry in the spirit (Eph.4:26,27.)

112. They'd have to kill me first before I'd let anybody take you or the children away from me. It would have to be over my dead body!

113. Just like two generals at war: God is the One who usually takes the initiative & the Devil can't act until after God's already acted because he doesn't know what God's going to do. Once in a while he tries to pull a fast one & act first, but usually whenever he does he makes the wrong step, he does the wrong thing, which literally hangs him, trips him & exposes him.

114. I'm not always all sweetness & love!--God is not only love, but the Word says He is also a consuming fire for the wicked! Jesus does not always bring peace. When people reject Him, He often brings a sword.

115. I believe in fighting back. I believe in fighting back with the Word & publicity & any kind of legal challenge which will give our reply publicity. But don't ever let it actually get to court. The System's got everything rigged to their advantage!

116. I believe in a propaganda reply. I believe in a reply to the lies of the Devil with the Word & the Truth. I believe in a final parting blast at the enemies to show them up for the liars they are or who they are.

117. "What fight your Father has & what marvellous love your Father David has for his children. Your Father loves a fight for the Truth!"

118. I've tried to avoid fights when I could possibly avoid them, but when it was impossible to avoid a fight, I've never backed down from fighting.

119. This is a war! If you are not willing to risk your life, you might as well quit! When the Enemy attacks, instead of crawling into your holes you ought to come out in full force & sock it to him, even if you have to die in the process. I just can't stand cowards! But I also don't believe in hanging around too long & trying to fight it out to the bitter end. You can't lick City Hall, especially the System with its own weapons designed for its own protection.

120. Every attack of the Enemy only results in greater publicity for the Truth & adds greater numbers to those who will follow the Truth.

121. There are times when the Enemy is firing that we'd better pretty much stick to our trenches & our shellholes a little while & not unnecessarily expose ourselves to the fire. It's when the heat is on that you have to be particularly careful & prayerful & wise.

122. The best defence is an offence & a counter-attack, even though it is dangerous. Any kind of an attack is dangerous in any man's army. When you go on the aggressive, on the attack, on the offensive, you're bound to have a few casualties, but that's the only way you win wars. You don't win them by fighting a defensive warfare.

123. Lord, give us the courage to stand up for our convictions & stick to our guns, Lord, of Your Word & the Truth. Help us not to pull any punches because of the little lies of the Devil. Help us all to continue to be faithful, diligent & wary of the evil devices of the Evil One. Help us not to allow ourselves to be ever caught in any of his traps, to watch our step & be wary & beware of the Enemy & his devices. Help us not to be afraid of the Truth, Lord, not to be afraid to tell Thy children the Truth or even the World the Truth.

124. You don't win by retreat, you win by attacking.

125. When the Enemy attacks, it really gets us on the stick & on the ball & back close to the Lord & praying & working & fighting back & revives us spiritually & kills that old lazy lethargy that sets in when everything is going to smoothly & so easy that we don't have to stir up ourselves or fight or work very hard.

126. The best thing to do is stay out of the Enemy's way when he starts screaming too loud. The screaming doesn't hurt you much, but when they start putting on the screws & the pressure, then that's time to get out of the way.

127. When you're being persecuted, the best thing to do is stop, & let them know you've stopped & you've left & you've gone & you're out of their hair, then they'll quit bothering you. That's what the Devil is after, he wants to get rid of you.

128. When the heat's on, you lie low undercover, & when the heat's off & people have forgotten about it & are interested in other things, you can sometimes sneak back in quietly undercover & do a little bit again, if you can get away with it.

129. In school I was a fighter for my faith! I frequently stood up for my faith & spoke out against what was being taught, & spoke out against the teachers & spoke out against the text books & against whatever was contrary to God's Word.

130. When you attack the Enemy, he tries to hit back. Nevertheless, God's Word says if you attack him with great faith, if you resist him, "he shall flee from thee". That doesn't mean you're not going to have a little fight before he runs. He may fight a little bit, but if you keep on fighting he can't take it, he will turn & run. When the Enemy comes in like a flood, the Spirit of God will raise up a standard against him.

131. He who fights & runs away lives to fight another day.

132. Discretion is sometimes the better part of valour.

133. Don't give up the ship too soon. Don't be rescued prematurely, & don't let them just scare you out without actually being driven out. The Devil tries to scare you out & just says "Boo!" & some people run.

134. We are not wicked & we have not done anything wrong but sometimes it's better to run away so we can live to fight another day.

135. There were times when Jesus & His disciples did hide out to avoid unnecessary trouble, but there were also times when they had to stand up & protect the sheep, especially from the verbal attacks of the enemies of the Truth. They usually tried to avoid contact with the religious Pharisees, but when the vipers kept picking on them to the point that it was confusing the sheep, Jesus would sock it to them so hard, refuting their lies, that He made them so mad that they wanted to kill Him. On these occasions He didn't try to hide, He was contending earnestly for the faith & the sheep.

136. Don't take the Devil's no for an answer, push ahead until you totally defeat him!

137. The Enemy always start shooting when you're going over the top & attacking him. It's proof that you're hitting him where it hurts & accomplishing something. It doesn't mean that you should turn around & run, it means you should keep fighting all the harder until the fighting is impossible.

138. All anger is not sin. The Apostle Paul tells his readers to "be angry, & sin not." To be altogether incapable of anger would be to offer no antagonism to the wrongs & oppressions of the World.

139. Never despair, but if you do, fight on in spite of despair.

140. Don't you understand the power of your father in the Spirit? I have power over all the demons of Hell & Satan & all the machinations of the Evil One! They're celebrating the victory of David your Father over Evil! Oh, there's no power that is greater than me & Jesus!

141. Once you're in the battle, it's too late to sit down & count the cost. You've either got to win or lose, & I hate to lose just by retreating, unless I'm really beaten. Once you're in the battle & engaged in these ministries, you almost have to keep fighting until they drive you off & think that they've gotten rid of you & to their way of thinking won the battle.

142. It's our general policy not to just get scared out by a few rumours & reports when the Devil says "Boo!" & our enemies start exposing us & we start getting bad publicity, but to keep right on going, sometimes taking advantage of the bad publicity to even give a harder final last ditch push.

143. You can hardly back out before you're even beaten without admitting defeat. Why give in & give up & retreat just because the Devil says "Boo!"? You almost have to continue until you're actually stopped.

144. "You must go & must march & you must conquer hearts at His command. You must obey, for this is the Will of God that ye enter in & possess the Kingdom, for this is your day, for the World is given unto you."

145. You've got to be militant, you've got to be positive, you've got to rise up & fight the Devil, not just be passive!

146. If you're a fighter, you've got to lose your temper sometimes & get angry at the Devil & sock it to him.

(See also No. K, 33, 99, 168, 171, 303, 551, 585R, 586, 597, 678, 727, 857, 980, 1375, 1376, 1401, 1420, 1425, 1432, 1454.)

147. 2SA.22:35,36 He teacheth my hands to war; so that a bow of steel is broken by mine arm. Thou hast also given me the shield of Thy Salvation: and Thy gentleness hath made me great.

148. PSA.144:1 Blessed be the Lord my strength, which teacheth my hands to war, and my fingers to fight.

149. MAT.16:19 And I will give unto thee the keys of the Kingdom of Heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on Earth shall be bound in Heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on Earth shall be loosed in Heaven.

150. JOH.18:36 Jesus answered, My Kingdom is not of this World: if My Kingdom were of this World, then would My servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is My Kingdom not from hence.

151. 2CO.2:14 Now thanks be unto God, which always causeth us to triumph in Christ, and maketh manifest the savour of His knowledge by us in every place.

152. 2CO.10:3-5 For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war after the flesh: (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds;) Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ.

153. EPH.6:10,11 Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of His might. Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the Devil.

154. 1TH.5:8 But let us, who are of the day, be sober, putting on the breastplate of faith and love; and for an helmet, the hope of Salvation.

155. 1TI.1:18 This charge I commit unto thee, son Timothy, according to the prophecies which went before on thee, that thou by them mightest war a good warfare.

156. 1TI.6:12 Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternal life, whereunto thou art also called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses.

157. 2TI.2:3 Thou therefore endure hardness, as a good soldier of Jesus Christ.

158. JUD.3 Ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints.

159. REV.12:11 And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death.



But seek ye first the Kingdom of God, & His righteousness; & all these things shall be added unto you (Mt.6:33).

1. God is more concerned about saving your lives & their souls than saving money!
2. Better is little with the fear of the Lord than great treasure & trouble therewith (Pro.15:16).
3. The rich ruleth over the poor, & the borrower is servant to the lender (Pro.22:7).
4. Wilt thou set thine eyes upon that which is not? For riches certainly make themselves wings, they fly away as an eagle toward heaven (Pro.23:5).
5. Tipping is a way of loving! People judge you & how much you appreciate them by how generous you are.
6. Money is a good servant but a poor master.
7. He who will not economise will have to agonise.
8. The richest are the hardest to win & are also the poorest givers! The poor are the most receptive & generous!
9. Every religion in the World subsists on begging, & you could hardly give to a better cause than ours, a cause that is saving young people from moral, mental & physical destruction!
10. You can't take your money to Heaven with you, but that's about the only place you can go without it!
11. God can afford tips & it makes everybody happy!
12. When you can't pay bills, you gotta cut the frills!
13. Although a dollar is only six inches long, it is used to measure many things.
14. A dollar may not do as much for us as it used to, but then we don't do as much for a dollar either.
15. The secret of financial success is to spend what you have left after saving, instead of saving what you have left after spending.
16. A lot of people go in debt just to keep up with those who already are.
17. He is always a slave who cannot live on little.
18. Appearances can be deceiving; a ten-dollar bill looks the same as it did ten years ago.
19. The trouble with a good many cars today is that the engine won't start & the payments won't stop.
20. It's strange that people call money "dough"--dough sticks to your fingers.
21. One remarkable thing about the dollar is that when it floats, it sinks.
22. A lot of people just can't stand prosperity--but then, most people don't have to.
23. Beware of little expenses; a small leak will sink a great ship.
24. The fact is, the moment financial stability is assured, spiritual bankruptcy is also assured.--Mahatma Gandhi
25. Wealth is not his that has it, but his that enjoys it.
26. When money talks, the truth is silent.
27. If your outgo exceeds your income, then your upkeep will be your downfall.
28. Do you spend more than you make on things you don't need to impress people you don't have to?
29. A little inflation is like a little pregnancy--it keeps on growing.
30. Dollars & sense do not always travel together.
31. Pretending to be rich keeps many people poor.
32. I don't know of anything better than a woman if you want to spend money where it will show.
33. It's not that the gold is getting any more expensive--it's that the money is getting worthless!

34. It's all in how you use your riches that counts!

35. I don't mind giving money away, but I don't like to throw it away.

36. The Lord is very generous, but He's also a penny-pincher & wants to make sure every one of His pennies count!

37. Debts are unscriptural!

38. If you spend the nickels & dimes & the little coins very cautiously & judiciously, then God will probably trust you with dollars & more!

39. The Lord's servant is worth more than His money.

40. It's wrong, dishonest & a sin to borrow money you know you can't pay back!

41. Borrowing without repaying is both illegal & a sin, & God certainly will not bless you for it, & more likely will punish you for it!

42. When you pinch the pocketbook nerve, you pinch the most sensitive nerve most people have.

43. So often our policies are dictated or influenced by financial conditions, when finances shouldn't really have much to do with it! We ought to just obey the Lord!

44. Don't ever make the test of anything whether it brings in money or not.

45. Never discuss your finances with outsiders. Never discuss specific finances before anyone except those directly involved & who have to know.

46. Never pay cash for anything that you can buy on time & never buy anything you can possibly rent or get free, & the longer the time payments the better!--The End is near!

47. Your lives are priceless & your work for the Lord is absolutely without price! Your safety, your security, your convenience, your health, your happiness, your comfort & your efficiency of operation are the most important considerations, not the cost!

48. Money answereth all things & you'd better get used to answering with it! Tipping pays, so just consider what you must give a good investment.

49. A man in debt is caught in a net.

50. A penny saved is a penny gained.

51. Great profits, great risks.

52. Loans & debts make worries & frets.

53. No bees, no honey--no work, no money.

54. God's idea is not to share the poverty, but to share the wealth!

55. Most of you already know the deceitfulness of riches, but poverty won't get you anywhere, either.

56. The cheapest thing is not always the best thing.

57. They that preach the Gospel shall live of the Gospel!

58. When you find yourself in a financial bind you are either: (1) not desperate, (2) wasteful, or (3) disobedient!

59. Never get out of the habit of pinching the pennies.

60. Watch out about going into something for the money, instead of the ministry.

61. Want something aside for when you're old?--All investments in God pay 100-fold!--10,000%

62. Finances are one way God has of controlling us. Either He'll dry it up or increase it, according to the way He wants us to move.

63. Money talks! In fact, money squawks!

64. All of us are more precious than gold & silver & jewels because we'll last forever!

65. What's money? God's got plenty of it! It's talent & God's children & real workers for the Lord that are scarce!

66. The Gospel am free, Brethren, but it costs somethin' to pipe it to ya!

67. Ask for donations! Don't undersell the whole revolution with cut-rate religion and bargain-counter copouts!

68. It's good to have money & the things money can buy. But it's good, too, to check up once in a while & make sure you haven't lost the things money can't buy.

69. I'm all for trying to do things the fastest, easiest, cheapest, most efficient & fruitful way.

70. Always try to accomplish more on less.

71. By timely mending, save much spending.

72. The secret of economy is to live as cheaply the first few days after payday as you did the last few days before.

73. As the missionary said to the rich visitor from the States, "If there's anything else you need, just let us know & we'll explain to you how to do without it!"

74. I don't believe in living on credit, I don't believe in living on borrowed money. I believe in trying to live within your income.

75. Don't forget to say "God bless you" when you tip someone, so they'll be sure & give God credit!

76. The Rich are often a greater hindrance than a help in preaching the Word of God, because they usually want to control what they give!

77. God is not against riches. Some people have the wrong idea. He's not against wealth. He's only against riches & wealth in the hands of too few when too many don't have enough! God thinks wealth is great, & will give you all you can possibly stand, if you'll give it away & share it so everybody has enough!

78. God will not bless waste!

79. Help us to think things through & analyse things & weigh things & count the cost & figure out how to save money, & not have to wait till we don't have it to figure out how to save it.

80. What's money & time & space to the Lord?--It's personnel He needs!

81. Money is like manure.--It's no good unless you spread it around.

82. The only solution to the financial problems of the World today is the Antichrist solution, the total abandonment of today's World system of economics, the World monetary system, then an establishment of his credit system.

83. A balanced budget is when you keep your expenses within your income & you live on what you earn.

84. We need to save, to economise, to cut everything to the bone of absolute essentials & necessities that we cannot do without, & eliminate the luxuries & the little fineries the Lord has let us enjoy for awhile. "The days of this ignorance He winked at, but now He calls us to repent" (Acts 17:30) & get busy & try to economise & save money & prepare to live on less & institute austere measures that will help us to survive!

85. The more people living together, the more economically they can live!

86. Eventually we're going to have to economise, so why not do it now? Eventually!--Why not now?

87. If we can get by without it then, why not get by without it now?

(See also No.189, 210, 211, 212, 301A, 316C, 332A, 336A, 652, 665, 667, 673, 682, 684, 697, 701, 702, 804, 840, 841, 842, 843, 866, 885, 893, 903, 928, 934, 1081, 1105, 1216, 1271, 1276, 1320, 1321, 1433.)

88. DEU.8:18 But thou shalt remember the Lord thy God: for it is He that giveth thee power to get wealth.

89. PSA.37:16 A little that a righteous man hath is better than the riches of many wicked.

90. PSA.37:21 The wicked borroweth, and payeth not again: but the righteous showeth mercy, and giveth.

91. PSA.62:10 If riches increase, set not your heart upon them.

92. PRO.11:28 He that trusteth in his riches shall fall.

93. PRO.15:27 He that is greedy of gain troubleth his own house.

94. PRO.22:7 The rich ruleth over the poor, and the borrower is servant to the lender.

95. PRO.23:4 Labour not to be rich: cease from thine own wisdom.

96. PRO.28:20 A faithful man shall abound with blessings: but he that maketh haste to be rich shall not be innocent.

97. ECC.10:19 Money answereth all things.

98. MAT.6:19 Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon Earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal.

99. MAT.19:23 Then said Jesus unto His disciples, Verily I say unto you, That a rich man shall hardly enter into the Kingdom of Heaven.

100. ACT.2:44,45 And all that believed were together, and had all things common; And sold their possessions and goods, and parted them to all men, as every man had need.

101. ROM.13:8 Owe no man anything, but to love one another.

102. 1TI.6:10 For the love of money is the root of all evil.



I am the Lord thy God.... Thou shalt have no other gods before Me (Ex.20:2,3).

1. God will not tolerate your putting anything else first before Him and His Work and human souls and their eternal salvation!
2. The most important time you have to spend is with the Lord!
3. Take time to be holy.--Wholly His and whole in body, mind, and spirit!
4. If you put anything else before the Lord, it has become your God.
5. To neglect your fellowship with the King of kings because you're so busy with the affairs of the kingdom can be disastrous to your spiritual life and communion with the Lord!
6. Dear Lord, keep us from having our lives so full of good things that we don't have time for the best.
7. God may appreciate the bedroom slippers you're making for Him, but He'd rather have you!
8. God made all kinds of love & He expects you to enjoy them all in Him, according to His rules--putting Him first.
9. God will not take second place even to His service!
10. "Thou shalt have no other gods before Me"--not even lost souls!
11. God will not take second place! He will not let Himself in the person of His Prophets be pushed back into the background!--With God, it's all or nothing at all!
12. Witnessing is not the most important thing. Our fellowship with God is most important.
13. Christ is not valued at all unless He is valued above all.
14. God's voice will fade if attention isn't paid!
15. Don't ever tell God you haven't got time for Him to reveal something to you.
16. God will not tolerate being put in second place nor His work neglected!
17. You always have time for the things you put first.
18. "For behold the bridegroom cometh! Come ye out therefore to meet him, & waste not your oil upon the unworthy but save the best for your betrothal, unto Him whose right it is! For not all are worthy!"
19. He knows, He loves, He cares!
Nothing His Truth can dim!
He gives the very best to those
Who save the best for Him!
20. "You must not squander your strength on too many children, lest you have none left for your Lord!"
21. "You must seek first the King & His Kingdom! Then shall all these others be added unto you by His power & His strength & His Kingdom & His might & in His time, if you give first place to Him!"
22. "The Queen's bedchamber is a sacred hallowed spot where only the chosen may enter, & where she must save herself for her King & rest in His arms from her labours! All may not enter therein, but she must choose only those who are called & chosen & can do their best for their Queen, to strengthen her & help her & uphold the crown & the honour of the Kingdom, in love for her Lord first of all!--And she shall find rest to her soul!"
23. The first place must belong to Him in peace & quietness & rest & feeding & fellowship.
24. You've been drafted by the Lord, into His Army, and His duties come first.
25. Whatever you put before God, He'll take away.
26. "Save first place for Him & His Word & His Love & His power, & from this shall your strength be!"
27. The Lord is your Lover & you can only belong to Him. No one else can truly possess you & nothing else can ever satisfy you.

28. You don't belong in this Family if you put anything first but God Himself! He will not take any other place but first place--either in your life, heart, mind, family, strength, time or economics.

29. Deliver us, Lord, from this spirit of "busyness"!--Too busy for you, & too busy for Your Prophet!

30. Probably the greatest mistake of sincere Christians is to make a god of God's service!

31. When you first wake up, before you call anybody or talk to anybody, talk to God, for God's sake!--Get your orders from Him for the day!

32. Help us, Lord not to be so pressured that we put off our time with Thee. Help us even as we go out this morning, to bask in Thy sunshine for a little while & to breathe deeply the refreshment of Thy wonderful fresh air, to put Thee first each day, to spiritually bask in Thy sunshine, rest in Thy arms, drink deeply of Thy Word & inhale of Thy Spirit.

33. If you love the material World more than the spiritual, then it becomes a form of worship of the creation more than the Creator, & God in His Spiritual World refuses to take second place in your affections & your interests or even in the activities of your life.

34. The Lord doesn't mind your being beautiful & having nice things & a good time & enjoying life, as long as you continue His Work & help others & don't neglect the Lord, the Word, your prayer life, your devotions, & all the things that you need to do.

35. To seek first, means foremost & above all!--Before everything else, above everything else, beyond everything else, & more than anything else! It means working for God & others more than for yourself, more than for money, more than for riches, more than for pleasure, more than for health, more than for government, more than for anything else.

36. Help us, Lord, to be willing to sacrifice & to do without some things so that we can enjoy the most important essential & necessary things, like Thy Word, Lord.

(See also No.74, 98, 191, 320, 697, 934, 1040, 1380, 1427.)

37. GEN.22:12 And He said, Lay not thine hand upon the lad, neither do thou any thing unto him: for now I know that thou fearest God, seeing thou hast not withheld thy son, thine only son from Me.

38. EXO.20:3,5a Thou shalt have no other gods before Me. Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the Lord thy God am a jealous God!

39. EXO.34:14 For thou shalt worship no other god: for the Lord, whose name is Jealous, is a jealous God.

40. DEU.6:5 And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might.

41. DEU.10:12,13 And now, Israel, what doth the Lord thy God require of thee, but to fear the Lord thy God, to walk in all His ways, and to love Him, and to serve the Lord thy God with all thy heart and with all thy soul, To keep the commandments of the Lord, and His statutes.

42. DEU.32:16,21 They provoked Him to jealousy with strange gods. They have moved Me to jealousy with that which is not God; they have provoked Me to anger with their vanities.

43. 2KI.17:35b,36 Ye shall not fear other gods, nor bow yourselves to them, nor serve them, nor sacrifice to them: But the Lord, Who brought you up out of the land of Egypt with great power and a stretched out arm, Him shall ye fear, and Him shall ye worship, and to Him shall ye do sacrifice.

44. PSA.84:10 For a day in Thy courts is better than a thousand. I had rather be a doorkeeper in the house of my God, than to dwell in the tents of wickedness.

45. PSA.96:4 For the Lord is great, and greatly to be praised: He is to be feared above all gods.

46. ISA.42:8 I am the Lord: that is My name: and My glory will I not give to another, neither My praise to graven images.

47. MAT.6:24 No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

48. MAT.6:33 But seek ye first the Kingdom of God, and His righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you.

49. MAT.10:37,38 He that loveth father or mother more than Me is not worthy of Me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than Me is not worthy of Me. And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after Me, is not worthy of Me.

50. LUK.10:41,42 And Jesus answered and said unto her, Martha, Martha, thou art careful and troubled about many things: But one thing is needful: and Mary hath chosen that good part, which shall not be taken away from her.

51. ACT.5:29 Then Peter and the other apostles answered and said, We ought to obey God rather than men.

52. 1CO.10:31 Whether therefore ye eat, or drink, or whatsoever ye do, do all to the glory of God.
53. COL.3:1,2 If ye then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God. Set your affection on things above, not on things on the Earth.

41. FOOLISHNESS & SHALLOWNESS --{page 332}--



Forsake the foolish, & live; & go in the way of understanding (Pro.9:6).

1. It is very sad for God's children to be silly & act silly & talk silly & be guilty of foolishness!
2. I just don't believe in risking your life just for a thrill. We have enough thrills in our life without deliberately risking getting killed.
3. If fifty million people say a foolish thing, it is still a foolish thing.
4. One fool makes many.
5. Empty vessels make the most noise.
6. Thousands of nuts hold a car together--but one can scatter it all over the road.
7. Lord deliver us from sickening shallowness & froth & foam & garbage, with no real substance, no meaning, no message, no power, no spirit & no results!
8. It is dangerous to have people around us & around our Homes who are not in tune with the Lord, because if you don't spank'm, God will!--And you're apt to pay the bills for it!
9. You can't be led of the flesh when God's Spirit may know differently & often does!
10. Fellowship with the World is enmity against God!
11. If you still hunger for fellowship with the World, there's something wrong with you spiritually!
12. If you're leaning to your own understanding & forgetting all about acknowledging the Lord or listening to the voice of His Spirit to lead & guide you, then you're apt to fall into one of the Devil's traps in an unguarded moment, & it's dangerous business!
13. We ought to be so thankful for our own fellowship that we shouldn't have to go seeking out the fellowship of the World.
14. If you sleep with dogs you'll get up with fleas.
15. Don't let others drag you down to their level, you pull them up to yours!
16. When you don't have the wisdom of the Spirit, then you're awful dumb!
17. It's dangerous for people on our team to be shallow, not deep in the Lord, not deep in the Spirit, but shallow in the flesh, carnal & carnally-minded. That was Saul's problem. He began to trust his own wisdom & his own arm instead of the Lord & the prophet, & look where it got him! He lost the Kingdom & his place in it, & the whole thing had to be given to somebody more spiritual who was led of the Spirit & the Lord & not just his own mind & wisdom. We are not smart enough, any of us, & we need to cling to the Lord & seek His guidance continually.
18. We're in a dangerous business & we have got to stay close to the Lord & follow the Lord & make sure it's God's will, not just rest on the arm of the flesh & natural reasoning like Saul did.
19. "Love not the World, neither the things that are in the World! For the love of the World is enmity with God!" (1Jn.2:15, Ja.4:4.) So if you still have a hankering for those things, watch out! That's a fifth column in your

own heart! That's a poison in your own soul! It's the devil's own tool, it's a hole in the dike, if you still have a temptation toward these things.

20. No wonder God's got to send the Tribulation--to purge & purify & make the Church white & get rid of their foolishness!

21. We can make such foolish mistakes & ridiculous decisions if we're out of the spirit & dwelling in the flesh & natural reasoning.

22. You cannot fill your mind and heart with Worldly wisdom, the foolishness of man, without it affecting your spirit.

23. Shallow witnessing brings shallow results.

24. Shallowness, superficiality, manpleasing & hypocrisy are all many know in the World, & they are so thankful for an opportunity to share their deepest thoughts & feelings or even fears.

(See also No.198, 340, 780, 784, 856, 930, 1377, 1511, 1512.)

25. SA.12:20,21 Yet turn not aside from following the Lord, but serve the Lord with all your heart; And turn ye not aside: for then should ye go after vain things, which cannot profit nor deliver; for they are vain.

26. SA.13:13 And Samuel said to Saul, Thou hast done foolishly: thou hast not kept the commandment of the Lord thy God, which He commanded thee: for now would the Lord have established thy kingdom upon Israel for ever.

27. JOB.15:2-5 Should a wise man utter vain knowledge, and fill his belly with the east wind? Should he reason with unprofitable talk? or with speeches wherewith he can do no good? Yea, thou castest off fear, and restrainest prayer before God. For thy mouth utterest thine iniquity, and thou choosest the tongue of the crafty.

28. PSA.39:5,6 Behold, Thou hast made my days as an handbreath; and my age is as nothing before Thee: verily every man at his best state is altogether vanity. Selah. Surely every man walketh in a vain shew: surely they are disquieted in vain: he heapeth up riches, and knoweth not who shall gather them.

29. .53:1 The fool has said in his heart, There is no God. Corrupt are they, and have done abominable iniquity: there is none that doeth good.

30. .94:11 The Lord knoweth the thoughts of man, that they are vanity.

31. .119:113 I hate vain thoughts: but Thy law do I love.

32. .9:6 Forsake the foolish, and live; and go in the way of understanding.

33. .10:13 In the lips of him that hath understanding wisdom is found: but a rod is for the back of him that is void of understanding.

34. .12:23 A prudent man concealeth knowledge: but the heart of fools proclaimeth foolishness.

35. PRO.15:2 The tongue of the wise useth knowledge aright: but the mouth of fools poureth out foolishness.

36. .15:14 The heart of him that hath understanding seeketh knowledge: but the mouth of fools feedeth on foolishness.

37. .18:6,7 A fool's lips enter into contention, and his mouth calleth for strokes. A fool's mouth is his destruction, and his lips are the snare of his soul.

38. .22:15 Foolishness is bound in the heart of a child; but the rod of correction shall drive it far from him.

39. .26:4,5 Answer not a fool according to his folly, lest thou also be like unto him. Answer a fool according to his folly, lest he be wise in his own conceit.

40. .5:3b A fool's voice is known by multitude of words.

41. .7:25 I applied my heart to know, and to search, and to seek out wisdom, and the reason of things, and to know the wickedness of folly, even of foolishness and madness.

42. .10:11-15 Surely the serpent will bite without enchantment; and a babbler is no better. The words of a wise man's mouth are gracious; but the lips of a fool will swallow up himself. The beginning of the words of his mouth is foolishness: and the end of his talk is mischievous madness. A fool also is full of words: a man cannot tell what shall be; and what shall be after him, who can tell him? The labour of the foolish wearieth every one of them, because he knoweth not how to go to the city.

43. .12:36,37 But I say unto you, That every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment. For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.

44. .7:18-23 And He saith unto them, Are ye so without understanding also? Do ye not perceive, that whatsoever thing from without entereth into the man, it cannot defile him; Because it entereth not into his heart, but into the belly, and goeth out into the draught, purging all meats? And He said, That which cometh out of the man, that defileth the man. For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness: All these evil things come from within, and defile the man.

45. .6:45 A good man out of the good treasure of his heart bringeth forth that which is good; and an evil man out of the evil treasure of his heart bringeth forth that which is evil: for of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh.

46. .21:34 And take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting, and drunkenness, and cares of this life, and so that day come upon you unawares.

47. .8:6-8 For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be. So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God.

48. .5:19a,21 Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these;...Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the Kingdom of God.

49. .4:17 This I say therefore, and testify in the Lord, that ye henceforth walk not as other Gentiles walk, in the vanity of their mind.

50. .5:4 Neither filthiness, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, which are not convenient: but rather giving of thanks.

51. .5:6,7 Let no man deceive you with vain words: for because of these things cometh the wrath of God upon the children of disobedience. Be not ye therefore partakers with them.

52. .2:18 Let no man beguile you of your reward in a voluntary humility and worshipping of angels, intruding into those things which he hath not seen, vainly puffed up by his fleshly mind.

53. TI.1:4-7 Neither give heed to fables and endless genealogies, which minister questions, rather than Godly edifying which is in faith: so do. Now the end of the commandment is charity out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of faith unfeigned: From which some having swerved have turned aside unto vain jangling; Desiring to be teachers of the law; understanding neither what they say, nor whereof they affirm.

54. TI.2:16,17 But shun profane and vain babblings: for they will increase unto more ungodliness. And their word will eat as doth a canker.

55. .3:9 But avoid foolish questions, and genealogies, and contentions, and strivings about the law; for they are unprofitable and vain.



If ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you (Mt.6:14).

1. We deserve Hell, punishment & the whole works, but we get to escape it because we believe in Christ & receive His forgiveness & His punishment on the cross in our place.

2. You have a Defence Lawyer who pleads your case: He says to the Judge, "I have already paid for this sin!"

3. Your kisses, Jesus, kiss away their hurts and their tears and their sins and their diseases!

4. Regret can be an appalling waste of energy--you can't build on it. So acknowledge your sin, accept God's forgiveness, & get on with living for His honour & glory.

5. Before the Throne of God above

I have a strong, a perfect plea:

A great High Priest, Whose Name is Love,
Who ever lives and pleads for me.

6. God pardons like a mother, who kisses the offense into everlasting forgetfulness.

7. You can never be too bad for Jesus--only too good.

8. There's an all-seeing Eye watching you--but He's loving, gentle, tender, forgiving and waiting with open arms.

9. David and some others made some big mistakes, but they had big repentances, so they had big forgivenesses.

10. King David was one of the worst sinners that the World has known, but he was also one of the greatest saints, because he knew he was totally dependent on the love & the mercy & the grace of God for forgiveness.

11. Until we confess, God won't forgive.

12. God can forgive us for our sins, but it's hard or sometimes impossible to undo the damage they've done, & we often have to suffer & watch others suffer for them for the rest our lives!

13. It is only love that makes God's mercy work.

14. You can't appreciate God's mercy until you've known the Devil's justice.

15. God will forgive anything except total unbelief.

16. If I have wounded any soul today,

If I have caused one foot to go astray,

If I have walked in my own wilful way,

Dear Lord, forgive!

17. He that cannot forgive others, breaks the bridge over which he must pass himself; for every man has need to be forgiven.

18. It also takes two to make up after a quarrel.

19. A good memory is fine--but the ability to forget is the true test of greatness.

20. It is only the forgiving who are qualified to receive forgiveness.

21. One of the great arts of living is the art of forgetting.

22. Before you flare up at someone's faults, take time to count ten--ten of your own.

23. Forgiveness is the noblest revenge.

24. His heart was as great as the world, for there was no room in it to hold the memory of a wrong.

25. Your mercy is a sacrifice! To forgive someone is a sacrifice! To be sorry is a sacrifice.
26. Our own weaknesses make us sympathetic with other's frailties.
27. Let's forgive one another, as God, for Christ's sake, hath forgiven us!
28. The remedy for wrongs is to forgive & forget them.
29. Forgiveness is the fragrance the flower sheds on the heel that crushed it.
30. If we're only going to be forgiven the way we forgive others & be shown the mercy that we show others, some people are going to be in a pretty bad fix!
31. To err is human, to forgive divine!
32. To forgive & forget a wrong is the best revenge.
33. You have a tremendous advantage over the person who slanders you or does you a wilful injustice: you have it within your power to forgive that person.
34. If they are truly repentant, you must forgive those who have wronged you, & truly seek forgiveness of those whom you have wronged & take them by the hand back into your circle of love & fellowship & happy, joyful labours & pleasures together.
35. He who injured you was either stronger or weaker. If he was weaker, spare him!--If he was stronger, spare yourself!
36. Forgiving starts with your asking the other person to forgive you.
37. There's a time to wink as well as to see.
38. Sympathy is the result of thinking with your heart.
39. If you don't have love enough to forgive, you don't have love--because forgiveness is love!
40. God's Mercy is unlimited, His Love is boundless, the Love of God is greater than His laws. Love is God & God is always. It's like a stream, like a river that just keeps flowing no matter what, because of the dew of Heaven--Jesus!
41. The blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanses us from all sin!--Past sin, present sin, parental sin, every sin!
42. How can you not comfort others with the comfort wherewith ye yourselves are comforted? How can you not extend the same mercy that He has extended to you? How can you not at least give them a chance?
43. God doesn't even remember your sins, why should you?
44. Going mad with remorse for your yesterdays, makes the cross of Christ of none effect.
45. Every day of the past is beyond our reach & we should leave it there.
46. Before Jesus found us we were all black sheep--but He washed us with His blood & made our wool as white as snow!
47. Justice has no mercy. Justice just decides if a thing is right or wrong & that's it. But love & mercy, though they know the sinner's wrong, they forgive.
48. If you forgive people when they really shouldn't be forgiven, then God has to forgive them, because He said, "Whose soever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them." (Jn.20:23.)
49. But why should you forgive people who know what they're doing & are causing trouble, if they're not repentant & if they don't come & ask you for forgiveness?
50. God can still forgive you for your past errors & mistakes & He can still mightily use you in mighty battles & victories & great things to come--if you'll just be meek & quiet, humble & obedient.

(See also No.18, 25, 75, 531, 583, 594, 606, 635, 641, 647, 648, 681, 718, 719, 753, 763, 1247, 1371, 1396, 1547.)

51. .18:26 And the Lord said, if I find in Sodom fifty righteous within the city, then I will spare all the place for their sakes.
52. .20:6 And shewing mercy unto thousands of them that love Me, and keep My commandments.
53. .32:14 The Lord repented of the evil which He thought to do unto His people.
54. .14:18a,19 The Lord is longsuffering, and of great mercy, forgiving iniquity and transgression. Pardon, I beseech Thee, the iniquity of this people according unto the greatness of Thy mercy, and as Thou hast forgiven this people, from Egypt even until now.
55. **SA.24:14,16 Let us fall now into the hand of the Lord; for His mercies are great. When the angel stretched out his hand upon Jerusalem to destroy it, the Lord repented Him of the evil, and said to the angel that destroyed the people, It is enough: stay now thine hand.**
56. **CH.21:13 And David said unto Gad, I am in a great strait: let me fall now into the hand of the Lord; for very great are His mercies: but let me not fall into the hand of man.**

57. .18:25 With the merciful Thou wilt shew Thyself merciful; with an upright man Thou wilt shew Thyself upright.

58. .32:1,2,5 Blessed is he whose transgression is forgiven, whose sin is covered. Blessed is the man unto whom the Lord imputeth not iniquity, and in whose spirit there is no guile. I acknowledged my sin unto Thee, and mine iniquity have I not hid. I said, I will confess my transgressions unto the Lord; and Thou forgavest the iniquity of my sin. Selah.

59. PSA.51:1 Have mercy upon me, O God, according to Thy lovingkindness: according unto the multitude of Thy tender mercies blot out my transgressions.

60. .51:10 Create in me a clean heart, O God; and renew a right spirit within me.

61. .86:5 For Thou, Lord, art good, and ready to forgive; and plenteous in mercy unto all them that call upon Thee.

62. .103:8-13 The Lord is merciful and gracious, slow to anger, and plenteous in mercy. He will not always chide: neither will He keep His anger for ever. He hath not dealt with us after our sins; nor rewarded us according to our iniquities. For as the Heaven is high above the Earth, so great is His mercy toward them that fear Him. As far as the east is from the west, to far hath He removed our transgressions from us. Like as a father pitieth his children, so the Lord pitieth them that fear Him.

63. PSA.103:17 The mercy of the Lord is from everlasting to everlasting upon them that fear Him.

64. .130:3,4 If Thou, Lord, shouldest mark iniquities, O Lord, who shall stand? But there is forgiveness with Thee, that Thou mayest be feared.

65. PRO.3:3,4 Let not mercy and truth forsake thee: bind them about thy neck; write them upon the table of thine heart: So shalt thou find favour and good understanding in the sight of God and man.

66. .16:6 By mercy and truth iniquity is purged: and by the fear of the Lord men depart from evil.

67. .24:16 For a just man falleth seven times, and riseth up again: but the wicked shall fall into mischief.

68. ISA.1:18 Come now, and let us reason together, saith the Lord: though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool.

69. .43:25 I, even I, am He that blotteth out thy transgressions for Mine Own sake, and will not remember thy sins.

70. ISA.44:22 I have blotted out, as a thick cloud, thy transgressions, and, as a cloud, thy sins: return unto Me; for I have redeemed thee.

71. ISA.54:7,8 For a small moment have I forsaken thee; but with great mercies will I gather thee. In a little wrath I hid My face from thee for a moment; but with everlasting kindness will I have mercy on thee, saith the Lord thy Redeemer.

72. .55:7 Let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man his thoughts: and let him return unto the Lord, and He will have mercy upon him; and to our God, for He will abundantly pardon.

73. .3:22,23 It is of the Lord's mercies that we are not consumed, because His compassions fail not. They are new every morning: great is Thy faithfulness.

74. .7:18,19 Who is a God like unto Thee, that pardoneth iniquity, and passeth by the transgression of the remnant of His heritage? He retaineth not His anger for ever, because He delighteth in mercy. He will turn again, He will have compassion upon us; He will subdue our iniquities; and Thou wilt cast all their sins into the depths of the sea.

75. .5:7 Blessed are the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy.

76. .5:23,24 Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath ought against thee; leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.

77. .6:14,15 For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your Heavenly Father will also forgive you: But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

78. .9:13 But go ye and learn what that meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice.

79. .18:21,22 Then came Peter to Him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? till seven times? Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven times: but, Until seventy times seven.

80. .11:25,26 And when ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have ought against any: that your Father also which is in Heaven may forgive you your trespasses. But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in Heaven forgive your trespasses.

81. .6:36,37 Be ye therefore merciful, as your Father also is merciful. Judge not, and ye shall not be judged: condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven.

82. .7:47,48 Wherefore I say unto thee, Her sins, which are many, are forgiven; for she loved much: but to whom little is forgiven, the same loveth little. And He said unto her, Thy sins are forgiven.

83. .23:34a Then said Jesus, Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do.

84. .20:23 Whose soever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them; and whose soever sins ye retain, they are retained.

85. .26:18 To open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in Me.

86. ROM.5:20b But where sin abounded, grace did much more abound.

87. CO.2:6-11 Sufficient to such a man is this punishment, which was inflicted of many. So that contrariwise ye ought rather to forgive him, and comfort him, lest perhaps such a one should be swallowed up with overmuch sorrow. Wherefore I beseech you that ye would confirm your love toward him. For to this end also did I write, that I might know the proof of you, whether ye be obedient in all things. To whom ye forgive any thing, I forgive also: for if I forgave any thing, to whom I forgave it, for your sakes forgave I it in the person of Christ; Lest Satan should get an advantage of us: for we are not ignorant of his devices.

88. .1:7 In Whom we have redemption through His blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of His grace.

89. .3:13 Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a quarrel against any: even as Christ forgave you, so also do ye.

90. JAM.2:13 For he shall have judgment without mercy, that hath shewed no mercy; and mercy rejoiceth against judgment.

91. 1JO.1:9 If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.

92. JO.2:12 I write unto you, little children, because your sins are forgiven you for His Name's sake.

(See also JON.4:2,10,11; MAT.18:23-35.)



So likewise, whosoever he be of you that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be My disciple (Lk.14:33).

1. This is God's first test to every disciple: To see if he loves Him enough to put Him first by forsaking all immediately to follow Him now! The Lord seems to make the entrance exams hardest of all!

2. Once you have determined to serve the Lord, you can't lose--anything but your life!--Or maybe your wife or husband or children or mother or father or houses & lands or your money--but what is that in comparison to all He offers you?

3. The Lord brings you out so He can bring you in.

4. Don't remind yourself of your losses. Forget the past and live for today!

5. The worst thing you can do is constantly remind yourself of what you've forsaken.

6. A woman who was called to be a missionary but instead married a millionaire showed my Mother through her mansion & said sadly: "See all that I traded God for?"

7. The more He gives you, the more you're going to have to forsake!

8. You can't just "forsake all" once.--You've got to keep doing it every day!

9. You have to keep leaving Egypt every day, or you're going to build up a new Egypt.

10. If you keep forsaking more every day, the Lord is going to keep giving you back more.

11. Forsaking all is not just something you do once & for all, you have to constantly be forsaking in your heart. Every day you're forsaking the Devil's voice & temptations to try to suck you back into the old ways & the old system!

12. When you give everything to God, then He takes care of everything! But when you hold something back for yourself, then you must take care of it!

13. Sometimes God makes you forsake a thing or lay it on the altar just to see if you're willing to forsake all to follow Him, when He intends to give it back to you--like Isaac.

14. Don't hand me any of that stuff about "Then why did God give children to me, just to take them away again?" That's why He gives us everything, damn it!--Just to give back to Him for His Glory! If I hadn't given my children to God you wouldn't be here!

15. Give to God as though you never expect to get it back.

16. When He could trust me with them, God gave me back many things that I gave up for Him.

17. People's pasts really have to be buried or they're apt to plague them later.

18. If you don't keep forsaking every day, you keep accumulating everyday.

19. How can you take something away from the man who's given up everything?

20. You don't have to be rich to be attached to your riches. I knew a poor man who was attached to his shack, he loved & worshipped his little shack. He wasn't willing to give it up. You can even be a poor man & still trust in the little wealth you have. It's not how much you give that counts, it's how much you have left!

21. You will never know the fullness of the joy of serving God to the utmost until you have forsaken all to follow Jesus Christ.

22. You don't have to have very much to have "great" possessions. It only has to be just a little bit bigger than God in your eyes. It only has to keep you from serving God. It only has to be just enough to keep you from breaking loose & shaking loose & serving God.

23. I don't understand how anybody can give God less than everything.

24. Why can't we, the Family, make at least the same sacrifices for the Lord that soldiers & sailors & marines & businessmen make for their jobs & their work?

25. When you consider that military men go away for months & years at a time to fight their nation's battles in far-off fields & even suffer injury, sickness, death & all kinds of dangers away from home & family just for the sake of patriotism or their country, or even the draft because they're forced to go, & businessmen spend most of their time away from home on the road or at the office, I'd like to know why some of our people are so reluctant to be willing to leave home & family & wife & children & forsake all, as many used to do readily & without second thought, to serve the Lord in this Family in extremely important & urgent work which can't be done at home or with their family but has to be done alone in the field?

(See also No.B, F, S, 23, 34, 42, 203, 225, 251, 314A, 510, 542, 568, 641, 657, 673, 721, 727, 731, 778, 783, 880, 897, 1332, 1653.)

26. .45:10,11 Forget also thine own people, and thy father's house; So shall the King greatly desire thy beauty: for He is thy Lord; and worship thou Him.

27. **MAT.13:44 Again, the Kingdom of Heaven is like unto treasure hid in a field; the which when a man hath found, he hideth, and for joy thereof goeth and selleth all that he hath and buyeth that field.**

28. .16:25,26 For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for My sake shall find it. For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole World, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?

29. .19:21 Jesus said unto him, If thou wilt be perfect, go and sell that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in Heaven.

30. **MAT.19:29 And every one that hath forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for My Name's sake, shall receive an hundredfold, and shall inherit everlasting life.**

31. **MAR.10:29,30 And Jesus answered and said, Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for My sake, and the Gospel's, But he shall receive an hundredfold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions; and in the World to come eternal life.**

32. .12:33 Sell that ye have, and give alms; provide yourselves bags which wax not old, a treasure in the Heavens that faileth not, where no thief approacheth, neither moth corrupteth.

33. .14:33 So likewise, whosoever he be of you that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be My disciple.

34. **PHI.3:8 Yea doubtless, and I count all things but loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but dung, that I may win Christ.**

35. .3:13,14 Brethren, I count not myself to have apprehended: but this one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things which are before, I press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.

36. .11:27 By faith he forsook Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the king: for he endured, as seeing Him Who is invisible.



Where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty. And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free (2Cor.3:17; Jn.8:32).

1. Thank You Lord for the freedom You've given us & the unity You've given us & the liberty You've given us & the joy You've given us & the happiness to enjoy life to the full!
2. Eternal vigilance--the price of freedom!
3. Liberty is wrong when it hinders a weaker one.
4. Thank God for sex & beauty & music & happiness & love! Thank God we're free to enjoy it all!
5. We are only bound by God's Law of Love & this gives us a lot of freedom, but in another way it is the most binding law of all!--You've got to love everybody, which is one of the hardest things of all to do!
6. Those who forge chains for others are themselves the slaves of bigotry!
7. "Four walls do not a prison make, nor iron bars a cage!" You can be in prison anywhere if your heart & spirit are not free but are bound by Satan's chains, but you can be free even behind iron bars if your heart & spirit have been set free by Jesus.
8. Our character is shown by what we would do if every restraint were removed.
9. I'd rather have too much freedom than not enough!
10. The Devil's people preach freedom but they don't have it!
11. The price of absolute total security is the sacrifice of liberty & freedom!--The price of liberty & freedom is the sacrifice of security!
12. The Lord in some ways sets us free, but in other ways He binds us & ties us to Himself.
13. We're love slaves, the best kind of slavery in the World!--We never want to be free to do anything but serve Jesus forever for love!
14. Communism, Marxism, Leninism, Socialism, Americanism or any other kind of ism might be able to overcome the World with guns & bullets & propaganda of the mind, but only God can change heart! Only His truth can bring freedom!
15. Each new blast of the power of God and His Words has broken the chains that bound you, shattered the locks of your prison doors, destroyed the walls that surrounded you and set you free.
16. True Christianity is not a restriction but a release.
17. I believe in freedom & I practice it too!
18. Freedom is our business & it's free!
19. Let's sing a song for Quixote!
Let's sing a song for the free!
Let's sing a song though we're dotey!
For we're bound for Eternity!
20. We have been liberated from the narrow confines of carnal human limitations into the glorious freedoms of the realms of the reality of His Spirit!
21. Each age or generation of the Church has taken another step toward freedom from the harsh restrictions of the law to the total freedom of love through the grace of God!
22. If your freedom is used wisely, you'll be given more. But if it is used foolishly and dangerously, it may be taken away from you.
23. Have you got enough love to be trusted with enough liberty to live life to the full?
24. Will you use your liberty to heal and help, or harm and hinder? The answer is up to you.

25. If you are strong enough in spirit and filled with His Love, you can be trusted with His liberty.
26. My delight is to please the Lord, so the Lord lets me do as I please!
27. Liberty means responsibility. That is why most men dread it.
28. We must be willing to pay a price for freedom, for no price that is ever asked for it is half the cost of doing without it.
29. The cause of freedom is the cause of God.
30. Freedom is best seen through prison bars.
31. If you can't speak the truth, then you don't have freedom!
32. Don't turn liberty into license to do as you please unless it's what the Lord pleases. You can do as you please only if it's what the Lord pleases.
33. Only sinful man had to be clothed!--Only sin brought the need to hide reality! Salvation sets us free from the curse of clothing & the shame of nakedness! We're as free as Adam & Eve in the garden before they ever sinned! If you're not, you're not saved!
34. Freedom costs something. It usually entails sacrifice & hard work & a real battle to stay free.
35. The right to do right is worth the fight!
36. The big lie cannot tolerate the truth, & they that are bound bitterly resent the freedom of the free.
37. We live in a World that's full of laws against freedom, so although God has given us freedom ourselves, we cannot be totally free because we live in a World that's not free.
38. The Devil is the author of the System, the god of this World. He is the author of their whole System & they have laws which are against freedom, so watch out you don't violate their laws, at least not where they can catch you.
39. The greatest danger is safety & security in the valley, because then you lose that freedom & liberty of the mountain.
40. Oh the Spirit, it's the Spirit!
Yes that's the life for me!
In the Spirit, by the Spirit,
You can live a life that's free!
41. We are free, free, free! Thank God!--Free to do His Will & free to follow Him whithersoever He leadeth!--To abandon the boundaries of man for the boundless abundance of God!

(See also No.0, 57, 286, 302C, 335A, 647, 648, 1017, 1253.)

42. .116:16b Thou hast loosed my bonds.
43. .119:45 And I will walk at liberty: for I seek Thy precepts.
44. .8:31,32 If ye continue in My Word, then are ye My disciples indeed; And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.
45. .8:36 If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed.
46. .8:1-5 There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death. For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending His Own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh: That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit.
47. **1CO.8:9 But take heed lest by any means this liberty of yours become a stumblingblock to them that are weak.**
48. **CO.8:12 But when ye sin so against the brethren, and wound their weak conscience, ye sin against Christ.**
49. **1CO.10:23 All things are lawful for me, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawful for me, but all things edify not.**
50. **.5:1 Stand fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free, and be not entangled again with the yoke of bondage.**
51. **.5:13 For, brethren, ye have been called unto liberty; only use not liberty for an occasion to the flesh, but by love serve one another.**



Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them (Mt.7:20).

1. We may be nuts, but we grow trees & feed the hungry.
2. If our fruit is souls, more Christians, what are our leaves?--Our works!
3. "His leaf also shall not wither" means your works are not going to wither, dry up & blow away!
4. If God has blessed the method with good fruit, then the method is good.
5. Good works will produce good fruit.
6. Look at all our good fruit--souls saved, lives reclaimed, missionaries made, miraculous healings & a most marvellous witness throughout all the World in every way, shape & form!--In word & song & music & all kinds of languages!
7. I have good fruit, so I must be a good tree!
8. I don't care how you do it, with whom you do it, where you do it or whatever way you do it, just bring forth good fruit--souls into the Kingdom of God!
9. Kill not the goose that lays the golden eggs.
10. They don't like our method, they don't like our means, they don't like our unorthodox measures, but they can't deny the fact that it gets results & it has good fruit!
11. You have to judge each individual case of a couple wanting to mate on its own merits. Is it good for them? Do they have real genuine love for each other, not just physical attraction? Is it helpful or harmful? Does it have a good effect on others? Is it good for God's work?
12. The monuments I want after I am dead are monuments with two legs going around the World--saved sinners telling about the salvation of Jesus Christ!
13. Better some tough, dinky, little fruit that remains, than a proliferous crop that rots & dies on the vine before it can be preserved!
14. The Lord is like the sun & we're His vineyard, & He's able to shine on us & chase away all the shadows & doubts & fears & cold, & warm the bosom of our Earth so we bring forth fruit.
15. The spire of His inspiration causes a spiritual orgasm which fills you with His Spirit in spirits of the Seed of the Word of God, which when conceived in responsive hearts, brings forth fruit, newborn babes into the Kingdom of God!
16. Why insist on deliberately & stubbornly hanging on in a worn-out, overworked, saturated field where you've already reaped your harvest, unless the Lord gives you some special revelation for it? Why not do what the Lord says & go into some more fruitful field white & ripe unto harvest where you can get greater results, instead of insisting on trying to glean a little bit here & there in an already harvested & exhausted field where it's dangerous & difficult, if not impossible.
17. Any ministry that brings more trouble & arouses more antagonism & more criticism & stirs up more enemies than it does good is not a good ministry. It merely aggravates the situation & makes it much more difficult for others who could have continued a long time in the ministries they're in, bearing good fruit.
18. Just because a ministry has extremely wide exposure, publicity & huge witnessing stats does not necessarily mean that it is fruitful & profitable & has been bearing the right kind of fruit. Good fruit means more souls won, more disciples won & more Family Members joined. "This is the Will of My Father," Jesus said, "that you should bear much fruit & that your fruit should remain." (Jn.15:16)
19. The acid test as to whether a ministry is actually fruitful or not, is not just huge witnessing stats. That's fine, but if it doesn't get lasting results & bear remaining fruit it's unprofitable. It doesn't matter how much seed a

farmer sows--if he doesn't get a crop, if it doesn't sprout & grow to bear more fruit, he's going to go broke & starve & he won't survive & his field won't survive nor his work. It's got to bear fruit. It's got to reap results. It's got to be profitable & fruitful or he'll go out of business.

20. If you're not doing the kind of seed sowing that bears fruit, if you're scattering your seeds on hard stony ground or shallow ground or amongst the thorns & thistles & briars that choke it out, instead of on good ground that bears fruit, then you're in an unprofitable ministry.

21. Show me something besides just seed stats & the size of your field & the volume of seed you've sown. Let me see the results, the fruit, the finished product: Souls won, disciples joined, new Family Members, new workers, new missionaries for the Lord.

22. If you want to continue for a while longer & still bear a little fruit that remains, with lasting results, disciples, members & support, through quiet wise unpublicised personal witnessing, then you'd better keep your mouth shut except where it really pays & bears fruit & remains, & don't get yourself thrown out too soon & stopped prematurely through unwise, insecure, excessive public exposure & dangerous publicity to your enemies & aggravating them to expose & oppose you to the bitter end of any ministry in that area.

23. One thing you ought to do is analyse your results & see if you're getting the kind of results you should be getting to see if it's the kind of a ministry that it should be. You need to count how many actual disciples & members that you have gotten out of that kind of ministry.

24. It's a good question to ask yourself at the end of each day: "What have I done with my life this day? What did I do for Jesus?" It's good to reflect on these things & assess these values as to whether you're obeying the Lord & pleasing Him, that He might say to you that day, "Well done, thou good & faithful servant, enter thou into the joy of thy Lord!"--In peaceful, contented sleep, thankful & satisfied that you have done your best & you can sleep in peace.

25. If the tree doesn't bear proper fruit, then we must dig about it & dung it, fertilise, prune it & trust that it will bear more fruit.

26. Even the branches that are in the Lord, even those that bear fruit, the Lord works over so they'll even bear more fruit.

27. Let us fear the Lord lest we be unfruitful, lest we be cut off for our unfruitfulness & cast away.--Not lost, not unsaved, but cast aside as being no longer useful, because we have failed to get the job done.

28. This is the ministry that has to survive--the Word! Others can be cut off & lopped off if we have to. Didn't He say that's why they pruned it & cut off branches?--Not so it will bear less fruit, but more fruit, so that the remaining branches can be more fruitful! (Jn.15:2)

29. We must not only win souls, but we must make disciples of those souls, or we are going to become a fruitless, dying Church like so many, dying of self-genocide for failure to be productive & self-propagating!--And like some religions which teach celibacy & are anti-sex, & therefore barren & childless & dying or already dead!

30. Mass media is a whole lot safer & easier than personal evangelism with less sacrifice, less danger, more support, more churchy cooperation & governmental toleration, but it doesn't make for real revolutionary disciples or real revolutionary missionaries!

(See also No.A, P, 189, 203, 214, 319, 344, 545, 565, 731, 1028, 1376, 1382, 1389, 1525, 1551.)

31. .14:4 Who can bring a clean thing out of an unclean? not one.

32. .1:3 And he shall be like a tree planted by the rivers of water, that bringeth forth his fruit in his season; his leaf also shall not wither; and whatsoever he doeth shall prosper.

33. .13:19a The desire accomplished is sweet to the soul.

34. **MAT.3:8 Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance.**

35. **MAT.3:10 And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees: and therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.**

36. **MAT.7:16-20 Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit. A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them.**

37. **MAT.13:22,23 He also that received seed among the thorns is he that heareth the Word; and the care of this World, and the deceitfulness of riches, choke the Word, and he becometh unfruitful. But he that received seed into the good ground is he that heareth the Word, and understandeth it; which also beareth fruit, and bringeth forth, some an hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty.**

38. .10:36-38 Say ye of Him, Whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the World, Thou blasphemest; because I said, I am the Son of God? If I do not the works of My Father, believe Me not. But if I do, though ye believe not Me, believe the works: that ye may know, and believe, that the Father is in Me, and I in Him.

39. JOH.12:24 Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground and die, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit.

40. JOH.15:4 Abide in Me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in Me.

41. JOH.15:8 Herein is My Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be My disciples.

42. .1:10 That ye might walk worthy of the Lord unto all pleasing, being fruitful in every good work, and increasing in the knowledge of God.

43. .2:18 Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith and I have works: show me thy faith without thy works, and I will show thee my faith by my works.

44. PE.1:5-9 And beside this, giving all diligence, add to your faith virtue; and to virtue knowledge; And to knowledge temperance; and to temperance patience; and to patience godliness; And to godliness brotherly kindness; and to brotherly kindness charity. For if these things be in you, and abound, they make you that ye shall neither be barren nor unfruitful in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ. But he that lacketh these things is blind, and cannot see afar off, and hath forgotten that he was purged from his old sins.

45. JO.11 Beloved, follow not that which is evil, but that which is good. He that doeth good is of God: but he that doeth evil hath not seen God.

46. THE FUTURE

--{page 358}--



Surely the Lord God will do nothing, but He revealeth His secret unto His servants the prophets (Amos 3:7).

1. "A SURE WORD OF PROPHECY!"

1. The Lord told Daniel to close up the book & seal up the prophecy until the End, but right now this is the End! So now we're supposed to open the book, break the seals & read it & understand it.

2. Every word the Bible ever said is true & has come true, & every prophecy it ever uttered has been fulfilled except the ones that are yet to come, & they'll be fulfilled just as surely as the ones that have been fulfilled in the past.

3. How like a string of beads the Bible is! All the prophets of God have been sent to give the people pearls, beads of truth! But it takes the Spirit of God to put everything in proper order, sorted out & made into something useful!

4. The Bible not only contains history, it also tells the future. It's not just a history book, it's a news book. It not only tells you about yesterday, it tells you about tomorrow!

5. The Bible's the only News Book in the World! The newspapers are not really newspapers, they're history papers. They tell you what's already happened. The Bible tells you what's going to happen.

6. We're not to fret for tomorrow, which means we're not to worry about tomorrow, but the Lord sure has had a lot to say about tomorrow, so He certainly must want us to be informed about tomorrow!

7. The mate of every prophecy is its fulfilment! (See Is.34:16.)
8. God's Word is specific! God's Word is very clear! Its prophecies are very plain & tell you exactly who & where & even when!
9. What God's determined & prophesied, He's going to do! Whatever God has said He's going to do, He is going to do! Not one shall lack her mate, not one prophecy shall be without fulfilment, every single one shall be fulfilled!
10. Any Christian who is ignorant of the Future & the basic events & the basic characters is a pretty ignorant Christian & is a sad, poor witness to others who are hungry to know the future.
11. That's the whole point of prophecy: To let you know what's going to happen so you won't worry about it. You'll know what's going to happen!
12. To be forewarned is to be forearmed! To understand what's going to occur is to be prepared to face it & take it as it comes & hopefully survive it!--At least certainly to understand what you're going through & to know what's happening!
13. God's Word says, "Blessed is he that readeth & they that hear the Words of this prophecy!" (Re.1:3.) It takes an effort, it's work to try to understand Bible Prophecy & to "study to shew thyself approved unto God, rightly dividing the Word of Truth." (2Ti.2:15.)
14. We who know His Word & His prophecies & promises for the future will never be surprised with a "mighty widening of the eyes" like those who have not discerned the signs of the times! For we will be prepared! PTL!
15. .34:16 Seek ye out of the Book of the Lord, and read: no one of these shall fail, none shall want her mate: for My mouth it hath commanded, and His Spirit it hath gathered them.
16. .42:9 Behold, the former things are come to pass, and new things do I declare: before they spring forth I tell you of them!
17. .13:19 Now I tell you before it come, that, when it is come to pass, ye may believe that I am He.
18. .12:10 None of the wicked shall understand; but the wise shall understand.
19. **PE.1:19,21 We have also a more sure word of prophecy; whereunto ye do well that ye take heed, as unto a light that shineth in a dark place, until the day dawn, and the day star arise in your hearts. For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost!**

(For more Scriptures on this topic, see Part 1 of the *Book of the Future*.)

2. "THE LAST DAYS!"

1. The "Last Days" as used in the Bible started with the first coming of Christ!
2. "Now is the hour come of which all prophets have spoken! Thou art upon the threshold of the door of these things of which I have already told thee."
3. If God did not step in & intervene in this last hour of History, man would completely destroy the Earth & totally annihilate himself!
4. Now is the Endtime of which all the prophets spake! You are the generation--the Last Generation--of whom all the prophets spoke, & they dreamed of your day!
5. We are living in a very unusual day!--A lot of amazing things are going on, but a lot of sad things too.
6. Every time you turn on the television, it roars! Every time you turn on the radio, you can hear the waves roaring!--The sea of the peoples of the Earth, roaring in the Last Days! (Lk.21:25)
7. The curtain has been drawn aside on the last scene of Earth's great drama, & the act has begun & it cannot stop now! It is impossible! It will keep right on going, fulfilling these promises of the Word of God until all these things be fulfilled!
8. To say the least, we're living in every exciting times & there are soon going to be some very big global changes made!
9. I am convinced that the real Time of the End that His Word speaks of from cover to cover is these last few years in which we are now living! According to His Word, we are already living in the Time of The End!
10. Beloved, the time is growing shorter. The days are becoming more evil & things are moving faster & faster as time goes on. (Eph.5:16; 2Ti.3:1.)
11. The End is closer than ever! "Be prepared!"
12. .1:1,2 God, Who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, hath in these last days spoken unto us by His Son.

13. CO.10:11 Now all these things happened unto them for ensamples: and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the World are come.

14. PE.1:19,20 Christ...Was foreordained before the foundation of the World, but was manifest in these last times for you.

15. JO.2:18 Little children, it is the last time: and as ye have heard that Antichrist shall come, even now are there many antichrists; whereby we know that it is the last time.

(For more Scriptures on this topic, see Part 2 of the *Book of the Future*.)

3. "SIGNS OF THE END!"

1. God wants us to know the "times & seasons", & throughout the Bible He gives us multitudes, thousands of literal, specific predictions of the future & what its times & seasons will be like!

2. Today you & I are watching the signs of the End happen! We are seeing these things fulfilled! And our generation will not pass away until it's all been fulfilled! To us all these signs are flowers & blossoms & beautiful fulfilments of His prophecies & signs of His soon-coming.

3. Every time I see God fulfil prophecy & we're another step closer to the End, I say, "Hallelujah! Thank God! Soon it will all be over!"

4. Keep your eyes on Israel & Jerusalem, that's the time clock. That's where you'll see & hear the things that are really going to cause things to happen! Israel has meaning for the whole World, it's a kind of pivot, a turning-stone of World History & Bible Prophecy, the focal point.

5. Jesus said, "When you see these things, or these signs come to pass, look up, your redemption draweth nigh!"--So obviously, He wants us to "see" & "look" at the Signs of His Coming being fulfilled before He returns, so that we can "discern the Signs of the Times"! (Lk.21:28; Mt.16:3.)

6. God's Word contains countless specific "Signs of the Times" which have come to pass in our generation, proving that we are now living in the Time of the End! These signs include: An upsurge in "famines, pestilences & earthquakes in divers places" (Mt.24:7), "the Gospel being preached in all the World for a witness to all nations" (Mt.24:14), "many running to & fro, as knowledge is increased" (Dan.12:4), a great "falling away" (2Th.2:3) from the Lord as "evil men & seducers wax worse & worse" (2Ti.3:13) & "the love of many grows cold" (Mt.24:12), resulting in "distress of nations upon the Earth & men's hearts failing them for fear!" (Lk.21:25,26)--The great "Red Beast" has risen (Rev.13:1-5; 17:3) & is "coming in peaceably & obtaining the kingdom by flatteries" (Dan.11:21) & will soon conquer the entire World (Rev.13) & reign for 7 years (Dan.9:27), until Christ returns & establishes His Kingdom of genuine peace on Earth! (Da.2:44)

7. Every sign points to it & there is every indication that you're going to be living through these very days of the Endtime!

8. His Word is full of "signs of the times"!--Signs of the Last Days, of the Endtime, signs that you should look out for & expect, so that you will know when you are near the End & how near the End & what is going to happen at the End!

9. All of the signs are pointing to the End! And from all we can gather from His Word & what the Lord has shown us, the Antichrist is going to appear within the next few years, months or even weeks or days!

10. .16:2,3 When it is evening, ye say, it will be fair weather: for the sky is red. And in the morning, it will be foul weather today: for the sky is red & lowring... Ye can discern the face of the sky; but can ye not discern the signs of the times?

11. .24:3-5,24 What shall be the sign of Thy Coming, and of the end of the World? Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you. For many shall come in My Name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many. For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall show great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect.

12. .24:12 And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold.

13. **TI.3:13 Evil men & seducers shall wax worse & worse, deceiving & being deceived.**

14. **PE.3:3,4 There shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own lusts, and saying, Where is the promise of His Coming? For since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the Creation.**

15. .24:37-39 As the days of Noah were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark. And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.

16. .12:4 But thou, O Daniel, shut up the words, and seal the book, even to the time of the end: many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall be increased.

17. .2:3,4 The chariots (cars) shall be with flaming torches in the day of His preparation, and the fir trees shall be terribly shaken. The chariots shall rage in the streets, they shall jostle one against another in the broad ways: they shall seem like torches, they shall run like the lightnings.

18. TI.3:1,2,7 This know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come. For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy. Ever learning, & never able to come to the knowledge of the Truth.

19. TI.4:1 Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils.

20. TH.2:3 Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day (of Christ's Second Coming) shall not come, except there come a falling away first!

21. TI.4:3,4 For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears: And they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables.

22. .24:14 And this Gospel of the Kingdom shall be preached in all the World for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come!

(For more Scriptures on this topic, see Part 3 of the *Book of the Future*.)

4. "ANTICHRIST'S RISE & REIGN!"

1. The Bible predicts that in the last days of man-made regimes on Earth, a totally Godless anti-Christ World government will arise, led by a Devil-possessed dictator, Satan incarnate, who will bring a false peace on Earth & a counterfeit utopia, & its price will be enforced worship of himself as the imitation Messiah!

2. The Devil is being given his last fling.

3. The Antichrist comes on the scene with a 7-Year Pact to reign seven years. It'll be the smartest piece of politicking & diplomacy ever engineered!

4. This one big promise he makes is called the Holy Covenant, in which he promises the World peace, religious freedom, Jerusalem internationalised & no more war between the Jews & the Arabs & the Christians.--He promises them everything!

5. The Antichrist will rise to power first through the covenant of Peace, & then only later on, during the last 3-1/2 years of his reign, does he finally resort to the last extreme resort of the Atomic War to blot out his worst enemy, Babylon, the Great Whore, the U.S.A., with the help of his ten kings of Europe.

6. The Antichrist, the leader of Russia, will not only invade Israel, but he will make Jerusalem his capital. He will set up his headquarters there, his palace, & he will rule the whole World from there for at least 3-1/2 years.

7. The Antichrist is going to yield himself utterly & totally to the Devil, just the way we yield ourselves to God! He will be the Devil in the flesh--the god of this World--who is going to run the World & command it to worship him, & slaughter many who refuse.

8. Look how the World is being prepared for a mechanical god, an Electronic Brain, a Computer Deity, which they will then be willing to worship because it is their own creation, the work of their own hands!

9. They rejected the true Messiah, they refused to receive the truth, so God will send them strong delusion that they might believe a lie!--The Antichrist, the false God, the fake Saviour, the phoney Messiah!

10. The Antichrist government is of God to teach man a lesson, to give man just what he deserves.--Man worships the Devil, so he's going to get the Devil's own government! He worships himself, so he's going to be run by a superman!

11. Man's greatest & best government will be a total failure without God, & will come crashing down around his ears.

12. The Antichrist will reign for seven years: The first half will be a more-or-less general World peace, & the second half will be 3-1/2 years of "Great Tribulation" such as the World has never known!

13. The whole World is waiting for a superman, a god-man who can solve all their problems & answer all their questions & heal all their economic ills & unite all their politics & end all their religious squabbles & stop all the wars & bring peace & union to all nations.

14. Man's final World government is going to seemingly be the most perfect government the self-righteous heart of man could ever contrive, the most idealistic, the most fair, the most compassionate, the most equal, the most sharing.--It will be like trying to have Christianity without Christ!

15. If there was ever any place where a mastermind's compromise agreement was needed, it's Jerusalem!-- The Jews say they will never let it go, & the Arabs say they will never let them keep it. So some kind of a compromise has to be wrought to solve this very very difficult problem.

16. Anyone who could solve this pressing crisis over Palestine, & Jerusalem in particular, would certainly be considered a mastermind & a genius & a superman & no doubt all the World will wonder after him!

17. It is in the midst of the "week", or 3-1/2 years into the 7-year Covenant period, that the Antichrist changes, abolishes the newly reinstituted Jewish sacrificial worship, profanes the altar, & exalts himself as God.

18. One of these days soon, when "He Who now letteth is taken out of the way" & the restraints of the Holy Spirit of God are lifted, like a dam being opened or removed, a flood of iniquity is going to circle the World under the reign of the Devil himself in the person of the Antichrist!

19. No wonder the Antichrist is so powerful & such a superman & wonder-worker! Satan will at last be cast out of Heaven &, in his fury, knowing that his time is short, he will possess this Antichrist, this Beast, & make him a Superman, a Devil-man, the Devil in the flesh, like Jesus was God in the flesh!

20. The time is soon coming when paper money will no longer be used as a medium of exchange! The money medium of exchange will be replaced by a very remarkable credit system in which every person in the World who belongs to the System will bear a credit number, without which he can neither buy nor sell!

21. The whole World will soon be on this credit system with no currency, no cheques, no paper money, & you, the World, won't even need any more credit cards, because you will be your own credit card with the Mark or Number of the Beast on your hand or in your forehead!

22. The Mark of the Beast is going to be much more serious than we had ever dreamed!--Not merely for the purpose of identifying you as one of the Beast's people, but to make you literally one of his absolute soul-slaves so that you no longer have control over your own mind or body or actions, but you are a complete absolute automaton governed by the central computer.

23. The Lord has already got us sealed! And the Devil can never take that away from us by any amount or any kind of force whatever.

24. The Bible says that anybody who accepts the Mark of the Beast is going to be damned, so obviously no truly saved Christian is going to accept it!

25. The Antichrist is apparently either going to rise out of Egypt or have something strongly to do with Egypt.--So you'd better keep your eyes "turned towards Memphis"!

26. **TH.2:1,3,4 Now we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by our gathering together unto Him. Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day (of Christ's Second Coming) shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the Son of Perdition; Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himself that he is God.**

27. **TH.2:7-9 For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only He who now letteth (holds back) will let, until He be taken out of the way. And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the Spirit of His mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of His Coming: Even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders.**

28. **.8:23-25 And in the latter time, when the transgressors are come to the full, a king of fierce countenance, and understanding dark sentences, shall stand up. And his power shall be mighty, but not by his own power: and he shall destroy wonderfully, and shall prosper, and practise, and shall destroy the mighty and the holy people. And through his policy also he shall cause craft to prosper in his hand; and he shall magnify himself in his heart, and by peace shall destroy many: he shall also stand up against the Prince of princes; but he shall be broken without hand.**

29. **.9:27 And he shall confirm the covenant with many for one week (7 years): and in the midst of the week (after 3-1/2 years) he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease, and for the overspreading of abominations he shall make it desolate, even until the consummation, and that determined shall be poured upon the desolate.**

30. **.11:21-24 He shall come in peaceably, and obtain the kingdom by flatteries. And with the arms of a flood shall they be overflowed from before him, and shall be broken; yea, (he's) also the prince of the covenant. And after the league made with him he shall work deceitfully: for he shall come up, and shall become strong with a small people. He shall enter peaceably even upon the fattest places of the province; and he shall do that which his fathers have not done, nor his fathers' fathers; he shall scatter among them the prey, and spoil, and riches: yea, and he shall forecast his devices against the strong holds, even for a time.**

31. **.13:2-4 And the dragon (Satan) gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority. And I saw one of his heads as it were wounded to death; and his deadly wound was healed: and all the World wondered**

after the Beast. And they worshipped the dragon which gave power unto the Beast: and they worshipped the Beast, saying, Who is like unto the Beast? Who is able to make war with him?

(For more Scriptures on this topic, see Part 4 of the *Book of the Future*.)

5. "TRIBULATION!"

1. Jesus said that the Tribulation will begin "when ye shall see the Abomination of Desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place." (Mt.24:15,21.) When you see it standing there, you'll know the Tribulation has begun! And from then till Jesus' Coming will be only 3-1/2 more years!

2. You're going to have to have the power of God & the wisdom of His Spirit to survive those days!

3. That Last Day is going to be a day of miracles & the supernatural, to protect His children.

4. The night is going to be the nightmare of the Tribulation, & the day the Coming of Christ.

5. The forces of evil will never be able to completely destroy God's true children!

6. We'll be witnessing to the last day, even in the very capital of the Antichrist, who will be trying to exterminate us!

7. No matter what happens or how the Antichrist & the Enemy try to pursue us & kill us & torture us & make us worship him & take his Mark & bow down to his Image, nothing is going to stop us!

8. You are to obey the "powers that be" (Ro.13) in all but two things: You are not to stop witnessing for Christ, neither are you to deny your faith by receiving the Mark of the Beast.

9. If you love Jesus, you will refuse the Mark of the Beast, because you'll have God's Mark in your forehead & hand! (See Rev.7:3 & 9:4.)

10. Only those who have the seal of God in their foreheads, His Own Children, the true believers who have the genuine Jesus in their hearts, will be hidden & spared by the miracles of God until the Coming of Christ when they will join Him in the air!--The only way out will be up!

11. God is going to protect us & God is going to keep us, a lot of us, if not most of us, supernaturally, miraculously, powerfully, in many ways, & the message will get out all the more in spite of everything the enemies do!

12. We're going to march triumphant, protected by God, right straight through the Tribulation from beginning to end, in the face of our enemies!

13. "Now when they shall fall they shall be holpen with a little help." (Dan.11:34.) And when you get a little help from Jesus, let me tell you, that's all the help you need!

14. "In the World ye shall have Tribulation, but fear not, for I have overcome the World & ye shall have peace!" (Jn.16:33) Praise God!--Peace of mind & peace of heart ever though there's war all around you!

15. The Tribulation is probably going to be the most glorious time the Church has ever had, with the greatest witness God has ever given the World!

16. In the Tribulation we're going to have the greatest power of the Lord we have ever had!--The greatest outpouring of the power of the Spirit & the greatest witnessing the Church has ever done!

17. I believe we're going to have a time of greater power than even the Early Church, with greater manifestations, mightier works than have ever been done before, & mightier witnessing! The Gospel is going to be preached in all the World for a witness unto all nations, PTL! Amen? "Where iniquity doth abound, grace doth much more abound!" (Ro.5:20)

18. You're going to win a lot of souls in that day, you know that?--Because a lot of people are going to believe you then, & a lot of people are going to need salvation & need the good news you have to tell them. And you're going to be a great encouragement to millions of people throughout the Earth who are going to seek you & seek your answers.

19. "They that understand among the people shall instruct many!" (Dan.11:33.) Our major job will be to stand up as God's strongest witnesses before both the Church & the whole World & to explain to them what's happening & to lead & encourage & feed God's children till the very End!

20. "Ye indeed are they upon whom the ends of the Earth are come. Ye indeed are they of whom all the prophets have spoken. Ye are My witnesses of the Last Day of whom I have spoken throughout the Ages by all My holy prophets. Ye indeed are they that shall be strong & that shall do great & mighty exploits & shall instruct many in the ways of Truth & shall open the Book by My mighty power & by the wisdom of My Spirit & shall reveal these secrets unto others."

21. Thank God you have the preparation that prepares you for anything that's going to happen, & that's Salvation!--Knowing Jesus & knowing that you're saved. Then no matter what happens, sudden death is sudden glory!

22. If God has to rain down manna from Heaven to feed us, if He's gotta call down fire from Heaven to defend us, we are going to continue to witness until Jesus comes!--And I dare anyone to try to stop us!

23. By mighty miracles, signs & wonders, God is going to preserve much of the Church unto the very End, because they're going to be here when He comes. PTL!

24. The horrors of the Tribulation are for the wicked!--To protect you till the End!

25. There will be literally millions who will reject the Mark of the Beast & refuse to fall down & worship his Image, & who will even as nations rebel against the Antichrist & fight him!

26. The Bible says that anybody who accepts the Mark of the Beast is going to be damned, so obviously no truly saved Christian is going to accept it!

27. Although the Beast commands that no one can buy nor sell without the Mark & that anyone who refuses to worship his Image should be killed, we will refuse!

28. The Tribulation period will be the end of any kind of association with the System whatsoever for true Christians. It will be impossible to survive except by miracles of God & faith & living by faith in a survival situation, totally & entirely independent from the System, without its Mark & without its approval & without its benefit.--Start now!

29. As the World slips into this new Dark Age of antiChrist, anti-God savagery, if we, as Christians, do not hole up in the "catacombs" beneath "Rome", we're not going to survive! We will have to go underground!

30. Even though the Antichrist will be allowed to overcome us physically, obviously destroying the organised temporal power of the Church, he will not & cannot overcome us spiritually! The Lord says, "And they"--the Church--"overcame him by the Blood of the Lamb, & by the word of their testimony; & they loved not their lives unto the death!" (Rev.12:11.)

31. The worse things get, the more God's Spirit is going to be poured out from on high to help us withstand the dark evil forces that will be warring against us!

32. There's going to be a great harvest of souls won to His Kingdom in that last hour of Earth's horrible history!--A great harvest of souls that you're going to help reap!

33. However we witness, whether we live or whether we die as martyrs for Jesus, "laying down our lives for our friends" (Jn.15:13), we live & die for the Lord & for Love & for others!--And we will do so till the very End of the World, witnessing for Jesus till He comes!

34. Beloved, don't fear the Tribulation if you love the Lord! Don't worry about that last 3-1/2 years! Yes, the Antichrist is going to be after our skin, & his anti-Christ followers are going to be on our tails trying to get us, but let me tell you, there's going to be a lot more on their tails, not just trying, but getting them!

35. Even if you have to go through it, in some way He's going to keep you. (Rev.3:10)

36. He is able to keep us through anything, everything, & I'm certain that He wants to spare us to minister to others, to help & encourage & inspire faith & glorify Him.

37. When His judgements fall on the wicked, they usually miss His children or His children are spared from them.

38. The Lord is able to keep you right in the middle of it all. So you don't ever have to worry!

39. Are you ready? Probably not!--But you can get ready now by reading, studying & learning His Word, & giving your full time to the Lord, your whole worship, & serve the Lord & love the Lord with all your heart, all your strength, all your mind, everything you've got, starting right now!--Until the very End! Amen?

40. Only the wrath of the wicked is vented on the Children of God in the Tribulation, but all the wrath of God is poured out on the persecutors!

41. The Tribulation period is going to be a defeat for churchianity & the so-called "holy people" but not for the true church of God, the genuine Christians!

42. During the Tribulation there is going to be a lot of Hell, in fact the most Hell the World has ever known, but the World is going to get most of it, not us!

43. During the Tribulation there is going to be a tremendous revival & great outpourings of the Spirit, mighty manifestations of miracles & power & protection!

44. I think the Tribulation is probably going to be one of the greatest, if not the greatest revival that the World has ever known!--The last great outpouring of the Spirit, the mightiest we have ever seen, with the most magnificent miracles, signs & wonders!

45. I think the Tribulation is going to be our last great revival, our final great witness, our last great harvest of children & teenagers, probably by our teenagers!

46. The days ahead are probably going to be the greatest of all! There may be more trouble than ever before, but there'll be more help & more power & greater evangelisation.

47. The Tribulation is actually something to look forward to in a way because of the mighty events that are going to take place.

48. .8:11 Yea, he (the Antichrist) magnified himself even to the Prince of the Host, and by him the daily sacrifice was taken away, and the place of His sanctuary was cast down.

49. .11:31-33 And arms shall stand on his part, and they shall pollute the sanctuary of strength, and shall take away the daily sacrifice, and they shall place the abomination that maketh desolate. And such as do wickedly against the covenant shall he corrupt by flatteries; but the people that do know their God shall be strong, and do exploits. And they that understand among the people shall instruct many.

50. .24:15,21 When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand;) For then shall be Great Tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the World to this time, no, nor ever shall be.

51. .11:3,5,6 And I will give power unto My two witnesses, and they shall prophesy a thousand two hundred and threescore days (3-1/2 years), clothed in sackcloth. And if any man will hurt them, fire proceedeth out of their mouth, and devoureth their enemies: and if any man will hurt them, he must in this manner be killed. These have power to shut Heaven, that it rain not in the days of their prophecy: and have power over waters to turn them to blood, and to smite the Earth with all plagues, as often as they will.

52. .12:6,13,14,17,11 And the woman (the Bride, the Church) fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and threescore days (3-1/2 years). And when the dragon saw that he was cast unto the Earth, he persecuted the woman. And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time (3-1/2 years), from the face of the serpent. And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ. And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death.

53. .13:5-8 And there was given unto him (the Antichrist) a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies; and power was given unto him to continue forty and two months. And he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme His Name, and His tabernacle, and them that dwell in Heaven. And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them; and power was given him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations. And all that dwell upon the Earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the Book of Life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the World.

54. .13:15-18 And he (the False Prophet) had power to give life unto the Image of the Beast, that the Image of the Beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the Image of the Beast should be killed. And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a Mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads. And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the Mark, or the name of the Beast, or the number of his name. Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the Beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is Six hundred threescore and six.(666!)

(For more Scriptures on this topic, see Part 5 of the *Book of the Future*.)

6. "ATOMIC WAR!"

1. According to Revelation 18, God is going to make short shrift of the Whore in a sudden deadly blow that will almost totally destroy her with fire!--Sure sounds like an atomic first strike on the U.S.A.!

2. Babylon the Great Whore is surely being fulfilled in America today, who will surely try to go to Israel's rescue, but it will bring about the downfall of them both, as is so clearly predicted in the Bible!

3. If God didn't step in, mankind would commit suicide!--If God didn't step in within the next few years & stop it, man would wipe himself off the map! This is why Jesus prophesied of the Last Days, "Except those days be shortened (or cut off), there should no flesh be saved!" (Mt.24:22.)

4. Because the Bible definitely indicates that Russia & the supporters of the Antichrist are going to come out on top & win when the Atomic War comes & the pre-emptive strike comes, I believe Russia's going to make it & destroy the U.S. first.

5. What conditions do you think will prevail immediately after such a war in which the losing leading countries of the war are destroyed? God has put it into exact words & called it "The Great Confusion"!

6. Even if they're hitting close, the Lord's our bomb shelter!

7. If God doesn't destroy the modern American Sodom & Gomorrah, He will have to apologise to the ancient ones!

8. Nuclear arms are merely a symptom of the problem.--War itself is a mere symptom.--The disease within is rebellion against God & defiance of the Lord, & anti-Christ opposition to Jesus!--That's the disease!--And the disease is soon going to break out all over in one Hell of a nuclear holocaust!

9. Even if you can't dodge the nukes or the kooks, Jesus can protect you, for He cares for His Own!--And if you do wind up a target for an H-bomb, your worries are over! You'll wake up forever in the Heavenly Kingdom of God with eternal peace & joy & happiness & bliss & love & beauty forever!

10. .1:14,16 Then the Lord said unto me, Out of the North an evil shall break forth upon all the inhabitants of the land! And I will utter My judgements against them touching all their wickedness, who have forsaken Me, and have burned incense unto other gods, and worshipped the works of their own hands.

11. .4:6,7 I will bring evil from the North, and a great destruction! The lion is come up from his thicket, and the destroyer of the Gentiles is on his way; he is gone forth from his place to make thy land desolate; and thy cities shall be laid waste, without an inhabitant.

12. JER.27:8 And it shall come to pass, that the nation and kingdom which will not serve the king of Babylon (the Antichrist), and that will not put their neck under the yoke of the king of Babylon, that nation will I punish, saith the Lord, with the sword, and with the famine, and with the pestilence, until I have consumed them by his hand.

13. .11:40,41,44,45 And at the time of the end shall the king of the South push at him: and the king of the North (the Antichrist) shall come against him like a whirlwind, with chariots, and with horsemen, and with many ships; and he shall enter into the countries, and shall overflow and pass over. He shall enter also into the glorious land (Israel), and many countries shall be overthrown. But tidings out of the East and out of the North shall trouble him: therefore he shall go forth with great fury to destroy, and utterly to make away many. And he shall plant the tabernacles of his palace between the seas in the glorious holy mountain; yet he shall come to his end, and none shall help him.

14. .17:12,16,17 And the ten horns which thou sawest are ten kings, which have received no kingdom as yet; but receive power as kings one hour with the Beast. These shall hate the Whore, and shall make her desolate and naked, and shall eat her flesh, and burn her with fire. For God hath put in their hearts to fulfil His will, and to agree, and give their kingdom unto the Beast, until the words of God shall be fulfilled.

15. .18:2,3,8,9,10 Babylon the Great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird. For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the Earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the Earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies. Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine; and she shall be utterly burned with fire: for strong is the Lord God Who judgeth her! And the kings of the Earth, who have committed fornication and lived deliciously with her, shall bewail her, and lament for her, when they shall see the smoke of her burning, Standing afar off for the fear of her torment, saying, Alas, alas that great city Babylon, that mighty city! for in one hour is thy judgement come!

(For more Scriptures on this topic, see Part 6 of the *Book of the Future*.)

7. "THE SECOND COMING OF JESUS!"

1. The Second Coming of Jesus Christ is the major Endtime event, the Grand Climax, as the Lord Himself returns & wipes out the fiendish bestial Antichrist & his followers & sets up the last & most lasting & only perfect government the World has ever known!

2. Jesus is the End, He's going to bring about the End! He is going to be the End of all things, the Livin' End!--The Forever Livin' End!

3. This is our only hope: The love of God, His mercy, Jesus, & His return to rescue His Own & the Earth & the people of the Earth & restore light & life & love again!

4. Our only hope is the Coming of the only Prince of Peace--Christ Jesus.

5. When it looks like we're going to be really wiped out, the Lord's gonna come & wipe them out!--A happy ending to the story!

6. When things finally get their worst, Jesus returns & wipes out the Antichrist & his forces & takes over the Earth & establishes His dictatorship, a reign of genuine righteousness, peace, security & freedom!

7. Beloved, the outlook for us in this World & our future here could hardly be darker!--But the uplook could hardly be brighter or more glorious! Hallelujah! He's gonna stop the World so we can get off!

8. Just after the darkest hour in World History, we are going to have the brightest dawn, & Jesus is going to come back again & rescue His Own, His children, His Church!

9. He's coming soon! Hang on! Don't let someone else get your reward! Be faithful to the End!

10. "Lift up therefore thy heads, for thy redemption draweth nigh! Behold, thy King cometh as a mighty Man of Power, strong to save & deliver thee!"
11. Christ's coming is literally going to be an invasion from Outer Space!
12. Let me tell you, when Jesus comes, this World is going to know about it!--Light! Thunder! Lightning! Jesus! Clouds! And suddenly you're all changed!
13. One of these days when there's no place else to go, we're going to go straight up to be with Jesus!
14. The Resurrection takes place & all the saved who were dead come to life & all those saved who are still alive are raised into the air to meet Jesus in the clouds!
15. The Coming of Jesus Christ is the pivotal point, the End, when time shall be no more for us!--The End of this World as we now know it, & our place in it in these present physical bodies.
16. Jesus didn't say we wouldn't know the day or the hour, He said they wouldn't know the day or the hour! That's why you have to compare Scripture with Scripture.--You've gotta think about who He's talking to! That Scripture has absolutely nothing to do with you & me today in this Endtime, these Last Days!--We will know!
17. Just at the hour when the fiendish Antichrist thinks he has everything under control--suddenly--BOOM!--Like a bolt from the blue, Jesus comes & snatches all of His children out of this World!
18. We will rise in immortal victory over the forces of the Devil & the Antichrist, right before the eyes of our enemies, out of their reach forever as we rise to be with Jesus!
19. Thank God, He has a set time & schedule for the return of His Son, Jesus Christ, to this Earth to rescue His people!--And He's going to come right on the button, just like these space launches which have a pre-set countdown!--Only there aren't going to be any problems to delay His countdown!
20. That's the surest way you're going to know when Jesus comes, you're going to be there! You're going to rise to meet Him in the air! The greatest sign that Jesus has come will be that you will start floating upward!--And He will gather you together to Himself, His Body, & we will meet Him in the air!
21. It says that "they shall see the Son of Man coming in the clouds of Heaven with power & great glory!" (Mt.24:30.) All that Secret Rapture, Pre-Trib Rapture, is a bunch of malarky! It's ridiculous! It's un-Scriptural!
22. What greater witness could there be than the Rapture?--The Resurrection & the Rapture, that's the clincher! That's the final witness, when they actually see Jesus & see us rise from the dead & from the Earth to meet Him in the air! That's it! They can't deny it then!
23. Lights! Trumpets! Voices! Thunder! Earthquakes! Noises! Dead rising from the graves! Live saints rising from the ground, floating right up through the ceilings & the buildings & the cars & right up into the clouds to be with Jesus!--That's no secret Rapture!
24. With one sudden, supernatural, miraculous, mighty stroke of God, He waves His wand of power & presto!--We who are alive will be changed!--Translated & raised incorruptible, to meet the Lord in the air!
25. Do you want to know what you're going to be like after the resurrection?--You're going to be like Jesus was after His resurrection!--That's what you're going to be like!
26. One of these days soon, when Jesus comes & that great Trumpet sounds, you're going to trade in your present, old, worn-out, fleshly, earthly model for an entirely new Heavenly model like the body He had after His resurrection!
27. When He starts collecting His children, He's certainly going to collect them all & not leave any behind! Nobody's going to be left behind that loves Jesus!
28. I want to be ready to meet Him when He comes!--Ready to praise the Lord & welcome Him with joy & be happy that He is catching me out of this filthy old World up into His clean skies & Heavenly places!
29. The day is coming when Time shall be no more! The 4th dimension necessary for the existence of matter is Time. If matter could move fast enough, it would shorten Time so much that neither Time nor matter would exist any more! When Jesus comes we're going to move so fast that Time will be no more for us. One great Eternal Now! If you're up high enough you can see both Past & Future.
30. .24:27-31 For as the lightning cometh out of the East, and shineth even unto the West; so shall also the Coming of the Son of man be. For wheresoever the carcase is, there will the eagles be gathered together. Immediately after the tribulation of those days shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from Heaven, and the powers of the Heavens shall be shaken: And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in Heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the Earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of Heaven with power and great glory. And He shall send His angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together His elect from the four winds, from one end of Heaven to the other.
31. **CO.15:51,52 Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.**

32. ISA.26:19 Thy dead men shall live, together with my dead body shall they arise. Awake and sing, ye that dwell in dust: for thy dew is as the dew of herbs, and the Earth shall cast out the dead.

33. TH.4:16,17 For the Lord Himself shall descend from Heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord.

34. .11:15 And the seventh angel sounded; and there were great voices in Heaven, saying, The kingdoms of this World are become the Kingdoms of our Lord, and of His Christ; and He shall reign for ever and ever!

35. .22:20 He which testifieth these things saith, Surely I come quickly. Amen. Even so, come, Lord Jesus.

(For more Scriptures on this topic, see Part 7 of the *Book of the Future*.)

8. "THE WEDDING SUPPER!"

1. When Jesus comes, He catches His Bride out of the evil clutches of the Enemy & takes her into His bosom!--And whisks us away to the grandest, most glorious & thrilling wedding party that's ever been held--the great "Marriage Supper of the Lamb"! (Rev.19:7-9)

2. "It will be worth it all when we see Jesus!

Life's trials will seem so small when we see Christ!

One glimpse of His dear face, all sorrow will erase!

So bravely run the race till we see Christ!"

3. "Oh, what a day that shall be when thou shalt join with Me in My Kingdom to reign with Me for evermore! Thou shalt have such joy that thou hast never known!"

4. The Heavenly City!--What a place for a Marriage Supper & laughter & singing & music & dancing & wine & women & song & angels & everything your heart could possibly desire!

5. We're gonna go up & have one grand celebration, one shindig of a party such as never was since the World began, no, nor ever shall be compared to what has been before!

6. We get our rewards right away up in Heaven at the Marriage Supper of the Lamb where there's a great Feast & a great Marriage Supper, great ceremony, & the Lord passes out the gifts!

7. There will be a great feast & a great ceremony & Jesus will pass out the gifts, the presents, the rewards to all of those who loved & served Him!--Isn't that wonderful?

8. At the time of the Marriage Supper, we'll not only go up & meet the Lord & enjoy the wonderful celebration, but we'll also face the Judgement Seat of Christ, in which all the Christians who have ever lived will be judged & rewarded for their successes & their obediences, or chastised & condemned for their failures.

9. Rewards have nothing to do with your salvation! The rewards are something you work for & you earn by your faithfulness & your diligence & your hard work & your soul-winning!

10. Although your works in this life aren't going to help to get you into Heaven, they'll have a great deal to do with your reward, a great deal to do with the way you shine, & a great deal to do with your position once you're there.

11. "If thou couldst see that which is in store for thee, the things I have prepared for thee, if thou couldst feel that which I feel for thee, the joy thou shouldst know in time to come, thou shouldst be overjoyed for that which is to come!"

12. .19:6-9 And I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude, and as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of mighty thunderings, saying, Alleluia: for the Lord God omnipotent reigneth. Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honour to Him: for the Marriage of the Lamb is come, and His wife hath made herself ready. And to her was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white: for the fine linen is the righteousness of saints. And he saith unto me, Write, Blessed are they which are called unto the Marriage Supper of the Lamb.

13. CO.5:10 For we must all appear before the Judgement Seat of Christ; that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad.

(For more Scriptures on this topic, see Part 8 of the *Book of the Future*.)

9. "THE WRATH OF GOD!"

1. After the resurrection takes place & all the saved are supernaturally raised into the air to meet Jesus in the clouds, then the horrible Wrath of God will be poured out upon the Antichrist forces left behind!

2. How horrible the Lord says the Endtime will be for the wicked during the soon-coming days when He begins to pour out His judgements on the Earth!--"They will seek death but be unable to find it!" (Rev.9:6.)

3. While we're having that Marriage Party of the Lamb in Heaven, there's going to be Hell on Earth as God wreaks His judgements upon the wicked left behind!

4. While we're celebrating upstairs, they're going to be suffering downstairs!--Ecstasy in Heaven & Hell on Earth!

5. During the Wrath of God, the Antichrist & all his followers, all those that have the Mark of the Beast, are going to suffer the seven vials of God's Wrath spoken of in the 16th Chapter of Revelation.

6. While we're having a wild party & lots of fun up-stairs, having Ecstasy in Heaven, they're going to be having Hell on Earth downstairs!

7. According to Revelation Chapter 14, after His grain is safely gathered into His Heavenly garner, He's going to cast the grapes of wrath, all of the Antichrist forces, into the winepress of His indignation!

8. After catching His Own out of this World & into His Heavenly Bridal Chamber, God's gonna pour out His judgements & horrors & Wrath upon the Antichrist forces to punish'm & to sock it to'm with what they deserve!

9. If He is a God of justice, then there has to come a time for Him to mete out His justice & His judgements.--And thus it happens!

10. .14:9,10 If any man worship the Beast & his Image, & receive his Mark in his forehead, or in his hand, the same shall drink of the wine of the Wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture, into the cup of His indignation.

11. .16:1-4 And I heard a great voice out of the temple saying to the seven angels, Go your ways, and pour out the vials of the Wrath of God upon the Earth. And the first went, and poured out his vial upon the Earth; and there fell a noisome & grievous sore upon the men which had the Mark of the Beast, and upon them which worshipped his Image. And the second angel poured out his vial upon the sea; and it became as the blood of a dead man: and every living soul died in the sea. And the third angel poured out his vial upon the rivers and fountains of waters; and they became blood.

12. .16:8,10 And the fourth angel poured out his vial upon the sun: and power was given unto him to scorch men with fire. And the fifth angel poured out his vial upon the seat of the Beast; and his kingdom was full of darkness; and they gnawed their tongues for pain.

(For more Scriptures on this topic, see Part 9 of the *Book of the Future*.)

10. "THE BATTLE OF ARMAGEDDON!"

1. He's not only had a First Coming as a baby to Earth, but He's going to have a Second Coming at the end of the Tribulation when He Raptures His saints, & then a Third Coming as well in the great Battle of Armageddon!

2. Out of Heaven come the great hosts of Heaven with Jesus in the lead on a white horse to destroy the Antichrist & his kingdom in that great Battle of Armageddon (Rev.19), & we take over the Earth!

3. This time it's not gonna be God in the hands of sinful wicked men, but it's gonna be sinful wicked men in the hands of an angry judging God Who's gonna sock it to them! His First Coming was when He came as a babe: God in the hands of men! His Second Coming is going to be men in the hands of God & a different story!--the Wrath of God!

4. The Battle of Armageddon is going to be the battle in which we tune in, turn on & take over! And we're going to run the World! Praise God!

5. There'll be forty-five days of War, wiping out the very worst of them & leaving only those who are going to remain alive & survive through the Millenium, over whom we're going to rule & reign!

6. It's the grand finale of the Wrath of God!--Where the wicked are cast into the Winepress of His Wrath!

7. When the Wrath of God has been wreaked on the wicked below, we are all going to climb on our fine white stallions, our Heavenly horses, & we're going to come riding out of the sky with the Lord, and invasion from Outer Space!--Aliens now to this World!

8. How stupid can the wicked get?! How crazy can even the Devil be?--To make a last-ditch stand to try to fight God & His forces, even though by this time we are as powerful as the angels of Heaven! We have supernatural resurrection bodies, supernatural powers, & we can even ride our Heavenly horses through the sky!

9. Jesus will come charging out of the blue on a mighty white charger in a mighty invasion from Outer Space, & He'll just utter His Word like thunder, sharp as a sword, & it will slaughter His enemies!

10. Although the slaughter & carnage resulting from this Battle will be unparalleled by any wars or disasters before it, it will not be total.--There will still be some remaining who will survive it--those spared for the Millennium! PTL!

11. At this mighty battle of Armageddon, we not only conquer Satan & his forces, but we also take over the World, to rule & reign & run it the way it should have been run to begin with, & would have been if man had not believed the Devil's lies & disobeyed God & gone his own way!

12. When Christ finally takes over, it's going to have to be with force & with power, "With great power & glory"!--The wicked just don't understand anything else!

13. .16:12,16,17 And the sixth angel poured out his vial upon the great river Euphrates; and the water thereof was dried up, that the way of the kings of the East might be prepared. And he gathered them together into a place called in the Hebrew tongue Armageddon. And the seventh angel poured out his vial into the air; and there came a great voice out of the temple of Heaven, from the throne, saying, It is done.

14. .19:11,14-16 And I saw Heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and He that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness He doth judge and make war. And the armies which were in Heaven followed Him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean. And out of His mouth goeth a sharp sword, that with it He should smite the nations: and He shall rule them with a rod of iron: and He treadeth the winepress of the fierceness and Wrath of Almighty God. And He hath on His vesture and on His thigh a Name written, KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.

15. .19:19-21 And I saw the Beast, and the kings of the Earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war against Him that sat on the horse, and against His army. And the Beast was taken, and with him the False Prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the Mark of the Beast, and them that worshipped his Image. These both were cast alive into a Lake of Fire burning with brimstone. And the remnant were slain with the sword of Him that sat upon the horse, which sword proceeded out of His mouth: and all the fowls were filled with their flesh.

16. .15 Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of His saints, to execute judgment upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds.

(For more Scriptures on this topic, see Part 10 of the *Book of the Future*.)

11. "THE MILLENNIUM!"

1. At the end of the mighty Battle of Armageddon, of the forces of God against the forces of Satan on Earth, we, the saints of God, along with our King, Jesus Christ, will take over this World!

2. The Millennium will be a 1000-year reign of peace, plenty & paradise on Earth!--Our great Worldwide victory over all of the Antichrist forces of Satan, including Satan himself!

3. The Millennium is one thousand years of Heaven on Earth like the Garden of Eden, with Worldwide peace, Satan & his forces bound, the curse removed & Paradise regained!

4. At last the Lord is going to redeem the Earth again, & again He's going to cause the beautiful Garden of Eden to blossom in perfection & sinlessness as we rule & reign with Christ upon the Earth for a thousand years.

5. The true Christians & believers are going to inherit the Earth & the Kingdom of God on Earth & run & govern it by the Love & the power of God!

6. The Bible is for dictatorship, & the coming Kingdom of Jesus Christ will be an absolute total dictatorship by Jesus Himself!

7. Only God Himself in the Person of Jesus Christ, with His angelic helpers & angelised saints, is going to be able to run a World government well, with true justice, liberty, peace, plenty & happiness for all!

8. Jesus & His Kingdom are going to be the government, & we are going to be His angels & teachers & enforcers & policemen.

9. We're going to be teaching them how to live & how to be honest & how to love God & obey. (Is.2:1-5; 11:1-9.)

10. It is you that God is going to use to run the World, & He's getting you ready for it right now!

11. His Word says, "We shall then rule & reign with Him over the nations with a rod of iron!" (Rev.2:26,27.) It'll be a mandatory rule of loving force to compel the nations to submit to the laws of God & to recognise His authority & to obey His rules of life, love, health & happiness.

12. The Millennium will be a time of teaching, a time of training, a time of enlightening, a time of learning His laws & His ways & His Love, & again another opportunity to reach the lost for the Lord!

13. Everything that the Lord ever taught you during this life, everything that you ever learn now, is going to come in very handy then.

14. There are so many jobs in the millennium, it's almost too hard to find enough people to do them all!

15. The Millennium's going to be the World's last chance to repent & confess & try to get things straightened out & make things right.

16. No more big powers & oppressed poor!--Only the Kingdom of Jesus Christ, Heaven on Earth, fairness & justice for all & eternal happiness forever!

17. A great deal, if not all, of the curse is going to be removed. Man is going to be at peace with the animals. The lion will lie down with the lamb & it says "a little child shall lead them." (Isa.11:6, 65:25)

18. In the Millennium, we are going to be the angels!--Amongst men!

19. The Earth will blossom as a rose with the curse removed & enmity between man & the animals & the insects & the vipers removed, so that all God's Creation will be in perfect peace & beautiful harmony & at peace with one another.

20. "For the darkness shall turn to dawning,

And the dawning to noonday bright!

And Christ's great Kingdom shall come on Earth,

The Kingdom of Love & Light!"

21. There won't be any unbelievers in the Millennium, but there will be some unreceivers.

22. Why the Millennium?--To prove to you & to them & to God & to the Devil & to the whole Universe of angels that, though mercy is even shown to the wicked, yet they will not repent!--They will still rebel. (Isa.26:10)

23. Today He's showing His Love to the World, to try to get you to love Him. But the day is coming when, if all else fails & you reject His Love, He will rule with a rod of iron & force!

24. In that day He's going to wipe away all this Hell on Earth & He's going to set up His Kingdom of peace & righteousness & fairness & justice & goodness & mercy & Love!--And that's going to be Heaven on Earth!

25. Whether man likes it or not, God is going to be supreme & Jesus shall reign from shore to shore & we shall rule & reign with Him with that rod of iron!

26. We'll have half the battle licked just by the Lord being here, & the other half licked by the Devil not being here!

27. Millennial re-education, that'll be the biggest job of all, really! It's going to be a big job re-educating the whole World, both Christians & non-Christians!

28. "In that Golden Age I shall rule upon the Earth in person with a rod of iron, & ye shall rule with Me in mighty power!"

29. "The dawn cometh & the Son of Righteousness ariseth & this shall be a New Day, & His Love shall drop down like rain upon the land & there shall spring forth life!"

30. We're going to rule the World! Not that I exactly look forward to the responsibility of the job, but with supernatural, immortal bodies & super-human miraculous wisdom I'm sure we'll be able to handle it!

31. .20:6 Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with Him a thousand years.

32. .7:27 And the kingdom and dominion, and the greatness of the kingdom under the whole Heaven, shall be given to the people of the saints of the most High, whose kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and all dominions shall serve and obey Him.

33. .2:2-4 And it shall come to pass in the last days, that the mountain of the Lord's house shall be established in the top of the mountains, and shall be exalted above the hills; and all nations shall flow unto it. And many people shall go and say, Come ye, and let us go up to the mountain of the Lord, to the house of the God of Jacob; and He will teach us of His ways, and we will walk in His paths: for out of Zion shall go forth the law, and the Word of the Lord from Jerusalem. And He shall judge among the nations, and shall rebuke many people: and they shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruninghooks: nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more.

34. .11:4,6-9 With righteousness shall He judge the poor, and reprove with equity for the meek of the Earth. The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid; and the calf and the young lion and the fatling together; and a little child shall lead them. And the cow and the bear shall feed; their young ones shall lie down together: and the lion shall eat straw like the ox. And the sucking child shall play on the hole of the asp, and the weaned child shall put his hand on the cockatrice's den. They shall not hurt nor destroy in all My holy mountain: for the Earth shall be full of the knowledge of the Lord, as the waters cover the sea.

(For more Scriptures on this topic, see Part 11 of the *Book of the Future*.)

12. "THE BATTLE OF GOG & MAGOG!"

1. Even after the Thousand-Year Reign of Jesus Christ in person, with us as His personal officers & police & guardian angels, the wicked will again rebel in a great battle against Jesus Christ & His Church, His people ruling the Earth, & they will again follow Satan to their final destruction!

2. In spite of Heaven on Earth, some unregenerate wicked people are eventually going to rebel again against the Lord & His Kingdom! So in the end He'll have to wipe them all out--including the Earth! He'll purge the whole surface of the Ball!

3. The final war of all is the Battle of Gog & Magog, when Satan is loosed out of the pit of Hell for just a little while to again go out & deceive the wicked people of the Earth.

4. The Devil's gotta be let out for a little while to show you that "though mercy be extended to the wicked, yet he will not learn righteousness"! (Is.26:10.)

5. As God once wiped out all mankind & destroyed the surface of the Earth with a flood of water, He's going to again purify the surface of the Earth, but next time, at the end of the Millennium, by a flood of fire!

6. That battle of Gog & Magog is sort of like the Devil's second coming when he comes back to lead his people again, & obviously they'll be his people if they didn't receive Jesus!

7. The Lord has got to burn up the atmosphere & the Earth's surface in order to purify it & clean it up & get rid of it all & have a New Earth & a new atmospheric Heavens!--And then His Holy pure spotless City can come down!

8. .20:7-10 And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison and shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the Earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle: the number of whom is as the sand of the sea. And they went up on the breadth of the Earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city: and fire came down from God out of Heaven, and devoured them. And the Devil that deceived them was cast into the Lake of Fire and brimstone, where the Beast and the False Prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever.

9. PE.3:10-13 The heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the Earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up. Seeing then that all these things shall be dissolved, what manner of persons ought ye to be in all holy conversation and godliness. Looking for and hasting unto the coming of the day of God, wherein the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat. Nevertheless we, according to His promise, look for New Heavens and a New Earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness.

(For more Scriptures on this topic, see Part 12 of the *Book of the Future*.)

13. "THE JUDGEMENT & HELL!"

1. At the end of the Millennium, after the Battle of Gog & Magog, all the unsaved & wicked who ever lived will be raised, millions of them, & they will be judged at the Great White Throne Judgement of God, at which time each will be assigned to his particular place in the hereafter.

2. All the people who ever lived, whether good or bad, if unsaved, will have to stand at the Great White Throne Judgement of God. (Rev.20:11,12.)

3. At the Great White Throne Judgement of God after the Battle of Gog & Magog, which is at the end of the Millennium, the Millennial rebels are sent to their Hell & their punishment!

4. The punishments & the rewards will be designed & tailored according to their deeds, for a reason, for a purpose, to teach them.

5. God probably has as varied terms & means of punishment & correction in the afterlife as there are in this life under the World's System & its laws.

6. If things aren't squared away in this life, good or evil, they certainly will be in the next.

7. I'm convinced that God is not a monster who's gonna keep people in flames eternally! You'll find in the Book of Revelation that there's some hope for everybody, TTL!

8. They will be punished for their sins, but when their punishment is over they'll be released, that's the whole idea.--Released by the grace of God & the forgiveness of God!

9. A lot of those who have been in Hell or in Limbo or in their place of punishment, whether light or heavy, during the Millennium, will be judged as to how they have reacted & how they have responded to this chastisement & this punishment & this correctional time--whether they have completely repented & really been sorry & received God's law or are still unrepentant.

10. So-called "eternal" punishment, "eternal" Hell, "everlasting" punishment, Hell-fire forever & ever, is not going to be forever & is not going to be everlasting, & it is certainly not eternal the way we use these words to mean "without end".

11. I believe in the Eternal Universal Reconciliation of man, because Jesus said He died that all might be saved (1Tim.2:4, 2Pet.3:9), & I believe that's going to happen someday!

12. .20:5,11-15 The rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. And I saw a great White Throne, and Him that sat on it, from whose face the Earth and the Heaven fled away; and there was found no place for them. And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the Book of Life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and Hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works. And death and Hell were cast into the Lake of Fire. This is the second death. And whosoever was not found written in the Book of Life was cast into the Lake of Fire.

(For more Scriptures on this topic, see Part 13 of the *Book of the Future*.)

14. "THE NEW HEAVEN & NEW EARTH!"

1. If you're still looking for the perfect city or the perfect government in the perfect country with perfect people, just wait a little while longer--it's coming!

2. I've visited the future & I've seen the Heavenly City standing upon the New Earth!--Beautiful, gorgeous, incomparable, almost indescribable, the most gorgeous sight you'll ever want to see!

3. Jesus is going to renew the whole face of the Earth!--The whole Earth's going to be perfect, beautiful like the Garden of Eden, & a New Heaven & a New Earth. And the Holy City, the New City, the New Heaven is going to come down to the New Earth!

4. The Heavenly City will come down from God out of Heaven & dwell with men! This is the hope of all ages: That now-unseen Eternal World where we shall dwell with Him forever!

5. You're not going to go to Heaven to live with God, God is going to come to Earth to live with you! (Rev.21:2-3.)

6. There shall be no more evil in all God's Kingdom on Earth--only a Heaven-on-Earth rule by the Lord & His Children from the Heavenly City which will come down from God from Outer Space to rule the Earth!

7. It will be full of precious stones & jewels, & best of all, full of precious souls!--Immortal souls, saved souls that love Jesus & that you won to the Lord!

8. Heaven is a beautiful place! You think this is Heavenly here, days of Heaven on Earth, the beauties of His Creation?--Well, it's even more beautiful, it's just like all this magnified! TYJ!

9. There's the same salvation for us all, same City, but apparently there's going to be differences in the section of town you live in.

10. Being able to disappear & appear & go through walls & fly with the speed of thought isn't going to make you half as happy as to see those you've won to Jesus! "Hi there! Wow, didn't I meet you on the streets? Didn't I talk to you about Jesus? Wow! Here you are! Hallelujah!"--That's going to be the biggest thrill of all!

11. In a sense, it'll be Heaven on Earth for everybody there even though some were not saved & don't have the right to enter the Golden City or walk its golden streets.

12. Even the New Earth outside the City will be Paradise compared to Hell & its prisons & its Lake of Fire & its torments etc., so that all will come in a sense to their final reward, depending on the degree of their sin, the degree of their punishment, the degree of their repentance, the degree of their reformation.

13. Heaven is not the end!--It's only the beginning! God only knows how much more we'll have to conquer after we've conquered the Earth & all the souls who have ever lived on it & all the problems! Who knows what other Worlds we may have yet to conquer!

14. "Look!--Behold the beauty of the Lord in the days of eternal sunshine & the breath of everlasting Spring & the glories of the flowers of life that shall be forever!"

15. The World to come will be a beautiful place to be, full of beautiful people having a beautiful time. It will be a better World then, with better people who will have learned the Law of the Love of God.

16. .21:1-4,7 And I saw a New Heaven and a New Earth: for the first Heaven and the first Earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. And I John saw the Holy City, New Jerusalem, coming down from God out of Heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. And I heard a great voice out of Heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and He will dwell with them, and they shall be His people, and God Himself shall be with them, and be their God. And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away. He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be My son.

17. .21:16,17 And the City lieth foursquare, and the length is as large as the breadth: and he measured the City with the reed, twelve thousand furlongs. (1500 miles!) The length and the breadth and the height of it are equal.

And he measured the wall thereof, an hundred and forty and four cubits (216 ft.), according to the measure of a man, that is, of the angel.

18. .21:21-23 And the twelve gates were twelve pearls; every several gate was of one pearl: and the street of the City was pure gold, as it were transparent glass. And I saw no temple therein: for the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are the temple of it. And the City had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb is the Light thereof.

19. .21:24,27 And the nations of them which are saved shall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the Earth do bring their glory and honour into it. And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie: but they which are written in the Lamb's Book of Life.

20. .22:1-4 And he shewed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God and of the Lamb. In the midst of the street of it, and on either side of the river, was there the Tree of Life, which bare twelve manner of fruits, and yielded her fruit every month: and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations. And there shall be no more curse: but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it; and His servants shall serve Him: And they shall see His face; and His name shall be in their foreheads.

(For more Scriptures on this topic, see Part 14 of the *Book of the Future*.)

(For General References on The Future--Sections 1-14 see also: No.75A, 80, 316, 343, 346, 347, 348, 349, 398, 534, 541, 1092, 1100, 1241, 1242, 1243, 1244, 1245, 1276, 1283, 1331, 1342, 1342, 1343, 1344, 1345, 1346, 1347, 1348, 1364, 1391, 1423, 1426, 1428, 1435, 1437, 1440, 1441, 1445, 1447, 1450, 1453, 1457, 1460, 1463, 1465, 1466, 1475, 1476, 1484, 1485, 1486, 1487, 1488, 1489, 1490, 1491, 1494, 1495, 1496, 1497, 1498, 1499, 1500, 1501, 1502, 1503, 1504, 1505, 1506, 1507, 1508, 1509, 1513, 1514, 1515, 1516, 1517, 1518, 1519, 1520, 1521, 1522, 1523, 1524, 1528, 1529, 1530, 1531, 1532, 1533, 1542, 1543, 1544, 1545, 1546, 1556, 1557, 1558, 1559, 1560, 1561, 1562, 1568, 1569, 1571, 1573, 1574, 1575, 1577, 1578, 1579, 1583, 1596, 1597, 1611, 1612, 1613, 1614, 1615, 1616, 1617, 1618, 1619, 1620, 1621, 1622, 1623, 1624, 1625, 1626, 1627, 1628, 1630, 1631, 1632, 1639, 1645, 1658.)



Give and it shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down, & shaken together, & running over, shall men give into your bosom. For with the same measure ye mete withal it shall be measured to you again (Lk.6:38).

1. As you pour out He'll pour in & you can never outpour Him!
2. The best gifts are tied with heartstrings.
3. We may give without loving, but we cannot love without giving.
4. Give what you have, to someone it may be better than you dare to think.
5. You are no fool to give a life you cannot keep for a love you will never lose.
6. You never lose by giving.
7. Life is like a tennis game; you can't win without serving.
8. We cannot hold a torch to light another's path without brightening our own.
9. He that does good to another also does good to himself.
10. Blessed are those who can give without remembering, & receive without forgetting.
11. One of the most difficult things to give away is kindness, for it is usually returned.
12. It is possible to give away & become richer. It is also possible to hold on too tightly & lose everything.
13. Charity gives itself rich, covetousness hoards itself poor.
14. There was a man, though some did think him mad.
The more he cast away, the more he had.
15. A candle lights others & consumes itself.
16. As the purse is emptied the heart is filled.
17. You give but little when you give of your possessions. It is when you give of yourself, that you truly give.
18. Love cannot be wasted. It makes no difference where it is bestowed, it always brings in big returns.
19. If your heart is full of love, you always have something to give.
20. Nothing the heart gives away is lost, it is kept in the hearts of others.
21. You can even cast in all your living and still not hurt, because God will bless you for it.
22. 110%ers...giving 100% of their lives, plus tithing 10% of their income.
23. God will judge you according to not just how much you give or tithe, but what you have left and your motive in giving, and He will reward you accordingly!
24. If you don't give an offering, God will take a collection!
25. You can't outgive God!
26. You can't give without getting, you can't reward without receiving in return.
27. The more you give, the more you get.
28. By giving your all, you're going to get everything.
29. Not what you get, but what you give,
Is that which proves your right to live.
30. "Behold, I say, Give! Give unto them, and I shall give unto thee more than thou shalt be able to give unto them!"
31. Giving is the greatest of all pleasures.

32. I feel like I'm doing people a favour to encourage them to give, because I know if they do, God will bless them for it!

33. I enjoy giving! I just give it out right and left, and God gives it back to me faster than I can give it away!

34. God goes an awful lot by our motives, whether they are selfish or unselfish.

35. If you can't be on the field, you can at least help the field!

36. The more you give, the more He will give you!

37. Let's be fair and square and share.

38. We cannot really make a sacrifice!

39. Those who give all will receive 100-fold here and now!--10,000 per cent!

40. God loves to outgive you! He'll never let you outgive Him!

41. All the best things in life are shared.

42. One of the ways of giving to God is being good to His little ones.

43. If God works on the principle of those that give get, and those that don't, don't get, then I think we ought to work on the same principle!

44. "From him that hath, according to his ability, unto him that hath not, according to his need." --That's the sharing principle of Love--and the loving principle of sharing!

45. The richest people in the World in God's Kingdom are going to be those who share the most, and He will heap on them more than they can hold.

46. God's way to plenty is to give it away.

47. When we don't give willingly or cheerfully, then we're not really giving.

48. Unselfishly give that others may live!

49. You don't receive something from the Lord without it costing you something in return.

50. Getting is the Devil's imitation, sharing is God's true blessing!

51. If it doesn't hurt, it isn't worth giving.

If it isn't for love, it isn't worth living!

52. If you give your all to Him, He gives His all to you.

53. Seldom can a heart be lonely

If it seeks a lonelier still,

Self-forgetting, seeking only

Emptier cups of love to fill!

54. Love just doesn't grow, if you leave it on a shelf.

Take it down and use it, don't keep it to yourself.

55. The hand that gives, gathers.

56. And for our sakes He gave away

The life that He was living.

From Christmas Day to Calvary

His greatest joy was giving!

57. You're not really a giver unless you're a cheerful giver.

58. Better to wear out from use than rust out from disuse!

59. He's more willing to give than we are to receive!

60. If you give love, you'll get love--it multiplies and grows like the bread and the fish and the cruse of oil and the barrel of meal!

61. What counts, costs!

62. Save your life by giving it to God! Find your life by losing it for others!

63. You have to give to get, pour to receive, sow to reap, invest to profit, die to live, bury to resurrect.

64. We have to give our lives to Jesus to save ourselves. We have to give our lives for Jesus to save others.

65. We have to burn and be consumed to send up that beautiful smoke and sweet fragrance.

66. I'm all empty like a bottle that's all poured out, but He keeps filling me up again.

67. The liberal soul shall be made fat: and he that watereth shall be watered also himself. Pro.11:25.

68. The Gift of God is Eternal Life, but it cost Jesus His to give it to you, and it'll probably cost you yours to live it!

69. He that hath pity upon the poor lendeth unto the Lord: and that which he hath given will He pay him again. Pro.19:17.

70. You can't take your money with you--but you can send it on ahead.

71. We cannot serve God and Mammon, but we can serve God with Mammon--our money!

72. God blesses everybody that gives, and if they are poor, that's all the more reason they ought to give if they want to get blessed and for the Lord to help them not to be so poor!

73. You find me the big givers and I'll find you the hard workers. But you find me the penurious little penny-pinchers and I'll show you the people that are selfish and penny-pinching and not giving to anybody but themselves.

74. Once that little widow gave her mite, "even all her living", do you think for a minute God let her continue in that poverty-stricken condition after that? I'm convinced that He just heaped the blessings on'r after He'd made her an example to all history!

75. God hates hoarding and He says "He that withholdeth it tendeth to poverty." (Pro.11:24)

76. If Christianity does not reach down into your pocket, if the love of Jesus Christ doesn't cause you to share what you have with those in need, then it is false Christianity!

77. Every religion in the World subsists on begging, and you could hardly give to a better cause than ours, a cause that is saving young people from moral, mental and physical destruction!

78. Start teaching them how to live by telling them how to give!

79. A Negro minister once prayed: "Lord, we can't hold much but we can overflow lots!"

80. Will the guardian of a well die of thirst?

81. Gold's no good unless it is put in circulation and invested in fruitful fields and paid to the laborers in the fields and distributed to the poor.

82. Bible economics contradicts all other systems of economics because it puts God first and says "deny yourself"! It says, "die for God and He'll save your life, die and you'll live"!

83. If we receive more income than we have outgo, then we know God wants us to give it.

84. God's first law of economics is still to seek His Kingdom first!--Then all these things shall be added unto you! (Mt.6:33)

85. Our economy is built on the Lord and love and sharing. And as long as you keep giving, you can't lose. God will feed you, protect you, clothe you and care for you, no matter what happens.

86. God's idea is, the faster you give it away and share it, the more He'll heap it on, and the richer you'll become so you can share more!

87. If you are unselfish and generous with your spiritual riches and share them with those that need it, He will also trust you with material riches to share!

88. When it comes to God and His work, it's good business to give to the Lord. It's good investment earning the highest possible rate of interest and dividends of anything you can possibly invest in, 100-fold or more!

89. A candle loses nothing of its light by lighting another candle.

90. It's impossible to make a sacrifice for Him!

91. There is that scattereth, and yet increaseth: and there is that withholdeth more than is meet, but it tendeth to poverty. Pro.11:24.

92. Lay him or her on the altar. Lay this or that on the altar for God, and don't even expect to get it back. If you're giving with that motive and intention, it's no sacrifice. Most of the sacrifices God asks you to give, you think you give them up forever, but I'll tell you this for your encouragement: I've found that God gave me many things back that I gave up for the Lord. He gave me back things that I gave up for Him when He could trust me with them.

93. He that giveth unto the poor shall not lack: but he that hideth his eyes shall have many a curse. Pro.28:27.

94. Even though the recipients might waste it or not appreciate it, if your motive is right and your intentions are pure, God will bless you for giving and honour and prosper you for it.

95. That's what He gave it to you for--so you could forsake it!--For His Will or for the poor or let God use it in some way.

96. God never let anybody get hurt by giving or tithing! The Lord just won't let you suffer for it! He may let you think you are going to sacrifice and suffer and that it will be hard, but He'll more than repay.

97. How can there be any giving, any serving, if there be no receiving? Someone must receive if another is to give. We give joy to the giver when we become the grateful receiver. Thus, as paradoxical as it may seem, in receiving there is giving. The noble receiver is the noble giver.

98. One candle can light a thousand others without diminishing its light.

(See also No.189, 301A, 332A, 336A, 665, 667, 673, 682, 684, 701, 702, 841, 842, 843, 903, 928, 934, 1081, 1105, 1212, 1271, 1276, 1320, 1321.)

99. .15:7,8,10 If there be among you a poor man of one of thy brethren within any of thy gates in thy land which the Lord thy God giveth thee, thou shalt not harden thine heart, nor shut thine hand from thy poor brother: But thou shalt open thine hand wide unto him, and shalt surely lend him sufficient for his need, in that which he wanteth. Thou shalt surely give him, and thine heart shall not be grieved when thou givest unto him: because that for this thing the Lord thy God shall bless thee in all thy works, and in all that thou puttest thine hand unto.

100. SA.24:24b Neither will I offer ...unto the Lord my God of that which doth cost me nothing.

101. CH.29:9a Then the people rejoiced, for that they offered willingly, because with perfect heart they offered willingly to the Lord.

102. PRO.3:27,28 Withhold not good from them to whom it is due, when it is in the power of thine hand to do it. Say not unto thy neighbor, Go, and come again, and to morrow I will give; when thou hast it by thee.

103. PRO.11:24-25 There is that scattereth, and yet increaseth; and there is that withholdeth more than is meet, but it tendeth to poverty. The liberal soul shall be made fat: and he that watereth shall be watered also himself.

104. .13:7 There is that maketh himself rich, yet hath nothing: there is that maketh himself poor, yet hath great riches.

105. PRO.14:21b He that hath mercy on the poor, happy is he.

106. PRO.19:17 He that hath pity upon the poor lendeth unto the Lord; and that which he hath given will He pay him again.

107. .21:25,26 The desire of the slothful killeth him; for his hands refuse to labour. He coveteth greedily all the day long: but the righteous giveth and spareth not.

108. .22:9 He that hath a bountiful eye shall be blessed; for he giveth of his bread to the poor.

109. .28:27 He that giveth unto the poor shall not lack: but he that hideth his eyes shall have many a curse.

110. .11:1 Cast thy bread upon the waters: for thou shalt find it after many days.

111. .5:42 Give to him that asketh thee, and from him that would borrow of thee turn not thou away.

112. .6:1-4 Take heed that ye do not your alms before men, to be seen of them: otherwise ye have no reward of your Father which is in Heaven. Therefore when thou doest thine alms, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. But when thou doest alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth: That thine alms may be in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret Himself shall reward thee openly.

113. .25:40 Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these My brethren, ye have done it unto Me.

114. .12:43,44 And He called unto Him His disciples, and saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, That this poor widow hath cast more in, than all they which have cast into the treasury: For all they did cast in of their abundance; but she of her want did cast in all that she had, even all her living.

115. .3:11 He that hath two coats, let him impart to him that hath none; and he that hath meat, let him do likewise.

116. LUK.6:34,35 And if ye lend to them of whom ye hope to receive, what thank have ye? for sinners also lend to sinners, to receive as much again. But love ye your enemies, and do good, and lend, hoping for nothing again; and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest: for He is kind unto the unthankful and to the evil.

117. .6:38 Give, and it shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosom. For with the same measure that ye mete withal it shall be measured to you again.

118. LUK.21:4 For all these have of their abundance cast in unto the offerings of God: but she of her penury hath cast in all the living that she had.

119. ACT.20:35 I have shewed you all things, how that so labouring ye ought to support the weak, and to remember the Words of the Lord Jesus, how He said, It is more blessed to give than to receive.

120. .12:13 Distributing to the necessity of saints; given to hospitality.

121. CO.10:33 Even as I please all men in all things, not seeking mine own profit, but the profit of many, that they may be saved.

122. 1CO.13:3 And though I bestow all my goods to feed the poor, and though I give my body to be burned, and have not charity, it profiteth me nothing.

123. CO.9:6-7 But this I say, He which soweth sparingly shall reap also sparingly; and he which soweth bountifully shall reap also bountifully. Every man according as he purposeth in his heart, so let him give; not grudgingly, or of necessity: for God loveth a cheerful giver.

124. COL.4:1 Masters, give unto your servants that which is just and equal; knowing that ye also have a Master in Heaven.

125. TI.5:18 For the Scripture saith, Thou shalt not muzzle the ox that treadeth out the corn. And, The laborer is worthy of his reward.

126. .2:15,16 If a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food, And one of you say unto them, Depart in peace, be ye warmed and filled; notwithstanding ye give them not those things which are needful to the body; what doth it profit?

(See also MAT.25:25-45)

48. GOD

--{page 411}--



God is a Spirit: and they that worship Him must worship Him in spirit and in truth (Jn.4:24).

1. God is Love, not a cruel tyrant, not a monster Who is trying to frighten everyone into Hell, but a God Who is trying to love everyone into Heaven! You must simply love Him, receive Jesus into your own heart personally and love others--that's all!

2. We have a whole God for the whole man, Who is able to do anything.

3. God is a spirit Who is everywhere, omnipresent; all-powerful, omnipotent; all-knowing, omniscient!

4. Good always wins, because good is of God, and God can't lose!

5. The omnipresent, omnipotent, omniscient Spirit of God pervades all things, God is everything and everything is God, in a sense. He's so great we can't even understand Him!

6. The power and life of the universe is what some people call God but what the Bible calls Love, for "God is Love", the very spirit of Love itself, everlasting love that never ends, from a Lover Who never leaves, the Lover of all lovers, God Himself.(1Jn.4:8)

7. The most outstanding thing about our God is what the World can't understand, He can't be seen! We worship the unseen God!

8. God is spirit, which is a form of power or energy--spiritual energy.

9. The true God is a good God, who is kind and loving and concerned about His children, and wants them to have total life, liberty and happiness.

10. God is like the great computer. You can plug into Him and by His power or His Spirit He can give you all the information and all the wisdom and all the answers that you need in His Spirit.

11. You can explain God to your children as soon as they can talk. As soon as they understand that a mother and a father are people who love them and take care of them and who gave them birth, and created them, you can explain that God is a great Father Who, though they cannot see Him, is everywhere, in Love, and is the Spirit of Love. That's all they need to know.

12. There are some things that God cannot do, because He will not do them, because He's bound Himself within certain limitations, so as not to interfere with your power of choice, because you have to make the decision, and He's not going to force you to do His Will!

13. God is not the traditionally manufactured God of hypocritical churchianity and verbose religiosity, but the genuine basic power and guiding light of the Universe, which has in some way brought man into being, and as his benevolent Fatherly Creator, has some kind and benign purpose in store for him, a final fulfillment of His undeniably human aspirations for love, life, liberty and happiness.

14. The true God is a good God Who is kind and loving and concerned about His children and Who hates war and its rich perpetrators and deplores the poverty of the poor and their suffering and is determined to set things right. He is the power and life of the Universe that some people call God but that the Bible itself calls Love, for God is Love, the very spirit of Love itself, true Love, everlasting Love, real Love, genuine Love that never ends from a Lover Who never leaves, the Lover of all Lovers, God Himself.

15. God is a good God, a loving God, a Fatherly loving Heavenly Father Who loves you and wants you to enjoy yourself and wants you to enjoy sex and wants you to enjoy Love. He made it all for you to enjoy.

16. God is a great, kind and loving Father, Who has made this beautiful World as a home for you, His child, to live in and enjoy! He has lovingly given you a wonderful body, mind and heart with which to enjoy it and each other!

17. We have only one God, God our Father in Heaven, the God of the Bible, Whose Son is Jesus Christ, the One and Only Creator of the Universe.

18. I don't have a sad God--I have a happy God, Who wants me to be happy, and you as well! This is the whole point to it all, to relieve us of the suffering, pain, death and tears brought into the World by the Enemy and the sins of man.

19. "Therefore, fear not, for I am thy God and thy testimony and thy peace and thy great fortress `round about thee which is in the heavenlies which no human power can touch, which is above all Earthly powers, and none can stand against thee, for I am thy God and thou art My children, and they are but specks and shall be blown away!"

(See also No. A, P, 1, 2, 4, 25, 35, 69, 69A, 73A, 75A, 185, 306, 307, 311B, 337, 341, 544, 545, 560, 564, 573, 581, 583, 584, 592, 594, 595, 599, 620, 621, 622, 624, 626, 631, 639, 641, 647, 648, 682, 686, 693, 694, 697, 699, 700, 712, 850, 900, 934, 959, 1027, 1268, 1317, 1360, 1389, 1407, 1519, 1521, 1527.)

20. .3:14 God said unto Moses, I AM THAT I AM: and He said, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, I AM hath sent me unto you.

21. .15:18 The Lord shall reign for ever and ever.

22. .23:19 God is not a man, that He should lie; neither the son of man, that He should repent: hath He said, and shall He not do it? or hath He spoken, and shall He not make it good?

23. .4:24 For the Lord thy God is a consuming fire, even a jealous God.

24. **CH.29:11-13 Thine, O Lord, is the greatness, and the power, and the glory, and the victory, and the majesty: for all that is in the Heaven and in the Earth is Thine; Thine is the Kingdom, O Lord, and Thou art exalted as head above all. Both riches and honour come of Thee, and Thou reignest over all; and in Thine hand is power and might; and in Thine hand it is to make great, and to give strength unto all. Now therefore, our God, we thank Thee, and praise Thy glorious Name.**

25. CH.2:6 But who is able to build Him an house, seeing the Heaven and Heaven of heavens cannot contain Him? Who am I then, that I should build Him an house, save only to burn sacrifice before Him?

26. .18:2 The Lord is my rock, and my fortress, and my deliverer; my God, my strength, in Whom I will trust; my buckler, and the horn of my Salvation, and my high tower.

27. .72:17 His Name shall endure for ever: His Name shall be continued as long as the sun: and men shall be blessed in Him: all nations shall call Him blessed.

28. .95:3 For the Lord is a great God, and a great King above all gods.

29. .102:12 Thou, O Lord, shalt endure for ever; and Thy remembrance unto all generations.

30. .102:27 Thou art the same, and Thy years shall have no end.

31. .113:5,6 Who is like unto the Lord our God, who dwelleth on high, Who humbleth Himself to behold the things that are in Heaven, and in the Earth!

32. .3:14 I know that, whatsoever God doeth, it shall be for ever: nothing can be put to it, nor anything taken from it: and God doeth it, that men should fear before Him.

33. .33:22 For the Lord is our Judge, the Lord is our Lawgiver, the Lord is our King; He will save us.

34. .44:6 Thus saith the Lord the King of Israel, and His Redeemer the Lord of hosts; I am the first, and I am the last; and beside Me there is no God.

35. .66:1 Thus saith the Lord, The Heaven is My throne, and the Earth is My footstool: where is the house that ye build unto Me? and where is the place of My rest?

36. .51:15.16 He hath made the Earth by His power, He hath established the World by His wisdom, and hath stretched out the Heaven by His understanding. When He uttereth His voice, there is a multitude of waters in the heavens; and He causeth the vapours to ascend from the ends of the Earth: He maketh lightnings with rain, and bringeth forth the wind out of His treasures.

37. .2:20-22 Blessed be the Name of God for ever and ever: for wisdom and might are His: And He changeth the times and the seasons: He removeth kings, and setteth up kings: He giveth wisdom unto the wise, and knowledge to them that know understanding: He revealeth the deep and secret things: He knoweth what is in the darkness, and the light dwelleth with Him.

38. .3:6a For I am the Lord, I change not.

39. .1:18 No man hath seen God at any time; the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, He hath declared Him.

40. .4:24 God is a Spirit: and they that worship Him must worship Him in spirit and in truth.

41. .7:48 Howbeit the most High dwelleth not in temples made with hands; as saith the prophet.

42. .17:24-28 God that made the World and all things therein, seeing that He is the Lord of Heaven and Earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands; Neither is worshipped with men's hands, as though He needed any thing, seeing He giveth to all life, and breath, and all things; And hath made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the Earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation; That they should seek the Lord, if haply they might feel after Him, and find Him, though He be not far from every one of us: For in Him we live, and move, and have our being; as certain also of your own poets have said, For we are also His offspring.

43. .COR.1:3 Blessed be God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort.

44. .4:13 Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in His sight: but all things are naked and opened unto the eyes of Him with Whom we have to do.

45. .JO.1:5b God is light, and in Him is no darkness at all.

46. .JO.4:8b God is love.

47. .JO.5:7 For there are three that bear record in Heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these three are one.

48. .1:8 I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty.

49. .4:8 And the four beasts had each of them six wings about him; and they were full of eyes within: and they rest not day and night, saying, Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come.



For My thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways My ways, saith the Lord. For as the heavens are higher than the Earth, so are My ways higher than your ways, and My thoughts than your thoughts (Isa.55:8,9).

1. As long as we let God run this outfit, we're bound to win, even when we look like we're losing! But if you or I try to run it, we're bound to lose, even when we look like we're winning!
2. You just can't beat the Lord at His Own game!
3. Man makes things in vain for our destruction, but God makes things for our good!
4. The World says anything you cannot understand is crazy!--Is it crazy to believe in God and in love, just because you can't understand them?
5. Before a national crisis there comes a sharper and sharper division between the wicked and the righteous. The righteous see it coming and get more righteous, the wicked don't see it coming and get more wicked! Evil men get worse and worse and good men better and better!
6. Everybody's a fool for something--thank God we can be fools for Christ's sake! (1Cor.4:10)
7. If you think His yoke is tough or His job is hard, Jesus said, "My yoke is easy, My burden is light"!--Meaning compared to the way of the transgressor, which is really hard! (Mt.11:30)
8. The World's in a hell of a mess, but everything is beautiful for us!
9. We're only on God's side and whatever side He's on at the moment--that's the right side of any question.
10. Covet not this world's vain riches,
That so rapidly decay,
Seek to gain the heavenly treasures,
That will never pass away.
11. A religion that is small enough for our understanding would not be large enough for our needs.
12. God the first garden made, and the first city Cain.
13. We can't even do things that look like they are good and reasonable and common sense things we think we ought to do, unless we're sure it's God's will! We're in a dangerous business, and we have got to stay close to the Lord and follow the Lord and make sure it's God's will, not just rest on the arm of flesh and natural reasoning, like Saul did.
14. The Difficult can be done immediately; the impossible takes a little longer.
15. You're off base if you're off Jesus!
16. Where happiness is madness, 'tis wisdom in disguise.
Where sanity is sadness, 'tis folly to be wise!
17. God never loses--eventually He always wins somehow!
18. If foolishness is gladness, 'tis folly to be wise!
If sanity is sadness, it makes my brain capsize!
19. When you talk about love and the Lord and the real values of life, people begin to realise how worthless everything else is.
20. God made the rules, and He can break'm if He wants to and if it suits His purpose.
21. You may be on the bottom of the World's list, but you certainly are on the top of God's list.
22. The Lord has never been in favour of majority rule, because the majority are of the Devil and follow Satan and are always wrong!
23. God is not in favour of democracy at all!--Because the righteous are always in the minority.
24. God is always for minority rule of the righteous over the wicked majority.

25. In God's eyes, that which is most is that which is least. (Lk.16:15)
26. That which is striking and beautiful is not always good, but that which is good is always beautiful.
27. Don't try to pour God into a mold and say He always has to use the same methods.
28. To hell with the proper way!...The proper way is of man!
29. The unexpected and the improper, the unconventional and untraditional, the unorthodox and unceremonious, contrary to man's natural expectation--this is the way God usually works!
30. God loves to do things contrary to the way we think He ought to do them!
31. Sometimes God's way up is down--usually, in fact!
32. Man prides himself in what he thinks are going to be his everlasting works, but their end is always the same--the grave of oblivion, monstrous reminders of man's transitory tenure against his puny efforts to eternalize himself without God!
33. If your choice, made according to natural expectations, is incorrect as far as He's concerned, He can change your mind and change your course and change your target, and change your goal according to what He knows is best, for after all, only God knows!
34. "This land (the U.S.A.) which ye call light, I call darkness!"
35. The natural and normal and perfectly legitimate with the Lord is often illegitimate with the System.
36. The most logical thing is not always God's way. He does the unusual, the supernatural, the miraculous, contrary to natural expectation.
37. God doesn't make mistakes, even when they look like it to us.
38. God gets some of His greatest victories out of seeming defeats!
39. The Devil has really got the World brainwashed! He's even got the World brainwashed to the point where his kind of righteousness, what the World thinks is righteousness, is just the opposite of God's ideas of righteousness.
40. What changed them that changed the World?--When they heard the voice of God teaching them things that were completely contrary to what was in the valley!
41. The right answer might be just the opposite of what our natural mind thinks.
42. Some people are fighting their way to Hell in spite of everything God can do to stop them! But we're chugging our way to Heaven in spite of everything the Devil can do to stop us!
43. Our disorganisation is sometimes God's organisation!
44. I think we're probably going to be a little surprised one of these days when we get on the other side, at the difference between the World's standards and God's standards--what God considers evil, and what the Devil has taught the World to call evil.
45. The Lord knows what He's doing, even if we don't know what we're doing!
46. God's idea of goodness is Godliness--a sinner who knows he needs God.
47. The Lord always uses things somehow, even things you don't expect him to--including you--and me!
48. God loves to do things contrary to natural expectation, because that takes a miracle and that shows it's God, and not man!
49. God's way up is down!--Down to the defeat of self and self-righteousness--up to the victory of the cross and death to self for others!
50. If you value the praise of man you'd better catch it quick while it's passing, 'cause it's soon gone! Only God remembers!
51. Watch out that your "improvements" to make something more attractive in your own eyes don't weaken the original structure.
52. Everybody is somebody's fool!--We're fools for Christ's sake!--Whose fool are you?
53. This is a dictatorship, not a democracy! We don't allow freedom for the Devil or his lies and his doctrines!
54. Man proposes but God disposes.
55. It takes the impossible to create a miracle!
56. The World says seeing is believing, but we know believing is seeing.
57. God is our defence, not the System.
58. We have nothing but God, but we'll get a lot further with only God than we'll ever get with trying to ride the back of the System like the Whore and reap the benefits and its delicacies and its favours because we compromise and comply with it like the churches--soon to be destroyed! (Rev.17 & 18)
59. Place worship is man worship--thing worship--temple worship--now an abomination to God!
60. God's children are brainwashed by the Lord--the Devil's are brain-polluted by the System.

61. When any courageous iconoclast becomes so presumptuous as to dare to smash the idols of the generally accepted and practiced and so-called normal psychological behavior of this vast and wrongful majority who justify themselves by comparing themselves with themselves--if some brave pioneer of the spirit or of the flesh or of science is so fool-hardy as to even suggest that this vast and unsilent majority of accepted society could possibly be wrong on some things, he is immediately hooted down as a maniac, denounced as demented, persecuted as a separatist and even often condemned as a criminal, hanged as a heretic or crucified as a menace to society!

62. We are the extremists of today but we're extremely successful where the System has failed! We're the impossible people of today, but we're working miracles in the lives of youth, in the face of the System's flat failures!

63. What we call perfect and what God calls perfect can be two different things. God took a man who was a murderer and made him the Apostle Paul. He took a woman who was one of the biggest harlots in town and made her one of His favourite disciples. So God's idea of perfection is often quite different from the church's idea of perfection or even the law's idea of perfection. God's idea of perfection is Love!

64. There are no such things as natural forces and causes which are not designed by God, because it's all God's Creation and under His control, and nothing can happen except by His Will and His design, or to say the least, His permission.

65. Sometimes I think God does far-out and unorthodox, unconventional, untraditional and very revolutionary as well as seemingly illegal things, just to test our faith and see if we'll still believe, no matter what, like Job did!

66. God's ways are not our ways and His thoughts are not our thoughts and He takes the weakest things to confound the mighty and the foolish things to bring to nought the wisdom of the wise, and often works in a very mysterious way the wonders of His Love to perform.

67. God's idea of saintliness is not sinless perfection, self-righteousness. It's a sinner saved by grace, a sinner who has no perfection, no righteousness of his own at all, but is totally dependent on the grace and the love and the mercy of God by faith. These are the only saints there are--there are no others.

68. Man's extremity is God's opportunity, and God gets His greatest victories out of seeming defeats.

69. The works of God are good and not evil. They may seem evil, look evil and appear to some people to be evil, but even so-called evil is good if God is in it.

70. Follow the leading of the Lord, not any set system. Don't set for yourself any set regimen or set system or itinerary or schedule that you can't break whenever one of God's set-ups appears.

71. God does not rule through the people, He normally rules through one man, an appointed Elder or an appointed Bishop or an appointed Apostle or an appointed Prophet or an appointed Judge or an appointed King, but never through the people. God selects the leaders and He places them over the people and the people have nothing whatsoever to do with the government or the ruling of a nation but to follow God's appointed rulers.

72. The World is far from being overcrowded! It's not even all developed, it's not even all tilled and planted! They could feed billions more people on the Earth even as it is now! That's a big bunch of the Devil's lies that you've got to cut down the population because you can't feed'm all!--The Devil's own tricks to try to advocate birth control and murderous abortions!

73. It's a terrible thing to measure God by man!

74. God likes to do things differently and in many ways that to us seem downright ridiculous, outlandishly funny, seemingly impossible, and outright laughable, just to show His power, that He's not bound by conventions, traditions, customs, the System, or any kind of impossibilities!

(See also No. A, E, M, 6, 7, 12, 23, 35, 45, 57, 117, 122, 179A, 309B, 330C, 368, 373, 376, 568, 599, 601, 609, 624, 647, 736, 800, 865, 935, 981, 996, 1027, 1036, 1332.)

75. .16:7 But the Lord said unto Samuel, Look not on his countenance, or on the height of his stature; because I have refused him: for the Lord seeth not as man seeth; for man looketh on the outward appearance, but the Lord looketh on the heart.

76. .108:12 Give us help from trouble: for vain is the help of man.

77. .118:8,9 It is better to trust in the Lord than to put confidence in man. It is better to trust in the Lord than to put confidence in princes.

78. .3:7 Be not wise in thine own eyes: fear the Lord, and depart from evil.

79. .4:18,19 But the path of the just is as the shining light, that shineth more and more unto the perfect day. The way of the wicked is as darkness; they know not at what they stumble.

80. .14:12 There is a way which seemeth right unto a man, but the end thereof are the ways of death.

81. .16:2 All the ways of a man are clean in his own eyes; but the Lord weigheth the spirits.

82. .20:24 Man's goings are of the Lord; how can a man then understand his own way?

83. .55:8,9 For My thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways My ways, saith the Lord. For as the Heavens are higher than the Earth, so are My ways higher than your ways, and My thoughts than your thoughts.

84. .27:5,6 I have made the Earth, the man and the beast that are upon the ground, by My great power and by My outstretched arm, and have given it unto whom it seemed meet unto Me. And now have I given all these lands into the hand of Nebuchadnezzar the king of Babylon, My servant; and the beasts of the field have I given him also to serve him.

85. .17:24 All the trees of the field shall know that I the Lord have brought down the high tree, have exalted the low tree, have dried up the green tree, and have made the dry tree to flourish: I the Lord have spoken and have done it.

86. .11:25 At that time Jesus answered and said, I thank Thee, O Father, Lord of Heaven and Earth, because Thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes.

87. .10:27 And Jesus looking upon them saith, With men it is impossible, but not with God: for with God all things are possible.

88. .1:52 He hath put down the mighty from their seats, and exalted them of low degree.

89. .16:15 Ye are they which justify yourselves before men; but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is highly esteemed among men is abomination in the sight of God.

90. .7:24 Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgement.

91. .5:38,39 And now I say unto you, Refrain from these men, and let them alone: for if this counsel or this work be of men, it will come to nought: But if it be of God, ye cannot overthrow it; lest haply ye be found even to fight against God.

92. .11:33 O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! how unsearchable are His judgments, and His ways past finding out!

93. .12:21 Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good.

94. **CO.1:18 For the preaching of the cross is to them that perish foolishness; but unto us which are saved it is the power of God.**

95. **CO.1:21 For after that in the wisdom of God the World by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save them that believe.**

96. **CO.1:25-29 The foolishness of God is wiser than men; and the weakness of God is stronger than men. For ye see your calling, brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble, are called: But God hath chosen the foolish things of the World to confound the wise; and God hath chosen the weak things of the World to confound the things which are mighty; And base things of the World, and things which are despised hath God chosen, yea, and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are: That no flesh should glory in His presence.**

97. **CO.2:14 But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.**

98. .2:5 Harken, my beloved brethren, Hath not God chosen the poor of this World rich in faith, and heirs of the Kingdom which He hath promised to them that love Him?



And the Devil, taking Him up into an high mountain, shewed unto Him all the kingdoms of the World in a moment of time. And the Devil said unto Him, All this power will I give thee, and the glory of them: for that is delivered unto me; and to whomsoever I will give it (Lk.4:5-6).

1. By the System, I'm not talking only about the legal laws--I'm talking about the damnable Satanic principles upon which the damned System is built, its own laws of selfishness and "do your own thing" and keep on living just as you did, refusing any change.

2. God is not for democracy! He's for Theocracy!: Rule by God and His people, a dictatorship of the Lord!

3. Only a country that is rich and safe can afford to be a democracy, for democracy is the most expensive and nefarious kind of government ever heard of on Earth!

4. Majority rule, or a democracy, is the worst and most inefficient kind of government you can possibly have!

5. Jesus Himself taught that the majority is always wrong: "Broad is the way and wide is the gate that leadeth unto destruction, and many there be that go in thereat!"

6. Democracy is ridiculous comic opera!--The most inefficient muddled confusion that was ever created by man!

7. Whenever you have an efficient government you have a dictatorship.--Harry S. Truman.

8. Rebellious people have to be ruled with an iron hand!

9. The cleverest form of dictatorship: They tell you you're free when you're really a slave without even a slave's security!--Like in the U.S.

10. Every worldly dictatorship has been built on fear, people's willingness to surrender their freedoms in order to preserve their lives.

11. This is how every worldly dictator gets in power: He persuades the people to sell him their bodies and souls and their freedoms to save their lives, purses, and possessions!

12. The Capitalists worship that which they've already got, the Communists worship that which they hope to have.

13. Communism is like a flood that is sweeping the whole World with its red tide.

14. Communism cannot conquer death and pain and sorrow and crying and wipe away all tears from your eyes, but God can and will!

15. Look at the rich!--They're the most miserable of all men, and yet they have everything that Communism says will satisfy and make you happy!

16. Communism is a religion--a religion of the Devil!

17. Communism is a religion--the worship of man, an example of the coming World Antichrist government.

18. Communism is the ultimate in hypocrisy, trying to pretend that man is good enough without God.

19. The Communists only pretend to have Communism--we really have it! They only preach Communism--we live it!

20. When great changes occur in history, when great principles are involved, as a rule the majority are wrong.

21. The test of courage comes when one is in the minority; the test of tolerance comes when one is in the majority.

22. Oppressed people are frequently very oppressive when first liberated. ... They know best two positions: Somebody's foot on their neck or their foot on somebody's neck.
23. Every successful worldly revolution puts on in time the robes of the tyrant it has deposed.
24. Nothing is clearer in history than the adoption by successful rebels of the methods they were accustomed to condemn in the forces they deposed.
25. Men who use terrorism as a means to power, rule by terror once they are in power.
26. How a minority, reaching majority,
Seizing authority, hates a minority.
27. That, amid our highest civilization, men faint and die with want, is not due to the lack of nature, but to the injustice of man.
28. Every World Empire has ultimately been ruled by the Devil and has always persecuted God's people!
29. This is a new dual personality they have developed in a lot of countries now, watch it! They have a surfaced Party above ground, official, recognised, legal, and become very popular and recognised. Then beneath ground, underground, they've got radical terrorists who are doing assassinations and bombings and all kinds of things, dirty work that they don't dare acknowledge.
30. The members of the System are bound by the System.
31. Communism doesn't really offer the answer. It only has a theoretical goal: An earthly Utopian Communist heaven-on-Earth. But Communism even admits it hasn't reached that yet.
32. In fact, Communism is a religion in itself. The Soviets are very puritanical, extremely self-righteous and narrow-minded. Its' a religion of self-righteousness.
33. The trouble with the children of Israel was that, although Moses got them out of Egypt, he couldn't get Egypt out of them!
34. What god does the World give that can love man in his lowest estate and save him in his hour of need from his most pitiful plights?
35. When people don't stay on the Center--Jesus--they become eccentric, off center, irrational, unreasonable, and almost a little bit off their rocker!
36. A little country who decides to buck a big one had better have a big friend!
37. There are always some who are not content with Heavenly bliss, but still prefer the madness of an Earthly Hell!
38. A jury consists of twelve persons chosen to decide who has the better lawyer.
39. Most politicians are the biggest hypocrites and liars and cheaters and grafters, and you just can't be a politician in America today and still be a true Christian!
40. God calls the Wicked His sword to afflict His Own people for their sins.
41. Force and right are the governors of this world; force till right is ready.
42. When I sell liquor, it's called bootlegging; when my patrons serve it on silver trays on Lake Shore Drive, it's called hospitality.--Al Capone
43. Justice without force is powerless; force without justice is tyrannical.
44. Nothing which is morally wrong can ever be politically right--except by the party in power!
45. The World always makes the assumption that the exposure of an error is identical with the discovery of the truth--that error and truth are simply opposite. They are nothing of the sort. What the World turns to, when it has been cured of one error, is usually simply another error, and maybe one worse than the first one.
46. We enact many laws that manufacture criminals, and then a few that punish them.
47. Bad officials are elected by good citizens who do not vote.
48. God does not run a Democracy, He runs an absolute total Dictatorship, and the people have very little to say about how He wants to run it, it's His affair.
49. The sign of bureaucracy is when the first person who answers the phone can't help you.
50. The only thing harder to clean up than a small boy is politics.
51. Polls are voting places where you stand in line for a chance to decide who will spend your money.
52. Why do they call them candidates when so many are far from candid?
53. There are some politicians who shake your hand before an election and your confidence afterward.
54. Columbus ventured forth like the thinking of modern government: He didn't know where he was going when he started, he didn't know where he was when he got there, and he did it on borrowed money.
55. You can tell the ideals of a nation by its advertisements.
56. The media often says what they know is untrue, in the hope that if they go on saying it long enough it will come true.
57. "If the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch." (Mat.15:14)

58. Whoever profits by the crime is guilty of it.
59. A politician thinks of the next election; a statesman, of the next generation.
60. Don't tell me there aren't slaves today!--The poor are still slaves of the rich and rich governments who tell'm what to do and how to do it on slave-labour wages!
61. The whole World System is built on a false foundation, people's faith in the wrong things!
62. It's amazing how many times "the wicked" and "the rich" are almost used synonymously in God's Word. The Word of God takes the position that the average rich man is wicked or he wouldn't be rich!
63. Most of the rich get their money by robbing the poor!
64. The faster the World goes, the faster it's hell-bent for destruction!
65. Systemites are sure smart about Flatland, but when it comes to anything else, they are totally ignorant.
66. The System accuses us of the things that they themselves are guilty of.
67. The Lord doesn't mind rich people as long as they give it away or share it or use it!
68. Every nation has its reaping time, gleaning time and hour of judgement!
69. God loves the poor and He'll feed them, even if He has to use the Devil to do it!
70. Man has turned God's Paradise into the Devil's Hell on Earth with his inventions which are polluting, destroying and annihilating mankind himself!
71. God doesn't have to destroy the wicked, they destroy themselves.
72. The System might be roaring after us, but the Lord always saves us!
73. God is always on the side of the righteous regardless of its political brand name or nationality.
74. God is almost always on the side of the poor, and the poor win every time in the long run!
75. While the World's attention is being diverted by minor spectacular events, it is rapidly, subtly and insidiously without much fanfare or notification, heading downward for the greatest economic crash, depression and social and political cataclysm in all of World history!
76. The most horrible darkness of all is when you think it's light and instead it's black darkness!
77. There's only one thing worse than a drug addict, that's a System addict!
78. There is nothing new under the sun! Everything man ever invented is nothing but a cheap imitation, a poor plastic counterfeit, or a simple illustration of the realities in the Spirit.
79. System addicts are the worst addicts of all! System addiction is the most subtle, most treacherous, most insidious, most diabolical, most difficult to detect, this system addiction of those that are addicted to the God-damned Systems of this World, the fashions of this World!--Love not the World! (1Jn.2:15)
80. The System can't stand love! It's built on hate, greed, selfishness and grasping war and violence!
81. One of the foremost signs of the demise of all the famous World empires was when they began to adulterate their metal coinage with baser cheaper metals that were not worth the face value, as most have today. The U.S. "silver" dollar is only worth about 4 cents!
82. The steel industry is one of the worst things that ever happened to mankind, because out of the knowledge of how to make steel has come weapons of war and destructive automobiles and all kinds of evils of the World!
83. Man doesn't really create anything, he merely discovers what God has already made and how to put it together.
84. A soldier goes out and dies for his country.
A diplomat goes out and lies for his country.
85. This whole World is on fire in the basement!--Not a very secure place to live unless you trust the Lord!
86. None so blind as those who will not see! None so deaf as those who will not hear!
87. If history teaches one lesson above another, it is that leadership passes from nations whose morals become corrupt.
88. Probably the reason why a politician stands on his record is to keep voters from examining it.
89. Materialism is really the major religion of the World.
90. The rich everywhere all carry the same spirit: It's a lack of concern for the needs of the poor.
91. The vast majority are always wrong in the World at large!
92. America has been living in luxury at the world's expense while other nations are starving.
93. America is the epitome of the Great Whore of Revelation 17 and 18.
94. The pollution of society is the greatest pollution of today.
95. Peaceful socialism is an impossibility, because the rich will never voluntarily share their wealth!
96. The whole world's financial system is collapsing right now!--Because it is based on paper pig money instead of God's good gold!
97. God judges a government by the way it takes care of its poor.

98. The existence of any system in the World depends both on the will of God and the will of man.
99. God has always showed Himself to be on the side of the poor and against the rich, the tyrants and the despots.
100. Systemites are slaves of the chains of conformity forged by their own hands!
101. The vast majority are nearly always wrong and wicked, according to God's Word.
102. Man is not evolving, but devoluting (Devil-luting), without God, and the end is Hell on Earth!
103. God is always for minority rule of the righteous over the wicked majority.
104. The Devil has been trying to rule the World for thousands of years. In empire after empire after empire he has been the king. Even if that empire had a series of kings, he possessed them all, very few of them escaped.
105. The political system is always of God. He gives exactly what the people deserve. (See Romans 13.)
106. There are none so blind as those that will not see and those whose minds are so made up they don't care to be confused with the facts!
107. The U.S. no longer judges other countries by whether they're good or bad, but only by whether they're pro-U.S. or pro-Communist--if they're friends of the U.S. then they're okay, no matter how bad they are!
108. All the powers that be are of God, whether a blessing or a curse, and they are sent by God to do His Will and accomplish His purpose!
109. Man creates Hell on Earth while he seeks Heaven on the Moon.
110. Oil, which has become supposedly the greatest blessing to the World, will now become one of its greatest curses if it has to do without it!
111. I don't think the Lord likes iron and steel, because look what damage it's done to the World!
112. Babylonian blobs are the epitome of inefficiency and wasted manpower.
113. When people are drowning, they will grasp at any straw, no matter what price they have to pay in loss of liberties, freedoms, honour and conscience.
114. Majority rule means rule by the wicked majority, because the majority are always wrong.
115. If fifty million people say a foolish thing it is still a foolish thing.
116. The Bible teaches that if the rich don't give it to the poor, God will allow the poor to take it away from them.
117. Power may justly be compared to a great river; while kept within its bounds it is both beautiful and useful, but when it overflows its banks, it is then too impetuous to be stemmed; it bears down all before it, and brings destruction and desolation wherever it comes.
118. The poor are trying to figure out how much they can get from the rich, and the rich are trying to figure out how little they can possibly give, and there's no solution without love.
119. Cities are man's festering sores on the body politic! The curse of civilization is its cities!
120. City life: Millions of people being lonesome together.
121. The typical successful American businessman was born in the country, where he worked hard so that he could live in the city to make enough money to retire to the country!
122. Vulgar of manner, overfed
Overdressed and underbred,
Heartless, Godless, Hell's delight,
Rude by day and lewd by night,
Bedwarfed the man, o'ergrown the brute,
Ruled by boss and prostitute,
Purple-robed and pauper-clad,
Raving, rotting, money-mad,
A squirming herd in Mammon's mesh,
A wilderness of human flesh,
Crazed with avarice, lust and rum,
New York, thy name's Delirium.
123. God doesn't like the cities of man, they're the anti-type, the exact opposite of the Heavenly City of God!
124. God speaks through His Creation, but how many people in those big smelly stinking filthy wicked vile cities can hear Him?
125. Cities are a completely devilish, fiendish, diabolical, false, artificial, superficial environment not created by God but by the Devil himself, utterly separated from the real things that God made, the beauties of His handiwork and the glory of His creation.

126. Every city man has ever built has crumbled to dust and ruins! The most gigantic and marvelous and beautiful cities of all are in ruins today, and so will be these modern cities of today, their towers will fall and they will crumble to rubble and ruins in the coming Great Atomic War and the Wrath of God!

127. Diplomacy is to do and say the nastiest thing in the nicest way.

128. The Devil was king of every World empire and possessed their kings just like he'll be king of the Antichrist kingdom at the End.

129. There is no such thing as horizontal control in the Kingdom of God, it's strictly vertical and it's strictly from the top down from God Himself.

130. Democracy tears a nation apart. The people can't govern themselves nor have they ever been able to govern themselves.

131. I believe in dictatorial socialism where the dictator robs the rich to feed the poor and takes it away by force, because that's the only way it'll ever happen.

132. God's whole governmental structure has never been a Democracy, it's always been an absolute totalitarian dictatorship from the family unit on up, and every time you get away from that you get in trouble. That's why so many Western democracies are in such a helluva mess right now.

133. God's Government is not a government of the people, it's a Government of God and His chosen, ordained, anointed, divine leadership. It's got nothing to do with what the people want, the people are always wrong, the people are always going astray.

134. I believe in total theocracy--government by God and not through any kind of Congresses. The earliest governments of God were theocracies with God as the Boss and His primary agents the Prophets of God.

135. The coming Kingdom of Jesus Christ is going to be an absolute dictatorship, not of the Proletariat, not of the God-damned Christ-hating Communists, but the Dictatorship of God through His King, Jesus Christ, with us as His officers doing exactly what He tells us to do and nothing else. Because that's the only decent, good, effective, efficient powerful kind of government sufficient to run the World.

136. You can't make people be righteous, you can't make people obey. They have got to want to obey or they're going to find some way to disobey. That's why in our Kingdom we try to rule in Love, and if people love you and love the Lord, then they want to please you and they want to obey and do what's right.

137. The World of today does not admire weakness. The only thing they respect is force, strength and violence. The ones they will worship are the ones who have got the might and who they consider right because they have the strength and the power.

138. No power can conquer this World except by the Will of God. The Communists are not where they are by their own will, nor because they are so smart and Communism is so great. They are where they are because God lets them be.

139. War is a mere symptom. Economic bankruptcy and distress is a symptom. Political confusion is a symptom. The whole mess is merely the exterior sign of the disease within, and the disease within is irreligion, atheism, rebellion against God and defiance of the Lord and anti-Christ opposition to Jesus.

140. I don't believe in Democracy, I believe in Dictatorship. The Kingdom of Jesus Christ is not going to be a Democracy and it isn't even one now. It's a Dictatorship of the Holy Spirit and if you don't listen to God's dictates, you'd better watch out!

141. I'm not for equality. I'm not for racial equality, I'm not for economic equality, I'm not for political equality because God and the Bible are not for any such nonsense. Every man shall receive according to his works and some shall shine as the stars and some shall rise to everlasting shame and contempt!

142. There is no such thing as equality except spiritually in Salvation. If you're not equal before you get saved you'll never be equal after you're saved, except spiritually, that's the only equality.

143. The rich are so smart about making money, but they are so blind about seeing real value in the future and what it's leading to.

144. God's given man 6,000 years to run the World his own way and he's made a helluva mess out of it. There has hardly been a day in history where there hasn't been a war going on somewhere, people fighting, killing, maiming, wounding, injuring and selfish and starving and disease-ridden. Man has made one Hell on Earth of what was once a Heaven on Earth.

145. The two greatest superpowers in the World are both officially anti-Church, anti-religion, anti-God and anti-Christ.

146. In the Millennium God will rule over the World's remaining wicked for a thousand years of absolute totalitarian iron rule where everyone will be forced to obey, to show the World how it should have been run and how it could have been run if they would have obeyed Him voluntarily, and how much better it will be under such a government in which everybody is compelled to be righteous and is forced to obey and has to do good. There is no

more crime, no more vice, no more rebellions, no more riots, no more war, but total perfect peace under the iron rule dictatorship of the Lord, in which you and I work with Him as His officials, like the angels of God, super men with super power!

147. If a society doesn't repent or turn around or revolte or revolt or have a revolution, it eventually becomes stationary, static, stagnant and stinks, because it's dead! The body politic dies, corrupts, decays, until God has to send a young, livelier, more moving society along to bury it, because it encumbereth the ground and endangers the health of the World. It stinks so bad even God can't stand it anymore, so He sends along a revolution to bury it.

148. People get the kind of government they deserve. A corrupt people get a corrupt government. A self-righteous hypocritical people get a self-righteous hypocritical government.

149. All attempts at changes for the better in today's governments, whether violent or non-violent, by unregenerate and sinful man, will only bring more unregenerate and sinful governments, economies, pollutions, educations and religions, resulting from man's sinful heart. To truly change these instruments and ailments of man you must change man himself and his evil heart, something only God can do. Otherwise you will only have revolution after revolution, war upon war, rich and poor, pollution and disease, the vain babblings of science falsely-so-called, political religion and regime after regime and empire following empire, all in vain and waxing worse and worse, for man is not evoluting but Devil-luting without God and the End is Hell on Earth.

150. In order not to have to confess its faults or expose its errors or show its weaknesses and the fact that it could be on the verge of collapse, or the Earth on the Eve of Destruction, the tendency of each existing system is to keep the people in a state of ignorance and semi-unconsciousness of what is really going on in the World and space, in a desperate attempt to preserve law and order through the establishment in the lives and minds of the people of a false sense of security.

151. Any country that refuses to participate in a war is bound to prosper, because countries spend from half to two thirds of their total economy on war--paying for past wars, present wars and future wars, so they have to waste most of their money on wars, and it's a terrible burden on the people!

152. The weakness of dictatorship is the death of the dictator. As long as he's alive and is a good, strong, smart, wise, God-blessed man or sometimes even when he's bad, at least there's a strong government that keeps a hold on the country and enforces peace.

153. If two men grab guns to get what they want, they're criminals. If a group of them organise and get together and grab guns to get what they want, they're gangsters. But if they're trying to get their political freedom and grab back territory that once belonged to them that some other bunch of gangsters has already conquered, then they're terrorists. And if they are a pretty good-sized army of so-called terrorists, then they're guerrillas. Finally, when they get an army big enough to conquer the territory and grab it back or from somebody else then it's a legal, sophisticated, self-righteous army. What names they call you, all depends on how big you are and how powerful you are.

154. Worldly governments today are based on power and money and guns and who's got the biggest friends.

155. The World has opted out against righteous rule and for the mad majority rule instead. That is the Devil's own doctrine.--One-man one-vote majority rule, because that way he can guarantee that he is going to stay in control.

156. I believe Russia and Communism are God's judgments on a wicked World.

157. The Religious Whore rules over the Bestial Governments, and the government has to do whatever the religionists say.

158. The whole World is in a war between the dying anti-Christ Capitalistic West and the rising anti-Christ Communist East.

159. There could undoubtedly be forces of [AC] conspiracy who are backing Communism as well as Capitalism and backing their enmity against each other and their confrontation so that they'll destroy each other and the [ACs] can pick up the pieces with the Antichrist and rule the World!

160. The poor nations of the World hate the Americans for being so rich, and the only reason they're rich is because they have robbed the poor of the World!

161. The [ACs] have been the downfall of America and brought it to shame! They're the tools of the Devil, out to wreck God's Creation...! They've helped to destroy the West, which they now control!

162. I'm proud of the Third World as being far more righteous than the West, far more humble and loving and affectionate and sweet and kind and good, better in almost every way!

163. The religion of World is materialism, whether it's a little thatched hut and a wooden canoe or a rich mansion and a Rolls Royce, if you worship it it's a sin. If you worship it and love it and work hardest for it in order

to preserve it and keep it above God Himself with no love for God nor your fellowman nor neighbor, then it is your god and you are worshipping it. When it's your everything and you'd give up anything for it, even if it's just a shanty or a grass shack, if it's what you'd rather have above all things on Earth and what you worship, what you love above God and others, then it's your idol, it's your god, it's your religion. If you worship things and materialism you're worshipping Babylon, the Whore because she is the goddess of things, the goddess of wealth, the goddess of possessions, the goddess of materialism.

164. Materialism is worship of things and its followers are servants and slaves to things--Mammon is their god and materialism is their religion.

165. Commercialism, materialism, buying and selling, manufacturing things, selling things, buying things, serving things, living for things must be classed as a form of false religion.

166. Modern materialism is also part of the false recognised religious system. The worship of the god Mammon is a part of the False Church, it's the major false religion of today, the major worship of today. God's Word says that whoever you obey, you're their servant. Whoever you're working for, you're their servant. If you're working for money you're money's servant. So modern materialism and commercialism is the major worship and religion of the day. This is the church to which most Americans belong--a church of the great god Mammon, the one they attend daily and worship at least 8, 12, 14 or 16 hours a day!

167. Most people are not slaves to their churches or their false established religious system. Their greatest slavery is to the god Mammon, the god of wealth and material things, and the ultimate in this is Communism, dialectical materialism as Karl Marx called it.--No faith in the supernatural or the spiritual or God or the Bible or anything religious supposedly, but only faith in what can be seen, heard, felt, touched, tasted. It's the ultimate form of materialism which Communism claims is their major goal and should be the aim of all the world and all society--to make a god of economy, eventually a god of the government, and according to the Bible eventually they will make a god of the leader of the Government, the Antichrist! So here we have materialism in its ultimate, and in Capitalism we've got a pretty good ultimate of materialism also, the worship of material things.

168. A wicked people always deserve a wicked king.

169. The rich have fences and walls and gates to keep out the thieves and the robbers and the criminals and the murderers, but the demons of Hell are able to pass over those gates and enter their homes and their hearts with fear and sickness and disease and worry and insanity and suffering and pain and death!

170. The fiendish, devilish economic System keeps Christians from serving God or gives them an excuse for not serving God and is built on the manufacture of the weapons of war and the idols of luxury and sends our boys to be cannon-fodder so some people can make money while most of the World starves; it robs the poor to feed the rich and is now tottering on the brink of bankruptcy.

171. When the white people of the World began to forget God and use their superior power to their own selfish advantage, exploiting the poor, the Lord took it away.

172. God has given riches to the World to show what they'd do with them. Therefore He's going to wipe them out because they've robbed the poor to stay wealthy instead of sharing the wealth.

173. The only way America can have plenty is with war. American economy, Western economy, Capitalist economy can thrive only on war.

174. When a nation demands more than they need, when they demand absolute excess and extravagant luxury--they have to rob the poor to get it, and to rob the poor to get it they have to wage war.

175. God is angry with the too-rich industrialists and selfish Capitalists who covet it all and want more than their rightful share and withhold from the poor and withhold the hire of the laborers that reap down their fields.

176. Does God say it's wrong to be rich? Not really, He just says watch out what it does to you. If you've got the right attitude, you can even be rich 'cause you're always sharing what you've got.

177. Capitalism is coming to the end of itself. It has overextended itself, it has lived beyond its income. It's living on borrowed money and borrowed time, and some day soon it's going to have to pay!

178. The wrong people are preaching the right message and the right people are preaching the wrong message. The Communists today are preaching sharing and the church is preaching selfishness.

179. Communism is more Christian than Capitalism in ethics and in behaviour and in their puritanical morality. The Russians today act more Christian than the Americans. In fact, in the Russians the Devil is copying this very system from Christianity. He's trying to show the World how you can have Christianity without God.

180. As long as the powers-that-be pretty generally and fairly well represent the laws of God, and its officers are the officers of His law, then God keeps them in power. But when they begin to be completely contrary to the laws of God and they go against the Lord and His people, for this many a great nation and empire has gone down the drain!

181. Governments are bold-faced liars, constantly telling lies to each other and to the World and lying to themselves and their people!

182. The Western World is crashing and crumbling financially, economically and is already totally bankrupt. It's just waiting for the faith of the people to fail before the bottom completely drops out.

183. The World today is lost, but they're going hell-bent, hell-fast to destruction, not willing to stop, not willing to wait, not willing to hesitate, not willing to stop and find out why or ask God to help them, just going willfully on their own way until pretty soon they're going to crash into the stone of destruction and judgement!

184. While the former savage parts of the World are now getting civilised, the formerly civilised parts are now going savage.

185. Governments print millions of dollars that they don't have any backing for whatsoever, and it's just as worthless as the ones that the criminal counterfeiters print.

186. The World is not going bankrupt, it's already bankrupt, but they're just trying their best to hide it!

187. The governments want to keep the people asleep, and they don't have too hard a time doing it because the people don't want to wake up! They like to be asleep, they don't want to know the Truth. They're just shutting their eyes hoping it will somehow go away, but it won't.

(See also No. H, L, 10, 65, 103, 105, 108, 149, 162, 205, 214A, 216, 219, 226, 230, 232, 239, 243, 245, 255, 256, 270, 272, 274, 282, 284, 288, 294, 310, 310B, 313B, 321, 327, 333, 342, 350, 358, 373, 393, 574, 596, 601, 634, 681, 733, 738, 741, 742, 867, 869, 908, 911, 918, 938, 961, 1053, 1059, 1192, 1193, 1223, 1226, 1227, 1241, 1242, 1243, 1244, 1245, 1263, 1283, 1326, 1340, 1342, 1538.)

188. 12:6 The tabernacles of robbers prosper, and they that provoke God are secure; into whose hand God bringeth abundantly.

189. 31:24,25,28 If I have made gold my hope, or have said to the fine gold, Thou art my confidence; If I rejoiced because my wealth was great, and because mine hand had gotten much. This also were an iniquity to be punished by the judge: for I should have denied the God that is above.

190. .37:35 I have seen the wicked in great power, and spreading himself like a green bay tree.

191. .49:11 Their inward thought is, that their houses shall continue for ever, and their dwelling places to all generations; they call their lands after their own names.

192. .49:16,17 Be not thou afraid when one is made rich, when the glory of his house is increased; For when he dieth he shall carry nothing away: his glory shall not descend after him.

193. .58:1,2 Do ye judge uprightly, O ye sons of men? Yea, in heart ye work wickedness; ye weigh the violence of your hands in the Earth.

194. .1:19 So are the ways of every one that is greedy of gain; which taketh away the life of the owners thereof.

195. .8:15,16 By Me kings reign, and princes decree justice. By Me princes rule, and nobles, even all the judges of the Earth.

196. .10:2 Treasures of wickedness profit nothing: but righteousness delivereth from death.

197. .11:4 Riches profit not in the day of wrath: but righteousness delivereth from death.

198. .16:8 Better is a little with righteousness than great revenues without right.

199. .21:6 The getting of treasures by a lying tongue is a vanity tossed to and fro of them that seek death.

200. .21:17 He that loveth pleasure shall be a poor man: he that loveth wine and oil shall not be rich.

201. .22:1 A good name is rather to be chosen than great riches, and loving favour rather than silver and gold.

202. .27:24 Riches are not for ever: and doth the crown endure to every generation?

203. .28:22 He that hasteth to be rich hath an evil eye, and considereth not that poverty shall come upon him.

204. .29:2 When the righteous are in authority, the people rejoice: but when the wicked beareth rule, the people mourn.

205. .2:11 Then I looked on all the works that my hands had wrought, and on the labour that I had laboured to do: and, behold, all was vanity and vexation of spirit, and there was no profit under the sun.

206. .5:10 He that loveth silver shall not be satisfied with silver; nor he that loveth abundance with increase: this is also vanity.

207. .5:12 The sleep of a labouring man is sweet, whether he eat little or much: but the abundance of the rich will not suffer him to sleep.

208. .5:15 As he came forth of his mother's womb, naked shall he return to go as he came, and shall take nothing of his labour, which he may carry away in his hand.

209. .6:7 All the labour of man is for his mouth, and yet the appetite is not filled.

210. .10:20 Curse not the king, no not in thy thought; and curse not the rich in thy bedchamber: for a bird of the air shall carry the voice, and that which hath wings shall tell a matter.

211. .6:13 From the least of them even unto the greatest of them every one is given to covetousness.

212. .8:4 They have set up kings, but not by Me: they have made princes, and I knew it not.

213. .2:12 Woe to him that buildeth the town with blood, and stablisheth a city by iniquity!

214. .1:6 Ye have sown much, and bring in little; ye eat, but ye have not enough; ye drink, but ye are not filled with drink; ye clothe you, but there is none warm; and he that earneth wages earneth wages to put it into a bag with holes.

215. .19:24 It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the Kingdom of God.

216. .4:19 And the cares of this World, and the deceitfulness of riches, and the lusts of other things entering in, choke the Word, and it becometh unfruitful.

217. .8:36,37 Or what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole World, and lose his own soul? Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?

218. .10:24,25 Jesus answereth again, and saith unto them, Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches to enter into the Kingdom of God! It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the Kingdom of God.

219. .1:53 He hath filled the hungry with good things; and the rich he hath sent empty away.

220. .9:25 For what is a man advantaged, if he gain the whole World, and lose himself, or be cast away? For whosoever shall be ashamed of Me and of My Words, of him shall the Son of man be ashamed, when He shall come in His Own glory, and in His Father's, and of the holy angels.

221. .12:15 And He said unto them, Take heed, and beware of covetousness: for a man's life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth.

222. .12:19-21 And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many years; take thine ease, eat, drink, and be merry. But God said unto him, Thou fool, this night thy soul shall be required of thee: then whose shall those things be, which thou hast provided? So is he that layeth up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God.

223. .19:10,11 Then said Pilate unto Him, speakest Thou not unto me? Knowest Thou not that I have power to crucify Thee, and have power to release Thee? Jesus answered, Thou couldst have no power at all against Me, except it were given thee from above: therefore he that delivered Me unto thee hath the greater sin.

224. .13:1 Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God.

225. .3:2 Set your affection on things above, not on things on the Earth.

226. **TI.2:1,2 I exhort therefore, that, first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks, be made for all men; For kings, and for all that are in authority; that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all Godliness and honesty.**

227. **TI.6:9,10 But they that will be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition. For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.**

228. .3:1 Put them in mind to be subject to principalities and powers, to obey magistrates, to be ready to every good work.

229. .5:3 Your gold and silver is cankered; and the rust of them shall be a witness against you, and shall eat your flesh as it were fire. Ye have heaped treasure together for the last days.

(See also JER.18:6-10.)



To loose the bands of wickedness, to undo the heavy burdens, and to let the oppressed go free, and that ye break every yoke (Isa.58:6).

1. Habit is a cable; you weave a thread of it everyday, and at last you cannot break it.
2. Cultivate good habits--the bad ones all grow wild.
3. The best throw with the dice is to throw them away.
4. Habit with some people is the test of truth, "it must be right: I've done it from my youth."
5. The toughest form of mountain climbing is getting out of a rut.
6. We keep having to have revolutions to get out of ruts and break old habits.
7. I just do what I feel like doing!--The trouble is, too many people have formed bad habits to where they don't feel like doing the right thing anymore.
8. In eating, a good habit is to quit when you still want more!
9. The chains of bad habit are too weak to be felt until they are too strong to be broken--except by the Lord.
10. To enjoy work, make it a habit.
11. Gambling is a sickness, a disease, an addiction, an insanity, and is always a loser in the long run.
12. Game-playing, such as chess and cards, is as addictive as gambling and alcohol and used as a tool of the Devil to waste time!
13. A craving for sweets is like a craving for drugs or drink or gambling.--It's something the Devil knows can absolutely destroy you!
14. Habits are at first cobwebs, then cables.

(See also No.78, 106, 353, 568, 805, 956, 1299, 1362.)



Happy is that people, that is in such a case: yea, happy is that people, whose God is the Lord (Ps.144:15).

1. God created you to enjoy the life He's given you, and to love and enjoy Him forever, and to try to help others to do the same!
2. The kind of people God wants are people that love Him and are happy in Him and love to sing and love and play and dance for the Lord and shout His praises and His salvation from the housetops!
3. Joy that isn't shared dies young.
4. I'm happy if you're happy, 'cuz that makes me happy too!
5. They say if you wanna be happy for two hours get drunk! If you wanna be happy for two weeks get married! But if you wanna be happy forever, get saved!
6. God wants you to live for Him as long as possible and as happy as possible, a good happy sample of the joy of the Lord, before some day you have to die for Him.
7. Our kind of love has got something to offer! It's happy, it's lively, it's dynamic, it's positive, it's powerful! It's not slow and sad and draggy and dreary drudgery.
8. We communicate joy to other people through our shining, happy, smiling faces and blithe spirits and bright glow of our personalities because of the Spirit of the Lord, because He's our personality and that's what wins the World to us!
9. If I never get any further than this, I've had a great time getting this far!
10. God made all the most important essential work in the World enjoyable and delightful and satisfying--eating, loving, sleeping and even our work for Him is a pleasure!
11. The Lord made life for us to enjoy, and I like to enjoy it to the fullest!
12. We're the most satisfied, happiest customers in the world, because we've all partaken of the best possible product!--Jesus!
13. You'll never appreciate Joy until you've known Sorrow!
14. You too can joy with others share
And heal the hearts to you laid bare
If you'll but pour the oil of Love
He'll give you from His Heart above.
15. The time to be happy is now,
And the place to be happy is here,
And the way to be happy is to make others happy
And we'll have a little Heaven right here!
16. Be cheerful!--Of all the things you wear, your expression is the most important.
17. Our religion, work and play make us happy. Very little makes us unhappy, except the fact that some other people are not happy.
18. The only way on Earth to multiply happiness is to divide it.
19. A sad world cannot be sweetened by sour religion.
20. Enjoy yourself!--It's later than you think!
21. When I gave up trying to be perfect I finally became happy.
22. Here are five keys to fulfillment: Obey our great God, dream great dreams, plan great plans, pray great prayers, claim great victories.
23. When a bit of sunshine hits you,

After passing of the rain
 When a fit of laughter gets you,
 And your spine is strong again,
 Don't forget to up and fling it
 At a soul that's feelin' blue,
 For the minute that you sling it,
 It's a boomerang to you!
 24. Happiness is thinking about others, not yourself!
 25. We have a religion full of love and joy and happiness!
 26. I'd rather be happy in Jesus
 Than sane as the Devil and bad.
 If it's madness of spirit that frees us,
 I'd rather be mad and be glad!
 27. Oh give me a world of madness
 If madness is to be glad!
 I'd rather be happy in madness
 Than only be sane and sad.
 28. Every new day is the happiest day of my life! Every day with Jesus is better than the day before!
 29. In the Spirit, in the Spirit
 All my life is like a song,
 In the Spirit, in the Spirit
 I am happy all day long.
 30. Find someone else to make happy, and then happiness will find you.
 31. Priorities: "Jesus, and Others, then You."--Spells JOY!
 32. "How happy and content art thou in the bosom of thy father."
 33. It is not in doing what you like, but in liking what you do that is the secret of happiness.
 34. The things we like are fun
 And far from ever being done!
 35. If I please the Lord, the Lord lets me do as I please!
 36. No man can be happy unless he feels his life is in some way important.
 37. Life is hard by the yard;
 By the inch life's a cinch!
 38. Happiness is not a station you arrive at, but a manner of travelling.
 39. Life lived just to satisfy yourself never satisfies anybody.
 40. Some cause happiness wherever they go; others whenever they go.
 41. Though you travel the World over to find the beautiful, you must carry it with you or you'll find it not.
 42. Happiness is a thing to be practiced, like a violin.
 43. Content lodges oftener in cottages than in palaces.
 44. The best cure for grief is action.
 45. Happiness is a rainbow in your heart.
 46. The hearts that share one Love, one Life, will always know true joy.
 47. Take a cup of kindness, mix it well with love.
 Add a lot of patience and faith in God above.
 Sprinkle very generously with joy and thanks and cheer,
 And you'll have lots of "angel food"
 To feast on all the year.
 48. The 10 basic things you need in order to be happy are: Love and understanding; change; recognition;
 appreciation; challenge; fulfillment or satisfaction; to feel accepted or belong; fellowship or companionship; a goal;
 and to be helpful to others. All of these we have in the Family.
 49. How can you be poor when you're rich in happiness and rich in love!
 50. To feel rich, count the things that you have that money can't buy.
 51. The ultimate wealth is happiness!
 52. This is one story that hasn't got any end, because it's eternal, forever! You can't say "and that's the
 happy ending" because that's just the happy beginning! But you can say, "And they lived happily ever after!"
 53. The Lord overrules your human desire and fulfills your heart's desire!

54. Our Garden of Eden is even better than the first one, because we've got more Eves, more Adams and more children too!

55. Gather the crumbs of happiness and they will make you a loaf of contentment.

56. Friendship doubles your joys and divides your grief.

57. The longer I serve Him, the sweeter He grows.

The more that I love Him, more love He bestows.

Each day is like Heaven, my heart overflows.

The longer I serve Him, the sweeter He grows.

58. Is your life bulging with excitement, virility and fruitfulness?!--Or is it dead, dull, sterile, frigid and barren, like most churches!

59. Happiness is a perfume you cannot pour on others without getting a few drops on yourself.

60. We've got more to be happy about than anybody else in the world! We have the happy love of Jesus and His Happy Holy Spirit!

61. Every person lives in one of two "tents"--either content or discontent.

62. There is no cosmetic for beauty like happiness.

63. God is the only One Who can give meaning to the Universe, purpose to the planets, love to your heart, peace to your mind, health to your body, rest to your spirit, happiness to your life and joy to your soul!

64. God's a pretty smart Father, and He knows that the more He loves you and the happier you are, the more you'll love Him and the more obedient you'll be out of pure love!

65. Joy is the flag which flies from the castle of the heart when the King is in residence there.

66. If you put Him first, love and worship Him above all and thank Him for all these things He's given you, and you enjoy them, find great pleasure and pleasantness in them, but not to the point that they come first before the Lord or exclude God and His love and worship, then it is not a sin to enjoy life and sex and food and sensual pleasures which God has created for your senses to enjoy.

67. In some religions the sadder you are, the more religious you are. But we consider that you're not very spiritual unless you're happy, victorious and joyful.

(See also No.159, 194, 250, 584, 686, 724, 731, 743, 802, 958, 1035, 1259, 1393, 1456.)

68. .12:18b And thou shalt rejoice before the Lord thy God in all that thou puttest thine hands unto.

69. **CH.9:7 Happy are thy men, and happy are these thy servants, which stand continually before thee, and hear thy wisdom.**

70. **.8:10b For the joy of the Lord is your strength.**

71. **.12:43b God had made them rejoice with great joy: the wives also and the children rejoiced: so that the joy of Jerusalem was heard even afar off.**

72. **.41:22** Sorrow is turned into joy before Him.

73. **PSA.5:11** But let all those that put their trust in Thee rejoice: let them ever shout for joy, because Thou defendest them: let them also that love Thy Name be joyful in Thee.

74. **PSA.16:11 Thou wilt shew me the path of life: in Thy presence is fulness of joy; at Thy right hand there are pleasures for evermore.**

75. **PSA.19:8** The statutes of the Lord are right, rejoicing the heart: the commandment of the Lord is pure, enlightening the eyes.

76. **PSA.21:1** The king shall joy in Thy strength, O Lord; and in Thy Salvation how greatly shall he rejoice!

77. .32:11 Be glad in the Lord, and rejoice, ye righteous: and shout for joy, all ye that are upright in heart.

78. .65:13b They shout for joy, they also sing.

79. **PSA.70:4** Let all those that seek Thee rejoice and be glad in Thee: and let such as love Thy Salvation say continually, Let God be magnified.

80. .89:15 Blessed is the people that know the joyful sound: they shall walk, O Lord, in the light of Thy countenance.

81. .100:1,2 Make a joyful noise unto the Lord, all ye lands. Serve the Lord with gladness: come before His presence with singing.

82. .105:43 And He brought forth His people with joy, and His chosen with gladness.

83. .119:111 Thy testimonies have I taken as an heritage for ever: for they are the rejoicing of my heart.

84. .119:162 I rejoice at Thy Word, as one that findeth great spoil.

85. **PSA.128:2** For thou shalt eat the labour of thine hands: happy shalt thou be, and it shall be well with thee.

86. **PSA.144:15** Happy is that people, that is in such a case: yea, happy is that people, whose God is the Lord.

87. **PSA.146:5** Happy is he that hath the God of Jacob for his help, whose hope is in the Lord his God.

88. **ISA.12:3** Therefore with joy shall ye draw water out of the wells of Salvation.

89. .35:10 And the ransomed of the Lord shall return, and come to Zion with songs and everlasting joy upon their heads: they shall obtain joy and gladness, and sorrow and sighing shall flee away.

90. .55:12 For ye shall go out with joy, and be led forth with peace: the mountains and the hills shall break forth before you into singing, and all the trees of the field shall clap their hands.

91. .61:10a I will greatly rejoice in the Lord, my soul shall be joyful in my God.

92. **ISA.65:18** But be ye glad and rejoice for ever in that which I create; for, behold, I create Jerusalem a rejoicing, and her people a joy.

93. .3:18 Yet I will rejoice in the Lord, I will joy in the God of my Salvation.

94. .1:46,47 And Mary said, My soul doth magnify the Lord, And my spirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour.

95. .2:10,11 And the angel said unto them, Fear not; for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people. For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord.

96. .10:20 Notwithstanding in this rejoice not, that the spirits are subject unto you; but rather rejoice, because your names are written in Heaven.

97. **JOH.15:10,11** If ye keep My commandments, ye shall abide in My love; even as I have kept My Father's commandments, and abide in His love. These things have I spoken unto you, that My joy might remain in you, and that your joy might be full.

98. **JOH.16:22** And ye now therefore have sorrow; but I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoice, and your joy no man taketh from you.

99. **ACT.13:52** And the disciples were filled with joy, and with the Holy Ghost.

100. .14:17 For the Kingdom of God is not meat and drink; but righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost.

101. .15:13 Now the God of hope fill you with all joy and peace in believing, that ye may abound in hope, through the power of the Holy Ghost.

102. **CO.6:10a** As sorrowful, yet alway rejoicing.

103. .4:4 Rejoice in the Lord alway: and again I say, Rejoice.

104. **PHI.4:11,12** Not that I speak in respect of want: for I have learned, in whatsoever state I am, therewith to be content. I know both how to be abased, and I know how to abound: every where and in all things I am instructed both to be full and to be hungry, both to abound and to suffer need.

105. **TH.2:19,20** For what is our hope, or joy, or crown of rejoicing? Are not even ye in the presence of our Lord Jesus Christ at His coming? For ye are our glory and joy.

106. **1TI.6:6-8** Godliness with contentment is great gain. For we brought nothing into this World, and it is certain we can carry nothing out. And having food and raiment let us be therewith content.

107. .13:5 Be content with such things as ye have: for He hath said, I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee.

108. **PE.1:8** Whom having not seen, ye love; in Whom, though now ye see Him not, yet believing, ye rejoice with joy unspeakable and full of glory.

109. **JO.1:4** And these things write we unto you, that your joy may be full.

(See also **PSA.144:12-15.**)



Bless the Lord, O my soul, and forget not all His benefits: Who forgiveth all thine iniquities; Who healeth all thy diseases (Psa.103:2-3).

[HomeARC Note (03/04): *The Charter* details the “Right of Mobility” for all Family members, and Family beliefs regarding faith healing and getting outside medical attention, especially in regards to children.]

1. If God wants to heal you, He doesn't need any help, but if He doesn't want to heal you, nothing will help.
2. God heals and the doctor takes the fee.
3. Doctors are men who prescribe medicines of which they know little, to cure diseases of which they know less, in human beings of whom they know nothing.
4. You don't have to resign yourself that your problems are incurable and just put up with them, tolerate them like the Devil, but you can get the victory!
5. Only those with great faith like Job, when everything goes wrong and seems contrary to the Word and the usual--only those with great faith can say with Job, "Even though it seems like God is breaking His Own Word with me--even though it seems like God has failed me--even though God kills me contrary to all His promises, I'll still trust Him." (Job.13:15)
6. What could be more healing than the Word? (Psa.107:20)
7. Anointing with oil is just a symbol--it's not that the oil does anything or has any peculiar power, but it's just to fulfil what the Scripture says!--It's a symbol of the Holy Spirit.
8. Jesus made us, so He can fix us!
9. People have not lost faith; they have just transferred it from God to the medical profession.
10. Sometimes things happen just to keep you close to the Lord--sickness, trouble, problems. Sometimes they happen to drive you closer to each other. Sometimes they happen to keep you humble. Sometimes they happen to make you pray, all kinds of reasons for having troubles. Even troubles and tribulations are good for us. (Rom.8:28)
11. Once God's forgiven you and healed you, then you'd better be sure you stick to the limits and the regulations and the rules and His will and whatever conditions He's laid down.
12. Once God's given you faith for healing, He expects you to use it.
13. Healing is a special blessing, a priceless privilege, which, unlike salvation, He can take away if you don't keep trusting Him for it and giving Him all the glory.
14. We'd have more miracles of healing if we'd be faithful and simply believe, trust God and pray for people as we should!
15. "He healeth all our diseases."--No exceptions there. He can heal anything!
16. Expect miracles!--And in Jesus' name you'll get them!
17. If He's God at all, He's a God of miracles! If He can create the Universe, He can fix it! If He can make your body, He can repair it!
18. God has a natural remedy for everything, and you'll always find it in the very area of the World where the sickness is.
19. I have never gotten well lying in bed! (Unless I needed the rest and quiet time to pray and hear from the Lord.) God always required me to take a step of faith! It's better to die trying than to die lying! You have to make a conscious effort to manifest faith.

20. The Lord's healing is a little touch of resurrection life, a little bit of Heaven, a little bit of redemption of the body.

21. The System says: "I will lift up mine eyes unto the medicine chest and the pill from whence cometh my help, and to the scientist who hath created all things."

22. Not all Christians have the gift of healing, but healing is available to all Christians!

23. When we have learned the lesson God is trying to teach us, or the conditions are ready for the result that God wants to bring, He says, "rather let it be healed." (Heb.12:13) God prefers to heal--if we can be trusted with it and learn what He is trying to show us.

24. A "thorn in the flesh" is a physical affliction--not a sinful temptation!--"A messenger of Satan"--perhaps even an annoying demon! (2Cor.12:7)

25. God often deals with people physically according to their spiritual handicap or problem.

26. When He has to go to the extreme of allowing your child to be afflicted to touch your heart, you're pretty hardhearted, and I think sometimes pretty self-righteous.

27. I don't think any sickness is normal for a Christian. If you get one it's usually for a reason, to teach you something or because of your own sins. The norm is to be healed, the norm is to be delivered!

28. Healings are not necessarily permanent unless you obey!

29. If we would obey more and keep cleaner and eat the right things and live right, we wouldn't have to be healed so often.

30. I've never known it to fail that when you preach healing and you start attacking the Devil on that subject, he really hates it and the Lord allows you to be tested, too.

31. If He can create the baby, He certainly can straighten the feet. The One who made him can certainly fix him!

32. There are no exceptions: God can heal anything!

33. "Many are the afflictions of the righteous" (Ps.34:19)--but most of them are very little ones and very minor and just enough to keep us close to the Lord.

34. "Many are the afflictions of the righteous"--that's what keeps them so righteous, their many afflictions!

35. Stand on God's Word

And not your feelings

This is the secret

Of faith and healing.

36. God doesn't like to share the glory with the doctor!

37. The medicine will either cure you or it'll most likely prove that it can't--and that you'll have to trust the Lord!

38. Most people would rather take the pill than the pilgrimage of faith!

39. If you're not willing to pay the price God requires for healing, He won't heal you! Only the obedient get healing. It's a reward for the obedient. Health is a special blessing of God. You can only demand it if you're obedient. But if you're disobedient you can't demand anything!

40. You have to let your body know you want to live! "The spirit of a man sustaineth him, but a wounded spirit who can bear!" (Pr.18:14)

41. All that most people need who are upset or disturbed mentally or spiritually, is love!

42. If every time you have an affliction you quit serving God, you'll be a perpetual quitter!

43. You've got to believe and obey the Lord, even if He never heals you!

44. If you go back, you'll make God sick! But if you go on even if you're sick, you'll make God happy.

45. One of the greatest proofs of God's existence is answers to prayer, miracles and especially healing.

46. Prayer is not only cheaper than medicine, but surer too!

47. Pain is a touch of Hell, healing is a touch of Heaven.

48. If God doesn't want me fixed, nobody on Earth can do it! If He does want me fixed, He'll do it by Himself.

49. In some cases people are sick because they have serious spiritual problems, even demonic, and they need to be delivered immediately by urgent prayer before the Devil gets them down any further.

50. If you're sick it's your business to tell the church and ask for prayer:

1) It's a sign of your dependence on the Lord.

2) It's a sign you have faith in prayer.

3) To keep you humble.

4) It's necessary to let others know in order that they can share your burden and so fulfil the law of Christ.

5) It's a testimony when the Lord answers. (Ja.5:14)

51. Jesus healed everybody, saved or unsaved, as long as they had enough faith to believe on Him. If they could believe Him that much for their healing, then their faith was increased at this sign and they could believe Him a little more for their Salvation.

52. Many run to medicine because they're running away from God's chastening.

53. One of the greatest of healing factors is faith, to know that God loves you and cares for you and is going to take care of you no matter what happens. Faith eliminates one of the greatest causes of disease and ill health, and that's fear and tension.

54. Your physical state of health is definitely largely dependent on your mental state of health, and your mental health is very largely dependent on your spiritual condition, because both love and faith cast out all fear.

55. God wants to test your faith and willingness to obey before He's going to heal you, and He wants to see if you'll believe and obey Him even if you think you may never get healed! What's your healing got to do with faith and obedience? Nothing! But your faith and obedience have a lot to do with your healing!

56. If you do not obey and stay in God's Will and continually give Him the glory for your healing and continue to trust Him for it, He may let your affliction come back, because of your ingratitude and disobedience.

57. The kind of faith that gets results is "though He slay me, yet will I trust Him!" (Job.13:15)

58. If you're going to get healing, you have to testify to it; you have to not only believe it, but also confess it! It's a little like Salvation--you can't be saved without confessing Christ.

59. His body was broken for us for the healing of our bodies, His blood was shed for the salvation of our spirits. There is salvation both for the body and for the spirit.

60. "Is any sick among you? Let him call for the elders of the church; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord. And the prayer of faith shall save the sick and the Lord shall raise him up; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him." (Ja.5:14-15)

61. Hail the Heaven-born Prince of Peace!

Hail the Son of Righteousness!

Light and life to all He brings,

Risen with healing in His wings!

62. There are some more conditions to healing: To be humble, and really seek the Lord and turn from our wicked ways: Anything that we are doing that's wrong or out of His will or foolish or overdoing or abusing our bodies in any way.

63. The first thing that comes to me always even now when I get sick is, "Have I done something wrong?--Why is this happening?" And I pray accordingly.

64. The only reason we don't have more miracles is that we just don't believe God as we should and don't challenge the Enemy, rebuke that Devil and expect God to answer!

65. Desperate prayer is needed for stubborn cases of illness, and sometimes, "This kind goeth not out save by fasting and prayer." Correct the spiritual problems first as well as the food, sex, cleanliness and other living conditions, then trust God utterly in prayer and obedience and you're bound to get results.

66. You have to literally put God on the spot. He likes it. He likes you to challenge Him to keep His Word. "Now, here, God, I've obeyed You. I've put myself on a limb and sawed it off. Now it's up to You to take care of me. If You want to heal me, You don't need any help."

67. The Lord definitely has good forces within your body which fight the evil forces!

68. If you take care of your health as well as you can, but you still can't obtain a good diet or you can't get enough sleep, then of course God is not limited by those things. He's just as able to heal you or keep you healthy in spite of it.

69. There are a lot of common natural herbal medicines and foods that God has created as remedies for various illnesses for those who don't know the Lord's healing or who are too weak in faith to trust Him to do it in a completely miraculous supernatural way. "He that is weak eateth herbs." (Ro.14:2) On the other hand, if you pray for healing and God shows you or lays on your heart a food or an herb to take as a remedy, that could be considered part of His supernatural answer if you give Him the glory for it.

70. Sometimes your afflictions are not your fault and are permitted as a test of your faith to see if you'll still trust the Lord in the midst of them, and then if you'll trust the Lord for your healing, and frequently that others may see your healing and glorify God. But often afflictions are your fault as a chastisement to get you to correct the problem. If so, pray and ask the Lord to forgive and deliver and cleanse and purify and help you make things right, and usually He will then heal.

71. It's all in what you put your faith in. If you eat certain things because it's part of caring for your body in obedience to the Word, then you're putting your faith in the Word, not the food. But if you eat foods trusting more in

them to keep you healthy or make you healthy than in God to keep or make you healthy, then you're not trusting God.

72. "Many are the afflictions of the righteous, but the Lord delivereth him out of them all." (Ps.34:19)--A double L, all--not just some or a few or most or many, but all, all of them!

73. Why should He honour you with healing when you don't honour Him with faith? If you don't trust Him till you die, then you don't trust Him!

74. If you're going to trust the doctor, go the limit! Get the best doctor, hospital, medicine and everything else you can get! But if you're going to put yourself in the hands of the Lord, He doesn't need anyone!

75. If the Lord wants to take me, doctors and medicine can't stop Him! If He wants to heal me, He can fix me by Himself.

76. If you get healed while you're taking medication, then you're going to give the medication the glory. And if you don't, then everybody else will, because they'll know you were taking the medication. God won't get the glory for it.

77. If God wants to heal you, He's going to heal you only if you'll depend utterly on Him and give Him utterly the glory!--He won't heal you as long as you're leaning on the doctor crutch or any crutch and trusting God halfway and the doctors the other half!

78. There's no halfway with God! He'll have no other gods before Him! (Exo.20:3.) If God doesn't want to heal you, well, you'll just have to accept that and figure the Lord wants to take you Home, and the quicker the better!--Unless He just wants you to continue suffering to keep you humble or close to Him.

79. Trust God utterly and step out on a limb and put God on the spot! "Now Lord, I'm trusting You and I've left home and gone to the mission field and I'm doing my best for You, now You've got to do it! And either You do it or it's not going to get done. Because I'm not going to trust anybody else, certainly not the Devil and his methods!"

80. "Cast thyself on the Lord and He shall sustain thee!" (Ps.55:22.) But leaning on the Lord on one side and the doctor on the other is not going to do it!--It never has for me or anybody I know that really trusted God for healing, to just halfway trust the doctors and halfway trust the Lord.

81. You're not going to prove to anybody else that it was the Lord alone that healed you as long as you're going to the doctors and getting shots and medicines and pills or any kind of treatment! There's always going to be doubt even in your own mind as to whether it was the Lord that healed you or the treatment. The Lord just will not share His glory with another! (Isa.42:8.) "I will have no other gods before Me! I the Lord thy God am a jealous God!" (Exo.20:3,5.)--And He simply will not share His glory with somebody else or something else, much less a pill or a shot or a treatment or any doctor!

82. For anyone who knows as much about healing as we do, God expects us and He requires us to trust Him utterly and let Him do it!--Alone!

83. Don't ever let them carry me off to some doctor or some hospital! I'd rather die in the hands of the Lord than die in the hands of the doctor!

84. As little as doctors know and as experimental as most medicines and pills and treatments and shots are, I'd sooner trust the Lord! He knows what's wrong! He is able to heal it! They don't know what's wrong and don't know how to heal it! They're just playing around and experimenting like little boys with toys and constantly misdiagnosing cases.

85. Dr. Koger said, "If you knew doctors like I do, you'd never go near one or take a single prescription from them! It's nothing but experimentation! Most of the time they don't know what's wrong with you either and they just try this and try that and charge you for it to make money off it!"

86. The main reason doctors recommend Caesarians is because it's surgery and they make thousands of dollars on it, a lot more money on it than natural childbirth! We've had plenty of girls who refused the Caesarian and insisted on trusting the Lord and came through with flying colours! We've got one girl who had a Caesarian and nearly died of it! She was in a coma for quite some time.

87. I'll tell you, if you know the Lord and His healing and about trusting God by faith for your body, God will not let any kind of treatment, doctors, pills, shots or hospitals help you! That sort of thing is for the poor sin-sick unbelieving World who have no other recourse, who don't even know the Lord or His healing. But as long as you know the Lord and His healing, He holds you responsible to trust Him for it and cast yourself utterly on the Lord! Then if He wants you to die, you'll know it was His will and not some doctor or treatment that killed you. And if He wants you to live, He'll heal you and you'll know it was the Lord and not the treatment!

88. I have no faith for the healing of people who go to the doctor and look to the pills and the treatments and the shots and the natural or unnatural or normal or abnormal, methods or whatever they want to call it, anything else but the Lord!

89. God likes you to throw yourself utterly on Him and trust Him completely! If you die you'll know it was God's will that you died and not the treatment that caused it. If He wants you to live, than you'll know it was the Lord and you'll give Him all the glory and so will everybody else--and not the treatment!

90. I can't remember a thing doctors ever gave me or did for me that did me any good or that healed me. It reminds me of the old joke about a bad cold: With medication you can get rid of it in about two weeks, or with just plain rest and proper diet, etc., you can get rid of it in about 14 days! So who knows what healed you?

91. If you cast yourself utterly on the Lord, then God has got to heal you, if He wants to heal you. And for God's sake, if He doesn't want to heal you, why would you want to be healed? The quicker you go to the Heavenly City the better, and be rid of all the pain and trouble you're going through here!

92. I'd rather die at home in bed trusting God than go to the damn hospitals full of doctors who don't even know what they're doing!

93. There are mechanical operations for which doctors and hospitals are necessary, purely mechanical things which they know how to do just like working on a car!--Like setting a broken bone or sewing up a cut or removing a splinter or a bullet or helping you have a baby.

94. But on most other things, like serious internal maladies, they more often than not just experiment around with all that chemical poison and use you as a guinea pig for a bunch of drugs and pills and other junk when they don't even know what's wrong with you!--And if they do, they don't know how to heal it! They don't know what they're doing and neither do you! And often they do more damage than good, and very rarely much good.

95. God knows what's wrong with you!--First of all, what's wrong with you spiritually and what He's dealing with you about and what He's trying to teach you, what He's trying to tell you through your sickness!

96. If you're not sure whether God wants to heal you, why are you taking all those medicines? Maybe you're going against the will of God! One way to find out is just quit the doctor and the medicine.

97. You may be taking medication against the will of God! Maybe He doesn't want to heal you. Maybe He's trying to take you Home to Heaven, and here you're fighting it like mad with this doctor and all these medicines!

98. If I died, I'd rather know that it was the Lord that killed me than wonder if it was the doctor that did it! Well, if you die, you'll know!

99. If you trust Him utterly, He'll take care of you, and if He doesn't take care of you, then He is worse than an infidel! (1Ti.5:8.)

100. As long as you're leaning partly on God and partly on the medicine, He's not going to have anything to do with it! He doesn't care to share His glory with some doctor and some treatment and some pills! If He's going to heal you, He wants all the credit for it and all the glory for it. He wants the World to know and the Family to know that it was He who healed you and nothing else!--God plus Faith plus Nothing!

101. Put yourself into the hands of the Lord, trust Him utterly, then He's gotta heal you if He wants to! And then if He does, He'll get all the credit, all the glory and all the praise and you'll have only Him to thank for it and not share the thanks with the doctor! And if He doesn't want to heal you, then taking all those medicines and shots and pills and treatments are against the will of God! If He wants you to stay sick or afflicted or even die, it's better to let Him have His way than to fight it. If you believe it's the will of God for you to live and serve the Lord and even be healed, then why don't you trust the Lord? If He wants to heal you, He'll heal you! If He doesn't want to, nobody and nothing can heal you!

102. Why not trust God?--But trusting God means trusting Him utterly and nothing and nobody else!--Just God!--Then He'll get all the credit and all the thanks and all the praise! You'll know it was God and so will everybody else, and they'll all thank the Lord and know it wasn't any treatment or doctors or pills or therapy or that anything else had any share in it whatsoever! If God's going to heal you, He wants to get all the credit and all the glory and do all the healing, so you'll give Him all the thanks and you'll know it was God!

103. You're either trusting God or you're not! You're either trusting God or you're trusting the medicine! You cannot do both if you're going to expect God to heal you.

104. You're not trusting God utterly as long as you're leaning on something else, looking around for something for God to start on, a little bit of something to help God out!

105. What makes you think God has to have something to start on?--That you've gotta help God out somehow by supplying Him with some kind of means to start on, like a medicine or a doctor!

106. Why don't you just trust to the Lord and forget all that other junk? You don't know that the other stuff can heal you, but you know that God can heal you if you trust the Lord at all! And you know He can heal you without it, so why bother with it?

107. Why don't you trust the One Who made you? Nobody knows the product like the Manufacturer! Send yourself back to the Manufacturer and let Him fix you! He's got all the parts and everything you need, and He's the

only One that really knows you and how to do it. Any other kind of mechanic is just fooling around and experimenting.

108. So why not try God and God alone?--Utterly, completely, nothing else--so God'll get the glory, if and when you're healed! And then if you're not healed or you die, at least you'll know it was the will of God and you weren't fighting it! But if it's God's will for you to live and for Him to heal you, then He certainly doesn't need any help!--Except for you to take care of you body, live, eat, sleep and exercise right and not abuse it and do whatever led to the thing in the first place. You can't expect God to heal you when you're abusing your body.--And with all that medicine, pills and shots, you're probably abusing your body! Because what do doctors know about your body?--More than God? And what do doctors know about healing it or what's going to heal it?--More than God?--That's ridiculous!

109. I'd sooner trust the Lord any day than medicine men and their medicines. "He that putteth his trust in the Lord shall never be put to shame, but the fear of man bringeth a snare!" (Pro.29:25.)

110. God is a jealous God and He will not share His glory with another, much less some pill! I think it makes Him angry when His children who know about healing turn not to Him but to the physician!--Angry enough to let them die because they trusted the physician instead of Him!--Like He did old King Asa who was diseased in his feet and "turned not to the Lord but unto the physicians and died." (2Chron.16:12,13) You'd better watch out you don't do the same thing! You can't turn to both.

111. You'd better turn utterly to the Lord and forget the physician and all his treatments, therapy, pills, shots and junk, and trust God utterly! He not only can heal you, but it's His will to heal you, or He wouldn't have put all those Scriptures in His Word on healing! He wants to heal you and He certainly wants you to serve Him, but He does not want to give the glory or credit to anything or anybody else. He wants you to trust Him and Him alone, so you'll thank Him and Him alone for it, and He'll not share His glory with another!

112. God is bound to answer prayer, He's bound to heal you, He's bound to keep His promises, He's bound to keep His Word if you absolutely throw yourself on the Lord and trust Him utterly, obey Him utterly and please Him utterly!

113. When it comes to healing, let me tell you, your best is to call on the Lord and depend on the Lord utterly, because there's obviously nothing you can do! You've found out that there's nothing you can do and there's nothing the doctors can do, and like the old lady in the Bible, you've "suffered many things of many physicians and are not better!" (Mk.5:26.) So it's time for you to wake up to the fact that only God can heal you, and to cast all the rest aside and cast yourself utterly on the Lord and trust Him entirely, completely, utterly!

114. "Christ is greater than any cancer!" Christ is also greater than any doctors or medicines or so-called natural remedies, so you'd better put your faith in the Lord and do it quick or you may be a goner! It's too late for you to depend on anything but the Lord, and you'd better do it quick!

115. If you know the Lord and you know what you're supposed to do, the Lord's not going to let you get away with anything else! Some ignorant benighted sinners who don't know the Lord and don't know any better, God in His mercy might let the doctors help, but it's too late for you! You'd better trust God quick before He gets mad and takes you!

116. If God is dealing with me when I'm sick, I know I've got to get things right with the Lord and obey the Lord and trust utterly in Him, or nothing's going to heal me!

117. To depend on medicines and doctors and treatments and therapy is depending on your own works and your own self-righteousness to heal you, instead of totally utterly depending on the Lord by grace through faith. You get healing the same way you do salvation, by grace through faith! You're not only saved but you're also healed by grace through faith, and that not of yourself! It is a gift of God, not of works, lest any man should boast.--Of any doctor or any medicines! (Eph.2:8,9)

118. You get healing the same way as you do salvation, by utterly trusting God for it and not anything else!-- Grace plus Faith plus Nothing!

119. The Lord in His mercy gives doctors and medicines and hospitals to the World for their care, but Christians who know about healing shouldn't need them.

120. My Mother was all for going to the doctor to get a diagnosis to try to find out what you had so you'd be able to testify what the Lord healed you from, but not with the faith that the doctor or his medicine can cure you.

121. Going to doctors and taking medicines and pills and shots and treatment and therapy is not normal and not God's way! It's abnormal and it's not faith in God. That's the most unusual thing, and usually only as a last resort to find out what's wrong with you if you can't figure out any other way, and half the time they don't know either, so what's the use of going?

122. If the Lord doesn't deliver me of this affliction, then He must want me to have it for some reason.-- Maybe so I'll be extra careful and really pray and stay close to the Lord to survive and depend on the Lord for every breath, every bite, every move! Afflictions really keep you close to the Lord!

123. Modern civilised man is as much at the mercy of the medicine man as he ever was, he has just as much faith in him and his potions as they did in the superstitious potions of the savage medicine man!

124. If you have to know what's wrong, The Lord can show you what's wrong! You don't have to go to the doctor to find out.

125. Sometimes He has to show you what is wrong so you can stop doing whatever is causing it, but other times when it's something beyond your control that you can't do anything to correct, the Lord doesn't need to show you, because He just wants you to have faith that He'll heal you.

126. Trusting God for your healing keeps you close to the Lord, but trusting the doctor for healing keeps you close to the doctor!--And broke!

127. If the Lord doesn't deliver you from your affliction, then it must be His will for you to have it just to keep you close to Him and keep you dependent on Him! But if the affliction only keeps you close to the doctor and dependent on his medicine, that's no good! You're not getting the point nor profiting from the Lord's therapy. You're not learning the lesson. You're not responding to God's treatment to keep you close to Him, dependent on Him utterly!

128. If there is a choice between the two, I'd sooner trust the Lord any day! It's a lot safer and cheaper and surer and does you a lot more good in every way!

129. He's never failed me all these years--why should He fail me now? Or why should I fail Him now? I feel like the old Armenian when the Turks were ready to behead him, when they told him if he'd deny his faith in Christ they'd let him live. He said, "Well, I've known Jesus all these years and He's never failed me, why should I fail Him now?!"--And he died for his faith!

130. If the Lord knows at the first little "Boo!" you're going to stop trusting Him, then why should He do anything for you? He likes gold faith that goes through the fire, that's real faith! But if He knows that the next time the Devil says "Boo!" you're going to quit trusting Him, then why should He heal you?

131. When you're sick you need lots of rest and extra good nourishment, which gives the Lord a chance to repair your body and gives you a chance for lots of time with Him and His Word.

132. When you're sick you should do whatever you feel like doing! If you feel like lying in bed, you should lie in bed until you feel like trying. Keep lyin' till you feel like tryin'! But there has to come a time when you've got to get up and try.

133. If we're going to start trusting the Lord, we might as well start trusting right now.

134. It sometimes may look like we don't have the faith and we tend to get sort of defeated by not being able to see an immediate response or answer to our prayer, but the Lord doesn't always just zap people immediately back to complete health. If that were true, they'd miss a lot of lessons, and a lot of times they'd miss what God's trying to show or tell them.

(See also No. M, 87, 313, 330C, 353, 569, 599, 717, 737, 878, 969, 1112, 1113, 1135, 1139, 1236, 1249, 1315, 1386, 1493, 1565, that Never Run Dry, The Hem of His Garment.)

135. .15:26 If thou wilt diligently hearken to the voice of the Lord thy God, and wilt do that which is right in His sight, and wilt give ear to His commandments, and keep all His statutes, I will put none of these diseases upon thee, which I have brought upon the Egyptians: for I am the Lord that health thee.

136. .32:39 See now that I, even I, am He, and there is no god with Me: I kill, and I make alive; I wound, and I heal: neither is there any that can deliver out of My hand.

137. **KI.17:21,22 And he stretched himself upon the child three times, and cried unto the Lord, and said O Lord my God, I pray Thee, let this child's soul come into him again. And the Lord heard the voice of Elijah; and the soul of the child came into him again, and he revived. (See 1Ki.17:17-23.)**

138. **KI.4:34,35 And he went up, and lay upon the child, and put his mouth upon his mouth, and his eyes upon his eyes, and his hands upon his hands: and he stretched himself upon the child; and the flesh of the child waxed warm. Then he returned, and walked in the house to and fro; and went up, and stretched himself upon him: and the child sneezed seven times, and the child opened his eyes. (See 2Ki.4:18-37.)**

139. **KI.5:14 Then went he (Naaman) down, and dipped himself seven times in Jordan, according to the saying to the man of God: and his flesh came again like unto the flesh of a little child, and he was clean.**

140. **KI.20:5b I have heard thy prayer, I have seen thy tears: behold, I will heal thee.**

141. **.6:2 Have mercy upon me, O Lord; for I am weak: O Lord, heal me; for my bones are vexed.**

142. .22:24 For He hath not despised nor abhorred the affliction of the afflicted; neither hath He hid His face from him; but when he cried unto Him, He heard.

143. .30:2 O Lord my God, I cried unto Thee, and Thou hast healed me.

144. .34:19 Many are the afflictions of the righteous: but the Lord delivereth him out of them all.

145. .41:4 Lord, be merciful unto me; heal my soul; for I have sinned against Thee.

146. .103:3 Who forgiveth all thine iniquities; Who healeth all thy diseases.

147. .107:20 He sent His Word, and healed them, and delivered them from their destructions.

148. .18:14 The spirit of a man will sustain his infirmity; but a wounded spirit who can bear?

149. .40:29 He giveth power to the faint; and to them that have no might He increaseth strength.

150. .53:5 But He was wounded for our transgressions, He was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon Him; and with His stripes we are healed.

151. .59:1 Behold, the Lord's hand is not shortened, that is cannot save; neither His ear heavy, that it cannot hear.

152. .30:17a For I will restore health unto thee, and I will heal thee of thy wounds, saith the Lord.

153. .32:27 Behold, I am the Lord, the God of all flesh: is there any thing too hard for Me?

154. .33:6 I will bring it health and cure, and I will cure them, and will reveal unto them the abundance of peace and truth.

155. .34:16 I will seek that which was lost, and bring again that which was driven away, and will bind up that which was broken, and will strengthen that which was sick.

156. .4:2a Unto you that fear My Name shall the Sun of righteousness arise with healing in His wings.

157. .4:23,24 And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the Gospel of the Kingdom, and healing all manner of sickness and all manner of disease among the people. And His fame went throughout all Syria: and they brought unto Him all sick people that were taken with diverse diseases and torments, and those which were possessed with devils, and those which were lunatic, and those that had the palsy; and He healed them.

158. .8:2b,3 Lord, if Thou wilt, Thou canst make me clean. And Jesus put forth His hand, and touched him, saying, I will; be thou clean. And immediately his leprosy was cleansed.

159. .8:13 And Jesus said unto the centurion, Go thy way; and as thou hast believed, so be it done unto thee. And his servant was healed in the selfsame hour.

160. .8:14,15 And when Jesus was come into Peter's house, He saw his wife's mother laid, and sick of a fever. And He touched her hand, and the fever left her: and she arose, and ministered unto them.

161. .9:2,6 And, behold, they brought to Him a man sick of the palsy, lying on a bed: and Jesus seeing their faith said unto the sick of the palsy; Son, be of good cheer; thy sins be forgiven thee. But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on Earth to forgive sins, (then saith He to the sick of the palsy,) Arise, take up thy bed, and go unto thine house.

162. .9:22,29 But Jesus turned him about, and when He saw her, He said, Daughter, be of good comfort; thy faith hath made thee whole. Then touched He their eyes, saying, According to your faith be it unto you.

163. .9:35 And Jesus went about all the cities and villages, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the Gospel of the Kingdom, and healing every sickness and every disease among the people.

164. .10:8 Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils: freely ye have received, freely give.

165. .12:13 Then saith He to the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched it forth; and it was restored whole, like as the other.

166. MAT.12:22 Then was brought unto Him one possessed with a devil, blind, and dumb: and He healed him, insomuch that the blind and dumb both spake and saw.

167. .15:28 Then Jesus answered and said unto her, O woman, great is thy faith: be it unto thee even as thou wilt. And her daughter was made whole from that very hour.

168. .15:30 And great multitudes came unto Him, having with them those that were lame, blind, dumb, maimed, and many others, and cast them down at Jesus' feet; and He healed them.

169. .17:18 And Jesus rebuked the Devil; and he departed out of him: and the child was cured from that very hour.

170. .19:2 And great multitudes followed Him; and He healed them there.

171. .20:34 So Jesus had compassion on them, and touched their eyes: and immediately their eyes received sight, and they followed Him.

172. .1:25,26 And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him. And when the unclean spirit had torn him, and cried with a loud voice, he came out of him.

173. .1:31 And He came and took her by the hand, and lifted her up; and immediately the fever left her, and she ministered unto them.

174. .1:40,41 And there came a leper to Him, beseeching Him, and kneeling down to Him, and saying unto Him, If Thou wilt, Thou canst make me clean. And Jesus, moved with compassion, put forth His hand, and touched him, and saith unto him, I will; be thou clean.

175. .5:34 And He said unto her, Daughter, thy faith hath made thee whole; go in peace, and be whole of thy plague.

176. .6:56 And whithersoever He entered, into villages, or cities, or country, they laid the sick in the streets, and besought Him that they might touch if it were but the border of His Garment: and as many as touched Him were made whole.

177. .7:32-35 And they bring unto Him one that was deaf, and had an impediment in his speech; and they beseech Him to put His hand upon him. And He took him aside from the multitude, and put His fingers into his ears, and He spit, and touched his tongue; And looking up to Heaven, He sighed, and saith unto him, Ephphatha, that is, Be opened. And straightway his ears were opened, and the string of his tongue was loosed, and he spake plain.

178. MAR.10:52 And Jesus said unto him, Go thy way; thy faith hath made thee whole. And immediately he received his sight, and followed Jesus in the way.

179. .16:17,18 And these signs shall follow them that believe; In My Name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues; They shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.

180. .4:40 Now when the sun was setting, all they that had any sick with divers diseases brought them unto Him; and He laid His hands on every one of them, and healed them.

181. .5:17 And it came to pass on a certain day, as He was teaching, that there were Pharisees and doctors of the law sitting by, which were come out of every town of Galilee, and Judaea, and Jerusalem: and the power of the Lord was present to heal them.

182. .6:19 And the whole multitude sought to touch Him: for there went virtue out of Him, and healed them all.

183. .7:14,15 And He came and touched the bier: and they that bare him stood still. And He said, Young man, I say unto thee, Arise. And he that was dead sat up, and began to speak. And He delivered him to his mother.

184. .8:48b Thy faith hath made thee whole; go in peace.

185. .8:49,50 While He yet spake, there cometh one from the ruler of the synagogue's house, saying to him, Thy daughter is dead; trouble not the Master. But when Jesus heard it, He answered him, saying, Fear not: believe only, and she shall be made whole.

186. .9:42 And as He was yet a coming, the devil threw him down, and tare him. And Jesus rebuked the unclean spirit, and healed the child, and delivered him again to his father.

187. .10:9 Heal the sick that are therein, and say unto them, The Kingdom of God is come nigh unto you.

188. .13:11-13 And, behold, there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bowed together, and could in no wise lift up herself. And when Jesus saw her, He called her to Him, and said unto her, Woman, thou art loosed from thine infirmity. And He laid His hands on her: and immediately she was made straight, and glorified God.

189. .17:14b And it came to pass, that, as they went, they were cleansed.

190. .18:42 And Jesus said unto him, Receive thy sight: thy faith hath saved thee.

191. .22:50,51 And one of them smote the servant of the high priest, and cut off his right ear. And Jesus answered and said, Suffer ye thus far. And He touched his ear, and healed him.

192. .4:50 Jesus saith unto him, Go thy way; thy son liveth. And the man believed the Word that Jesus had spoken unto him, and he went his way.

193. .9:3 Jesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: but that the works of God should be made manifest in him.

194. .3:6 Then Peter said, Silver and gold have I none; but such as I have give I thee: In the Name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth rise up and walk.

195. .3:16 And His Name through faith in His Name hath made this man strong, whom ye see and know: yea, the faith which is by Him hath given him this perfect soundness in the presence of you all.

196. .9:34 And Peter said unto him, Aeneas, Jesus Christ maketh thee whole; arise, and make thy bed. And he arose immediately.

197. .9:37,41 And it came to pass in those days, that she was sick, and died: whom when they had washed, they laid her in an upper chamber. And he gave her his hand, and lifted her up, and when he had called the saints and widows, presented her alive.

198. .9:11,12 And God wrought special miracles by the hands of Paul: So that from his body were brought unto the sick handkerchiefs or aprons, and the diseases departed from them, and the evil spirits went out of them.

199. .20:10 And Paul went down, and fell on him, and embracing him said, Trouble not yourselves; for his life is in him. (Act.20:7-12).

200. .26:8 Why should it be thought a thing incredible with you, that God should raise the dead?

201. .28:8,9 And it came to pass, that the father of Publius lay sick of a fever and of a bloody flux: to whom Paul entered in, and prayed, and laid his hands on him, and healed him. So when this was done, others also, which had diseases in the island, came, and were healed.

202. .8:11 But if the Spirit of Him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, He that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by His Spirit that dwelleth in you.

203. .12:13b But let it rather be healed.

204. .5:14-16 Is any sick among you? Let him call for the elders of the church; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the Name of the Lord: And the prayer of faith shall save the sick and the Lord shall raise him up; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him. Confess your faults one to another, and pray for one another, that ye may be healed. The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.

205. .22:2 In the midst of the street of it, and on either side of the river, was there the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits, and yielded her fruit every month: and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations.

(See also MAT.11:4-6.)



*A faithful ambassador is health (Pro.13:17).
Beloved, I wish above all things that thou mayest prosper and be in health, even as thy soul prospereth
(3Jn.2).*

1. Cleanliness is Godliness!
2. Vigorous exercise seems to create energy, rather than use it up. During exercise the circulatory and respiratory systems are stimulated and the blood begins to surge through the body, oxygen and nutrients are fed to the cells of the tissues and the accumulated waste products are removed.
3. The mental and emotional fatigue that comes at the end of a trying but sedentary day can be miraculously dispelled with a little physical exercise.
4. One of the most pleasant things about exercise is its effectiveness as a tranquilizer--it seems to literally drain away the tensions as you go!
5. Exercise reduces blood pressure. High blood pressure is often a forerunner of heart disease.
6. Exercise results in a bigger, stronger heart. The more the heart or any muscle is exercised the bigger and stronger it becomes.
7. Don't exercise beyond your capacity, and never indulge in strenuous exercise too soon after eating.
8. Some doctors estimate that emotional causes contribute to as much as 90% or more of all illness.
9. The spirit of a man will sustain his infirmity: but a wounded spirit who can bear? (Pro.18:14).
10. Your body is for use--not abuse.
11. Don't tell your friends about your indigestion: "How are you" is a greeting, not a question.
12. A doctor is a man who tells you that if you don't cut something out, he will.
13. The body is the baggage you must carry through life. The more excess baggage, the shorter the trip.
14. Health is wealth.
15. To live long, it is necessary to live slowly.
16. Prevention is better than cure.
17. You are what you eat, and if you eat poison you're going to turn into poison yourself!
18. Eat to live, but do not live to eat.
19. Cleanliness is not next to Godliness!--It is Godliness!
20. Cleanliness is not next to Godliness, but a part of it! Cleanliness is a good witness and testimony.
21. Better no Home than a dirty one!
22. There's no excuse for dirt!
23. It doesn't take money to clean a house!--It just takes elbow grease and a little hard work!
24. If people are dirty on the outside, there's something wrong with them on the inside as well.
25. The Lord's servant is worth more than his money: Don't be penny-wise and flesh-foolish!
26. So-called "nervous strain" is a very common symptom of spiritual struggles. "Thou shalt keep him in perfect peace whose mind is stayed on Thee, because he trusteth in Thee!"
27. It's better to stay healthy than to have to be healed.
28. Proper diet, proper exercise, proper rest and proper living will keep almost anyone healthy.
29. Help us to let You take good care of us, Lord, and to give You all the cooperation we can by getting proper rest, proper exercise, proper diet and proper living!
30. A fence at the top of the cliff is better than a hospital at the bottom!--An ounce of prevention is worth a pound of cure!

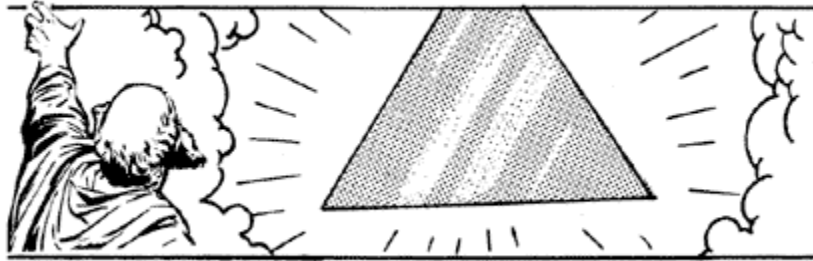
31. Work on the ounce of prevention now, rather than worrying about the pound of cure later.
32. You're the Lord's property and you'd better take good care of His property.
33. The Lord made you to like to eat what you need, and not to like what you don't need, providing you haven't for years perverted your taste through wrong eating.
34. Exercise is one of the prime requisites for good health.
35. You just cannot violate God's health rules with impunity, any more than you can violate His moral rules or His law of love!
36. Fear causes more sickness and more mental illness than anything else in the World.
37. The principles of good health: Eat right, exercise right, sleep right and live right.
38. It takes work to keep healthy!
39. God wants you to live for Him--and as long as possible!
40. You can't appreciate health unless you've been sick!
41. It's against God's rules of health and happiness to work seven days a week, and God won't bless it!-- Unless it's fun!
42. Health is a special blessing of God. You can only demand it if you're obedient.
43. God is the Creator of all things and can solve and heal anything! Through following His truth and His Law of Love, He can spare us from all mental and spiritual diseases.
44. Only people who know and trust the Lord can really be in good health because they're the only people who don't have to worry.
45. God put within your body little sensors, to want and enjoy things you need, and to reject things you shouldn't have or don't need.
46. You can't expect to claim God's promises for health while you're disobeying His Word by abusing your body with overwork, exhausting exertion and heavy strains.
47. You may be a whole lot more useful to the Lord with a faceful of boils, or a whole lot more humble and believing with a whole body covered with boils like Job was, than if the Lord would heal you too soon!
48. Faith eliminates the greatest causes of disease and ill health, and these are fear and tension.
49. A fence at the edge of the cliff built now will save us from having to dig a graveyard at the bottom later!
50. Direction for Body Use: If left sitting too long, will tend to sag and settle on its bottom. Shake well daily in fresh air and sunshine.
51. Be wise--exercise!
52. Do you always remember to pray over not only your food but your drinks? The Lord not only prayed for the bread but He also prayed for the wine.
53. You'll get away with defying God's natural laws no easier than you'll get away with defying His spiritual laws.
54. God's natural laws are the same, regardless of culture, sex, nationality, East or West!
55. Get on a regular schedule, a regular sleep schedule of seven to nine hours of sleep a night regularly. Get regular get out times as well--at least an hour of good strenuous physical exercise outdoors in the fresh air and sunshine.

(See also No.190, 330C, 353, 569, 599, 609, 737, 805, 831, 878, 882, 920, 956, 1138, 1215, 1220, 1299, 1313, 1315, 1407, 1434, 1493, *HH3*, *Childcare Handbook 1*.)

56. .15:26 And said, If thou wilt diligently hearken to the voice of the Lord Thy God, and wilt do that which is right in His sight, and wilt give ear to His commandments, and keep all His statutes, I will put none of these diseases upon thee, which I have brought upon the Egyptians: for I am the Lord that healeth thee.
57. .23:25 And ye shall serve the Lord your God, and He shall bless thy bread, and thy water; and I will take sickness away from the midst of thee.
58. .107:17 Fools because of their transgression, and because of their iniquities, are afflicted.
59. .12:18b The tongue of the wise is health.
60. **MIC.6:13 Therefore also will I make thee sick in smiting thee, in making thee desolate because of thy sins.**
61. **CO.3:16,17 Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? If any man defile the temple of God, him shall God destroy; for the temple of God is holy, which temple ye are.**

62. JO.2 Beloved, I wish above all things that thou mayest prosper and be in health, even as thy soul prospereth.

55. HEAVEN/HELL --{page 479}--



And I John saw the Holy City, New Jerusalem, coming down from God out of Heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband (Rev.21:2).

1. Life hereafter for us, God's children, will be an extension or an amplification, a multiplication of the joy and thrilling, exciting lives we now lead!

2. Hell is the extension, multiplication, amplification, endless continuation of the same awful lives that the wicked people of the world lead even now!

3. Hell is just the opposite of the ecstasies of life in Heaven for the saved and the blessed!

4. What greater hell could there be than for the World to live the same lives they've been living, without ever any hope of it ending or ever being able to get out of it?

5. Heaven is our Home and the Heavenly City is our destination.

6. Those who love God never meet for the last time.

7. Heaven is not the end: it's only the beginning.

8. Heaven is a place where you can get all you want of whatever you like.

9. You and I are going to live forever! We will be supernatural, miraculous supermen in superbodies that are united with our eternal spirits!

10. We are in the "more blessed" category, the upper class who lived by faith and believed even though we hadn't seen!

11. We who have found Jesus and faith in God and love Him have found Heaven on Earth!

12. We're not going to Heaven, Heaven is coming to us!

13. In Heaven you're going to be the same make, but a new model!

14. You're not going to go to Heaven to live with God, God is going to come to Earth to live with you!

15. There are a lot of good people going to Hell, and a lot of bad people like you and me going to Heaven!

16. Only you and I who love Jesus and have Him now before this life's death will be able to be among the special super-citizens of the Heavenly City, a special super-class of people!

17. The Heavenly City will vie with the moon and even the sun for beauty and splendour!

18. The City that God is building for you and me, not even death can pass its gates! God's City of Tomorrow, His garden of the gods, will have no pain nor death nor sorrow!

19. Those of us who have received Jesus Christ as our Saviour and our Lover and our King already have the Garden of Eden and Paradise restored in our hearts!

20. When you get to Heaven you won't need faith because you'll be able to see it and know it all then. You won't need hope because it's already arrived, but there'll still be love because "the greatest of these is love!" (1Cor.13.)

21. In Heaven there is no need for sex because there is no need for a shadow or illustration--just a need to enjoy it!

22. We will be the inner circle who live within the charmed City, living charmed lives as eternal everlasting supernatural beings!

23. God is a racist! He has a special elite race of supermen who are going to live above all others in the Holy City, the magical, mystical, marvelous, mysterious Space City!

24. Even Heaven would be Hell to some people because they'd be too close to God!

25. The Heavenly City already exists and the departed Saints are already there!

26. The New Heaven and New Earth are like a double Millennium, Millennium for ever!--Double your pleasure, double your fun, double your Heaven that's never done!

27. Have your name put in the Lamb's Book of Life in Heaven so you'll be sure you've got your reservation confirmed for one of those mansions in God's golden Space City!

28. The whole inside of the Pyramid on the ground level on the New Earth is one great Garden within the City, a great City Park!--His Heavenly Fair in His Heaven so fair!

29. What exhibit buildings God will have! The historical exhibits, the scientific exhibits, the spiritual exhibits, to be able to see the marvelous wonders of the Spirit World!

30. You'll never get tired of seeing all of God's exhibits in His great Fairground of the Heavenly City on Earth where you can really learn the facts and the truth about everything the way it really was. How's that for a great Heavenly Fair in Heaven so fair?

31. We will be able to travel back and forward in time and see what has been and what's going to be, as well as experience the glorious wonderful present!

32. People moving in Heaven move with grace and beauty and slowly glide along with their feet hardly seeming to touch the ground!

33. There will be no transportation problems in Heaven--you can either glide along, float along or fly!

34. There will be no feeding problems because you can either eat for pleasure, or you don't have to eat at all!

35. It looks like half the enjoyment is just having Heaven in our hearts and Heaven in our Homes, feeling Heaven in our bodies in the thrilling love and love-making that we have here and now on Earth in those ecstatic orgasms of the Spirit and the flesh, but also looking forward to Heaven to come!

36. Heaven is here to stay and sex is here to stay! We'll be able to enjoy many of these so-called fleshly pleasures on the other side, like Jesus did!

37. What are you going to be like in the Hereafter?--You're going to be like Jesus!

38. All of the pleasures of this present physical life can be continued into the next life as well!

39. Our Heavenly bodies will be able to dematerialise, pass from dimension to dimension, walk right through walls and locked doors as Jesus did, appear and disappear at will and travel with the speed of thought!

40. We'll look enough like we do now to recognise each other, identify each other and know each other!

41. We'll have all the best of this and Heaven too, the best of two Worlds!--Heaven now and Heaven to come!

42. Heaven will be the greatest Family Reunion we've ever known, with all our loved ones and relatives and children and parents and ancestors and descendants and ascendants all together in one place at the same time, rejoicing and praising the Lord all together in one great grand Heavenly Fellowship Meeting!

43. Hallelujah for the Heaven we have in our hearts with the Love of Jesus, His Spirit, and the Heaven we have in our Homes with each other and our love together and our work and service together for Him. It's really a little bit of Heaven right here and now!

44. We're halfway to Heaven here in the spirit, and we can get half of the enjoyment ahead of time just thinking about it, praising the Lord for it, thanking the Lord for it, reading about it, dreaming about it, looking forward to it and anticipating it!

45. It's amazing, the tremendous capacity of that marvelous final great Heavenly City that Jesus has gone to prepare and is now all prepared for us and on its way here, just ready for its new tenants which Jesus is going to raise from both the dead and the living in the Rapture at His Second Coming and take us all away to be there with Him!

46. I want you to really be able to grasp the wonder of it, the marvel of it, the size of it and really be able to get a good conception of its magnificence and its tremendous colossal gigantic stupendous size and beauty and splendour!

47. I belong to the Kingdom of God, that's my Country! I'm from Space City, that's my City! I'm from the City that hath foundations, whose Builder and Maker is God!

48. I've already got the Kingdom of Heaven in my heart! That's my nationality, my citizenship, my Country!--A Country that's never persecuted the poor or oppressed the weak or destroyed small peoples of the World like America has. It's a Country that's never lost a battle and never fought a war for the wrong reason.

49. My Country's trying to save the World, stop the wars, relieve the poor, feed the hungry, heal the sick and liberate the captives that are bound by countries like America!

50. I'm a citizen of the only righteous nation in the Universe--the Kingdom of Jesus Christ!

51. Even the worst neighborhood of Heaven will be better than the best neighborhood of the fanciest town on Earth!

52. We have in effect renounced our Worldly citizenship when we receive the King of Kings and the Prince of Peace, Lord of Lords, God of Heaven, Son of Righteousness and the Kingdom of Heaven into our hearts, and have made the Heavenly City our Home!

53. We're leaving this Hell of a mess before long and we're going to go to our Country and our City to be with our King!

54. I want to declare my Citizenship in the Kingdom of God and my allegiance to His Kingdom and His City!

55. One of these days you're going to a mansion that isn't going to cost you anything!--No upkeep, no expense, absolutely nothing except what it's already cost Jesus!--And it will be commensurate with your works on Earth, what you already paid for it down here.

56. Heaven'll be our last move!--No baggage, no luggage, no hard journey, no packing, no long travel! It may be a long way, but it may be closer than you think!

57. You can't take it with you! Whatever you have there you will have already sent ahead in the way of souls won, victories won, battles won and rewards won for your service here!

58. Even in Heaven, the most perfect City in the World, there are going to be different levels, different classes, different stages, some very high, some very low.

59. Heaven is the most beautiful thing God has ever made, outside of women, God bless them!--And in fact He even uses you women to symbolise the City and He calls that City His Bride, the New Heaven, the New Jerusalem! How about that? He couldn't think of anything more beautiful to symbolise that City than you, you beautiful girls, so He called it His Bride! Why? Because His Bride's going to live there!

60. It's not going to be that hard to be in Heaven, or the Heavenly City or the Millennium, but you're going to have something to do and something to keep you busy, and you'd be unhappy if you didn't. Wouldn't it be ridiculous after being so busy here if you wound up in Heaven with nothing to do but sit on a cloud playing a harp for a thousand years?--Much less all eternity! I think you'd really get bored.

61. Being able to disappear and appear and go through walls and fly with the speed of thought isn't going to make you half as happy as to see those you witnessed to, "Hi there! Wow, didn't I meet you on the streets? Didn't I talk to you about Jesus? Wow! Here you are! Hallelujah!" That's going to be the biggest thrill of all!

62. I've visited the future and I've seen the Heavenly City standing upon this Earth!--Beautiful, gorgeous, incomparable, almost indescribable, the most gorgeous sight you'll ever want to see! A beautiful pyramid-shaped City like the ancient Egyptian pyramids, only much more beautiful!--That Golden City like crystal gold, pyramid-shaped, 1500 miles wide! Think of it! And 1500 miles high!

63. There're going to be animals in God's Heaven on Earth, a New Heaven and a New Earth! God's not going to have His Creation defeated. He put those animals here for pets and playthings and companions for you and your children, and you're still going to enjoy the animals.

64. You can travel with the speed of thought! You just think you're on Jupiter and you're there, boom! You just think you're on Saturn and you're there, boom! You just think you're on the nearest star and you're there, boom! You don't have to have transporters, spaceships or speed of light or anything, you're just there like that! So we will have the might and the power of angels and the speed and the ability and we will be ruling and reigning spirits with resurrected bodies, but spiritual bodies which have enormous angelic powers like the angels of God, like Jesus when He was resurrected!

65. But there'll be plenty of room on Earth then because right now, what is it?--Only one-fifth of the Earth's surface is land, right? Whereas then there will be no more sea, it'll all be land, seas will be gone. The seas are the World's great septic tanks, its great cesspools, where all the waste of the World drains off into the sea.

66. Maybe it'll move around, who knows?--So it can minister to different parts of the World! If it can float down from Outer Space from God out of Heaven to the Earth, then it probably can still float around the Earth and hover here or there or set down here or there. After all, it's only 1500 miles square and 1500 miles high!--With God, a city like that can just float around!

67. It will be full of precious stones and jewels, and best of all, full of precious souls!--Immortal souls, saved souls that love Jesus and that you won to the Lord.

68. The City's going to be very very beautiful! Its going to be like a beautiful beautiful park in some places, and there in the lower level where the river flows right through the City there's going to be these beautiful trees growing on both sides, fruit trees with 12 different kinds of fruit, a different kind every month, think of that!--And leaves that'll be able to heal the people outside the City that are still sin-sick, and sick of their disobediences and their rebellion against God. We're going to be able to take those leaves outside and heal them!

69. Contrary to popular belief in the churches, I don't believe that the moment you land in Heaven you know everything! Just because Paul said, "Now we see through a glass darkly, then face to face. Now we know in part, then we shall know even as also we are known." (1Cor.13:12)--That doesn't mean you're going to know everything right off the bat. It does not mean that you're going to have perfect knowledge and perfect wisdom and know everything there is to know. I think God has left that for the rest of time and eternity in order to give something to do in the Hereafter, and to learn more about the Past and Bible history and the things which have already happened and to learn more about why they happened and God's reasons and His logic and the purposes and the meaning of it all.

70. We're even going to have sex in Heaven! How about that? Isn't that wonderful? Love all the girls you want to and all the handsome boys you want to and love all you want to and never get tired, never be impotent, never have a headache, never get hungry, never get sleepy, no pains, no VD, no nothin' except joy and praise and Hallelujah and lots of fun with your Bridegroom and all your friends and loved ones and the Family of God, His Family of Love, His children of God in Heaven when Jesus comes!

71. It's going to be so wonderful you're going to forget about all your troubles in the past! It's going to be so wonderful you're going to forget about all these things that happened before, those terrible things you've been through! Hallelujah? "It will be worth it all when we see Jesus! Life's trials will seem so small, when we see Christ! One glimpse of His dear face, all sorrow will erase! So bravely run the race, 'til we see Christ!"

72. God just turns on all the beauty He can possibly create, and that final Heaven on Earth, the eternal one of the New Heaven and the New Earth will be the most beautiful of all and the most perfect!--The perfect government of God administered directly and in perfection in every way!

73. We live like Heaven already, a little bit of Heaven right here and now! What could we have more?--Only more of the same and better!

74. Heaven is simply going to be an intensification, amplification, magnification and extension of all the thrills and joys and pleasures of this life, the Heaven on Earth that we're now enjoying, only it will be even more Heavenly there, and forever, praise God!

75. My idea of Heaven is what we've got right now, right here!--All this beauty and pleasure and fun and inspiration and spirit and fellowship and joy, all of this and more so and more of it!

76. Heaven is going to be like this life, only better!--With all of the assets but none of the liabilities!

77. My idea of Heaven is the kind of life we now live as a Family in the Lord on this Earth! We live in Heavenly Homes, we live a Heavenly life full of Heavenly creatures, and a Heavenly work and Heavenly pleasures. To be Heaven, it's going to have to be like this, only better.

78. Isn't that ridiculous to show Peter standing at the gates of Heaven with a ring of keys? The doors are already unlocked for us, all we've got to do is walk in through the front gate!

79. If this is like Heaven, then Heaven's going to be like this!

80. Why not enjoy half of heaven now? We're halfway to Heaven here in the spirit, and we can get half of the enjoyment ahead of time just thinking about it, praising the Lord for it, thanking the Lord for it, reading about it, dreaming about it, looking forward to it and anticipating it! We can have 50% of our enjoyment now just looking forward to it.

81. One reason I like to talk about Heaven, think about Heaven and read about Heaven is because, after all, that's where we're going to spend Eternity, so it's a pretty important place and we ought to be pretty interested, don't you think? It's our Eternal Home, the place Jesus has gone to prepare for us forever, so we certainly ought to be interested in it and want to know what it's like and what we're going to be like when we get there!

82. Your Heavenly body is going to be an awful lot like it is now, only better. And if you enjoy its pleasures now, think how marvelous they're going to be when your body is supernatural, really super, with more power and more beauty and more grace and greater thrills and more marvelous exciting experiences and love than ever!--All the pleasures of this life and Heaven too, and their continuation on the other side!

83. All of the pleasures of this present physical life can be continued into the next life as well, since we will have a body which is similar to our physical body, but so much more glorious and wonderful and supernatural that it's even called spiritual, but can actually materialise and eat and drink and be merry, have fun, sex, love and all of

the present pleasures of this life extended into the next in an immortal incorruptible all-powerful body that can enjoy them even more there than we do here, and forever without ever suffering pain or sickness or weariness or death, just be absolutely marvelously Heavenly forever!

84. My oh my, think of what you're going to be like when you have your completely Heavenly body that can do all the things you can do now and more, including flying and floating and appearing and disappearing and walking through walls and locked doors and having marvelous supernatural miraculous powers of defense and judgement upon your enemies, protection for your friends, and to be able to help the poor humans that are still living on Earth during the Millennium to learn more about the Lord and love Him and serve Him even as you do.

85. How could Heaven be any better? I'm already living in Heaven!--A Heavenly Home with a Heavenly heart and Heavenly hearts and Heavenly bodies and Heavenly angels and Heavenly Love! It's so wonderful thrilling and exciting and marvelous and Heavenly and wonderful and pleasurable even now, how could Heaven be any better? Well, it is! Because we still have a few problems here, with enemies and this corruptible flesh and its needs and its weariness and sickness and pains and aches and its trials and tribulations which we'll not have in our Heavenly bodies.

86. We'll have all the best of this and Heaven too, the best of two worlds!--Heaven now and Heaven to come!--Heaven on Earth that we enjoy now, everything that's wonderful and beautiful and Heavenly and thrilling and exciting and ecstatic and loving and marvelous that we enjoy right now, the Heaven on Earth that we all enjoy, the Heaven in our hearts that we already have, Heavenly love we share, all of this and Heaven too.

87. You want to know about a certain period and what happened?--You go into this building and all of a sudden you are transported! You're not just shown pictures, not even 3-D pictures, not even movies, but suddenly you are transported live by a time machine to that very time, that very age and you see it happen, you watch it happen, you hear it happen, you feel it happen! Think of it! Not only the movies but the feelies! You are there!

88. The sky is not the limit, only Heaven's the limit, and there's no limit in Heaven!

89. The Kingdom of God is not meat and drink, but that doesn't mean you can't have meat and drink in the Kingdom!

90. Is God's plan going to be defeated?--Or is He going to have a Heaven on Earth in which things are going to go the way He originally planned for them to go, with people having perfect babies and perfect children!--Born in Heaven!

91. The Lord may want to colonise other Worlds with His new perfect children! What's the whole Universe for and all this huge amount of space if He's only interested in colonising one little Planet? What an incubation! What an incubator for other civilizations!--Right here on the New Earth and the Heavenly City!

92. I just can't imagine a Heaven without children!--What a dead lifeless place without babies and kids!

93. The leaves on the Tree of Life are for the healing of the nations, but what are the fruits for?--They must be just for the pleasure of eating!

94. What a pleasure to have children in Heaven and to watch them grow and develop without the Devil and all his imps around and without sin and the Curse and all the pain, sorrow and crying! It will be pure pleasure to have children in Heaven!

95. I have another proof that we're going to have food in Heaven! "And man did eat angel's food." --Manna! So angels can eat food!

96. I don't know how perfect everybody is going to be in Heaven, but anyhow, certainly a lot better than here!

97. Probably hundreds of thousands of saved pregnant mothers are going to be going up in the Rapture, and you know good and well they are going to have their babies either in Heaven or when they get back to Earth in the Millennium!

98. I think anything's possible! Whatever you dream up, the Lord will have for you!

99. Heaven's the place where all your heart's desires are fulfilled! Put in your order! I'm sure the Lord will be glad to have anything there for you that you want!

100. The reason the church doesn't deal with some of these questions about Heaven is they're afraid of the answers! If you could have babies in Heaven, then you could have sex in Heaven!--And that's horrifying to the churches!

101. There's nothing man ever dreams of that God hasn't already thought of!

(See also No.75A, 80, 262, 316, 624, 686, 818, 850, 852, 882, 1198, 1199, 1237, 1252, 1303, 1391, 1465, 1466, 1473, 1479, 1484, 1529, 1530, 1531, 1532, 1533, 1534, 1542, 1543, 1544, 1545, 1546, 1555, 1556, 1557, 1558, 1559, 1560, 1561, 1562, 1568, 1569.



The thing that hath been, it is that which shall be; & that which is done is that which shall be done: & there is no new thing under the sun (Ecc.1:9).

1. Many of the so-called villains of history may really have been the heroes! It all depends on what the victorious historians decide to dictate.

2. For about 6000 years, God has been trying to convince man that he can't survive or live or exist or be happy without his Creator.

3. His story makes history! His Word & man's reaction to it decide the course of World events!

4. God cannot alter the past, but historians can.

5. History is a set of lies agreed upon.--Napoleon Bonaparte (1769-1821)

6. About the only thing we ever learn from history is that we never learn from history.--A. Toynbee

7. History is an account, mostly false, of events, mostly unimportant, which are brought about by rulers, mostly knaves, & soldiers, mostly fools.

8. A politician thinks of the next election; a statesman, of the next generation.

9. History is usually written generations after the event, when clouded fact and memory have all fused into what can be accepted as truth, whether it be so or not.

10. He who influences the thought of his time influences the thought of all the times that follow.

11. History is bunk.--Henry Ford.

12. What is history but a fable agreed upon?--Napoleon Bonaparte.

13. History really proves the existence of God. God's laws of retribution, the rise & fall of empires because of either righteousness or wickedness, is one of the surest proofs there is of the existence of God.

14. The greatest Man in history was the poorest. (2Co.8:9)

15. Someday we're going to know what influence we had on the course of history!

16. We are the main religious bomb of the century, & of the End of the World!

17. The memories of men are too frail a thread to hang history from.

18. The people who the World think are the greatest, messed it up the most!

19. History is such a sad story--but Jesus will add a happy ending!

20. World events & the course of history are influenced by the prophets of God.

21. In this lifetime the Lord has left the World up to man & his choices. He's left history up to man's own free will & choice within certain limitations, the tunnel of His will, & so far man has made pretty much of a mess of it!

(See also No.H, 6, 7, 12, 42, 105, 269, 299, 321, 371, 376, 388, 601, 645, 693, 694, 709, 961, 1277, 1385, *Childcare Handbook III, Book of Remembrance I & II.*)



But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto Me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria and unto the uttermost part of the Earth (Acts 1:8).

1. The lamp burns best, when full of oil!
2. Is everybody happy and healthy? I know you're wealthy and wise because you have the Holy Spirit!
3. The oil flows freely through a wick that is yielded and deeply soaked in the oil! Then it is the oil that burns and not the wick, and gives bright pure clear light to all the house, in the beauty of His perfection, in the holiness of His light!
4. Help us not to try to do the work of Thy Spirit, but to let Thy Spirit work through us!
5. Jesus had to take His body away, so His followers could feel His Spirit--get their minds off the flesh, so they could get their hearts on His Spirit! When we're the furthest from the flesh--we're the closest to the Spirit.
6. You have His Spirit! You are His Truth!
7. If you follow the man, you'll go back when the man is gone. But if you follow the Spirit, you'll go on forever!
8. The main reason for the baptism in the Spirit is to give you POWER TO WITNESS!
9. Holy Ghost power means more disciples and less trouble with the ones you have.
10. Simply pray and ask Jesus to fill you with His Spirit and He will!
11. If the Devil's evil spirits possess evil people and if he gives his children evil powers--evil tongues, evil wickedness, evil strength and evil wisdom--how much more can God's good spirits possess good people and God give His children Godly gifts and Godly powers.
12. When you're saved, He implants a bit of Himself--His Spirit and His love and His spirit helpers and controllers--in your mind and heart to guide and direct and protect you and keep you in control and guided by His direct will and His leadings.
13. You'll never be able to escape that Hound of Heaven, Who'll follow you every step of the way and track you down no matter where you are and nail you one way or the other!
14. The Holy Ghost is the best concordance I've got.
15. Who needs drugs when you've got the Druggist? The Holy Spirit is not a depressant or even a stimulant, She's a resurrection which brings you back to life!
16. The Oil of His Holy Spirit oils everything: Our heads, our hearts, our spirits, our tongues and even our feet so we'll go and preach the Gospel!
17. If you don't have the oil of the Holy Spirit you'll get rusty and break down.
18. Don't just be overflowing with the water of the Word, overflow with the wine of the Spirit!
19. The kind of baptism we preach and practice is one where you get so full of the Spirit of God you overflow with His testimony, His witness and His wonder-working Words!
20. All we need is the Holy Spirit to conquer our own spirit, other spirits and evil spirits!
21. Our spirits, like machinery, need cleaning and oiling--the washing of the pure water of the Word and the oiling of the love and patience of the Holy Spirit!
22. The baptism of the Holy Spirit is an overflowing baptism of love--the power to share your love with others!
23. When you feel you cannot hold it and you have to tell others about Jesus, this is the overflowing, this is the baptism of the Holy Spirit!

24. The baptism of the Holy Spirit is love, love for the lost, love to witness, love to win souls, such a love for the Lord that you just love everybody!

25. God's Spirit is like a broadcasting station broadcasting all the time.

26. It is only the restraining power of God's Holy Spirit which prevents the flood of iniquity from overwhelming the World.

27. Being possessed of the Holy Spirit is a form of reincarnation. Any type of incarnation of any spirit working in a human body to which it does not normally nor originally belong is a form of reincarnation.

28. His Spirit will lead you into all truth--through His Word and His prophets as well as your individual leadings and personal revelations.

29. This army has got to be mostly directed from its headquarters in Heaven by the communication of the Holy Spirit, since our ground communications are very slow and very poor and extremely inadequate and frequently disrupted. If you follow the Lord you'll never go wrong.

30. The Holy Spirit is like a Mother, tender and gentle with the little baby. Not even the Father has so much patience.

31. I'd rather be drunk on the Spirit, than sober on sadness!

32. The Holy Spirit is more personal to us than God.

33. Unless the Holy Spirit reveals something to you and enlightens your mind, you can be totally blind to a certain truth that's been right there in front of you all the time!

34. The Holy Spirit is the Old Gold Miner who points the way to the treasures!

35. Oh the Spirit, blessed Spirit,

How I thank Thee, for by Thee

I am always in the Spirit

And I live a life that's free!

36. Oh I thank Thee for Thy Spirit

Thou hast given unto me,

For it's only by Thy Spirit

I have truly been set free!

37. Give me Spirit, give me Spirit,

Oh that's the life for me!

So for a Happy New Year

Give me Spirit that is free!

38. Dream Queen of Heaven's Realm Above,

Entrance me in God's spell of love,

Thrill me, fill me, gratify,

None like Thee can satisfy!

39. The Baptism of the Holy Spirit is Love Power!

40. Just reading the Bible and studying the Word is not enough--You have to have air, the oxygen of the Spirit, to make it burn to give you power and energy spiritually.

41. Try the baptism of the Holy Spirit and see if it doesn't wet your soul and satisfy your thirst and cause you to witness and overflow on others with power, and get them saved and filled too! That's the kind of baptism we believe in and Jesus was talking about!

42. Holy Spirit oil poured on troubled waters calms the waters. Oil that's poured on squeaky parts of a mechanism that are complaining and howling and growling and groaning makes that part of the mechanism quiet and run smoothly without complaint.

43. How do you know you have the Holy Spirit? You know you're saved because somebody told you about Jesus, you believed it, you received Him and you know you're saved because the Bible says so. How do you know you have the Holy Ghost? Because someone told you about it, someone showed you out of the Bible, and you believed it, you asked for Her, you received Her, so you have Her. I don't care how She manifests Herself, or if She doesn't seem to at all immediately, you have the Holy Ghost if you ask for Her, if you really believe it.

44. His Spirit cures both impotency and frigidity in His bride and gives her the strength to conceive from the seeds of His Word, and bear children unto God--the Children of God!

45. He just pours in His Holy Spirit and just fills you from top to bottom, until you just overflow! And it just flows out all over you and covers you up and hides you so they can only see Jesus in you! All they can see is Jesus and you just disappear!

46. When you get filled with His Holy Ghost, you get so full of the Spirit you run over! It runs out your eyes, it runs out your mouth, it runs out your ears, it runs out all over so "we see no man save Jesus only". We see

Jesus in each one of you.--That same glorious expression, happiness, joy, Spirit, smile and peace!--That little bit of Heaven on Earth, the reflection of Heaven in you, the moon, from God the Sun, Jesus Christ!

47. His ministering spirits are the ones that bring us these gifts of the Holy Spirit!

(See also No.20, 28, 29, 32, 73, 73A, 154B, 194, 244, 328, 337, 341, 399, 620, 677, 686, 723, 743, 820, 1300, 1301, 1302, 1303, 1304, 1305.)

48. SA.10:6 And the Spirit of the Lord will come upon thee, and thou shalt prophesy with them, and shalt be turned into another man.

49. SA.16:13,14 Then Samuel took the horn of oil, and anointed him in the midst of his brethren: and the Spirit of the Lord came upon David from that day forward. So Samuel rose up, and went to to Ramah. But the Spirit of the Lord departed from Saul, and an evil spirit from the Lord troubled him.

50. PRO.1:23 Turn you at my reproof: behold, I will pour out My Spirit unto you, I will make known My Words unto you.

51. .4:6 Forsake Her not, and She shall preserve thee: love Her, and She shall keep thee.

52. .2:28,29 And it shall come to pass afterward, that I will pour out My Spirit upon all flesh; and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, your old men shall dream dreams, your young men shall see visions: And also upon the servants and upon the handmaids in those days will I pour out My Spirit.

53. MAT.3:11 I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance; but He that cometh after me is mightier than I, Whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: He shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire.

54. MAT.3:16 And Jesus, when He was baptised, went up straightway out of the water: and, lo, the heavens were opened unto Him, and He saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon Him.

55. MAT.12:31 Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men.

56. .1:8 I indeed have baptized you with water: but He shall baptise you with the Holy Ghost.

57. .3:29 But he that shall blaspheme against the Holy Ghost hath never forgiveness, but is in danger of eternal damnation.

58. LUK.11:13 If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall your Heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask Him?

59. LUK.24:49 And, behold, I send the promise of My Father upon you: but tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, until ye be endued with power from on high.

60. JOH.1:32 And John bare record, saying, I saw the Spirit descending from Heaven like a dove, and it abode upon Him.

61. .14:16,17 And I will pray the Father, and He shall give you another Comforter, that He may abide with you for ever; Even the Spirit of truth; whom the World cannot receive because it seeth Him not, neither knoweth Him: but ye know Him; for He dwelleth with you, and shall be in you.

62. .14:26 But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in My Name, He shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.

63. .15:26 But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, He shall testify of Me.

64. .16:7,8 Nevertheless I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send Him unto you. And when He is come, He will reprove the World of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgement.

65. .16:13 Howbeit when He, the Spirit of truth, is come, He will guide you into all truth: for He shall not speak of Himself; but whatsoever He shall hear, that shall He speak: and He will shew you things to come.

66. ACT.1:5 John truly baptized with water; but ye shall be baptised with the Holy Ghost not many days hence.

67. ACT.1:8 But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto Me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the Earth.

68. ACT.2:1-4 And when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place. And suddenly there came a sound from Heaven as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting. And there appeared unto them cloven tongues like as of fire, and it sat upon each of them. And they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance.

69. ACT.2:17 And it shall come to pass in the last days, saith God, I will pour out of My Spirit upon all flesh: and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams.

70. ACT.2:38 Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the Name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.

71. .5:32 And we are His witnesses of these things; and so is also the Holy Ghost, whom God hath given to them that obey Him.

72. ACT.8:15-17 Who (Peter and John), when they were come down, prayed for them, that they might receive the Holy Ghost. (For as yet He was fallen upon none of them, only they were baptized in the Name of the Lord Jesus.) Then laid they their hands on them, and they received the Holy Ghost.

73. ACT.16:6,7 Now when they had gone throughout Phrygia and the region of Galatia, and were forbidden of the Holy Ghost to preach the Word in Asia, After they were come to Mysia, they assayed to go into Bithynia: but the Spirit suffered them not.

74. ACT.19:2 He said unto them, Have ye received the Holy Ghost since ye believed? And they said unto him, We have not so much as heard whether there be any Holy Ghost.

75. ACT.19:6a And when Paul had laid his hands upon them, the Holy Ghost came on them.

76. ROM.5:5 And hope maketh not ashamed; because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us.

77. ROM.8:14 For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.

78. ROM.8:16 The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God.

79. 1CO.12:4-11 Now there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit. And there are differences of administrations, but the same Lord. And there are diversities of operations, but it is the same God which worketh all in all. But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withal. For to one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom; to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit; To another faith by the same Spirit; to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit; To another the working of miracles; to another prophecy; to another discerning of spirits; to another divers kinds of tongues; to another the interpretation of tongues: But all these worketh that one and the selfsame Spirit, dividing to every man severally as He will.

80. 2CO.3:17b Where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty.

81. GAL.4:6 And because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of His Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father.

82. GAL.5:22,23 But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law.

83. GAL.5:25 If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit.

84. TH.1:5 For our Gospel came not unto you in word only, but also in power, and in the Holy Ghost, and in much assurance; as ye know what manner of men we were among you for your sake.

85. 1TH.5:19 Quench not the Spirit.

86. 1JO.3:24 And he that keepeth His commandments dwelleth in Him, and He in him. And hereby we know that He abideth in us, by the Spirit which He hath given us.

87. JO.5:6b It is the Spirit that beareth witness, because the Spirit is truth.

(See also PRO.8:12,27-31.)



And My people shall dwell in a peaceable habitation, & in sure dwellings, & in quiet resting places (Isa.32:18).

1. We're building a home of hearts that girdles the globe!
2. God's in the business of breaking up homes if they're not glorifying Him.
3. Ask for clearance from the Lord before you even move into a new house, & be sure it's going to be a safe house!
4. Without a heart there is no home.
5. No one can be so welcome a guest that he will not annoy his host after three days.--Old Arab proverb.
6. Home is the place in which we are treated the best & grumble the most.
7. Don't ever tell me we haven't got room for somebody!
8. Let me see your Home, & I'll tell you what you are!
9. The idea of our Homes, of course, is a live-in church that's always open night & day.
10. Remember to leave your house in better condition than you found it. That's part of your testimony & witness.
11. I am still firmly convinced that the small independent Homes are the most effective and the hardest to stop!
12. Love begins at home!
13. Bless this house,O Lord we pray.
Make us safe by night and day.
Bless these walls, so firm and stout,
Keeping want & trouble out!
- Bless the roof and windows all,
Let Thy Peace be over all!
Bless these doors that they may be
Ever open Lord to Thee!
- Bless these windows shining bright,
Letting in God's heavenly light.
Bless the hearth a-blazing there,
With smoke ascending like a prayer!
- (Bless the fan a'blowin' there
Cool air flowing like a prayer!)
- Bless the folks who dwell within,
Keep them pure and free from sin.
Bless us all that we may be
Fit, O Lord, to dwell with Thee!
14. It takes a lot of lovin' to make a house a Home.
15. When you close down one of our Homes, you destroy somebody's Church.
16. Your home may not be air-conditioned, but be sure it's prayer-conditioned.

(See also No.106, 122, 126, 211, 316, 326c, 563, 660, 671, 676, 836, 1031, 1046, 1065, 1067, 1409, 1549.)

HERE, YOU GAVE ME TOO MUCH CHANGE.

THANK YOU!

THE SAILOR

1. Honesty is the best policy. Honesty pays.
2. We're all nudists as far as God's concerned! All things are naked before Him with Whom we have to do. (Heb.4:13)
3. Just because you must tell Systemites the truth doesn't mean you have to tell them everything!
4. Admitting Error clears the Score
And proves you Wiser than before.
5. To treat your facts with imagination is one thing, but to imagine your facts is another.
6. This is the punishment of a liar: He is not believed even when he speaks the truth.
7. It's not your business to decide whether it's going to cost you anything or not, or cause you trouble by telling on somebody else; it is your duty to tell, whether you like it or not, or whether he likes it or not! It is your duty to report something, and if somebody knows something's wrong and doesn't report it, then it is their fault as much as the actual perpetrators of the crime. Failure to report a crime is a crime!
8. There are quite a few instances in the Bible where God told people to lie.
9. Often it is easier to do a good job than to explain why you didn't.
10. It's a terrible thing to tell lies to try to cover up wrong doing. The Lord is against lying, He hates it!
11. If you lie about one little thing or break the smallest law, people figure you could be guilty of much greater things.
12. Oh, what a tangled web you weave,
When first you practice to deceive!
13. Not even God Himself can stop people from lying, as long as there's free moral agency and there's free will.
14. Falsification is the product of pride, an effort to hide the awful truth of which you are ashamed.
15. Confess to yourself continually what a fool you are, how stupid, dumb, slow, thoughtless, selfish, inconsiderate and hopeless you are without God!
16. The Lord Himself says, "I will send them strong delusion that they might believe a lie, that they might all be damned who receive not the Love of the Truth." God Himself is going to lie to them and deceive them because they refuse the Truth. So they deserve to believe a lie. So God lied to them and deceived them and deluded them and damned them!
17. If you're going to do what God wants you to do and accomplish what only you can do, you are going to have to recognise your limitations.
18. He that is not honest with himself cannot be honest with anyone else.
19. A guilty conscience needs no accuser.
20. Those who stretch the truth usually find that it snaps back.

21. You can fool some of the people all of the time, and all of the people some of the time, but you cannot fool all of the people all of the time.

22. You must be willing to face yourself and your own weaknesses and your own strengths, and to know the difference.

23. Stripping away all the cover-ups and laying your heart bare before someone else is like the way you humble yourself before the Lord.

24. One of the greatest assets to a good relationship is honesty.

25. One of the smartest things you can do is to assess your own assets and liabilities.

26. You don't solve your problems by running away from them!

27. Flattery is like Grandma's soap--90% "soft soap" and 10% "lie"!

28. You pay a big price if you get caught stealing and you pay the price of fear and apprehension if you don't.

29. You are really three persons: What you think you are, what others think you are, and what God knows you to be!

30. Better to speak truth rudely than to lie correctly.

31. It's better to report it and be wrong than not to report it and be right.

32. Hesitation to most people seems a sign of evasiveness and unwillingness to tell the truth!

33. If you're not honest with yourself, if you keep on trying to fool yourself, you'll do the same with God and others, and the result will be one awful mess--you'll make a mess of your own life, hurt all those associated with you, and hurt God most of all.

34. The best thing we need to do with faults and failures and mistakes and weak points is to see them, recognise them, be honest about them and then try to somehow overcome them or improve them and do something better if we can!

35. The Lord and His Prophets frequently used deceit and sometimes outright lies, believe it or not, to accomplish God's purpose. The law is a standard, but there are always exceptions to the rules, particularly if God is the One Who makes the exceptions.

36. I hate to lie and very rarely in my life I've done it. It hurts me and bothers me, but if I have to do it to save my life I might do it. And a few times, although I have not outright lied, I have misled. I said one thing when I really meant another, and deliberately in order to save some situation or spare someone, or in order to escape some very serious situation. If you have to lie to save a life, I think it's worth it, but I certainly don't recommend it and it would have to be in an absolute extreme emergency.

37. As Shakespeare said, "If thou canst to thine own self be true, thou canst not be false to any man."

38. King David left a dummy in his bed to make it look like he was still there while he escaped through the window. Paul was let down over the wall in a basket. Jesus' disciples pretended to go one way when they left town but actually went another. The Three Wise Men, instead of going back the main road to Herod, went another way home. Jesus hid Himself and escaped out of their midst.

39. To treat your fact with imagination is one thing, but to imagine your facts is another.

(See also No.143A, 266, 286, 302C, 555, 629, 662, 985, 1108, 1248, 1299, 1400, 1406.)

40. .19:13 Thou shalt not defraud thy neighbor, neither rob him: the wages of him that is hired shall not abide with thee all night until the morning.

41. .24:3,4 Who shall ascend into the hill of the Lord? or who shall stand in His holy place? He that hath clean hands, and a pure heart; who hath not lifted up his soul unto vanity, nor sworn deceitfully.

42. .35:11 False witnesses did rise up; they laid to my charge things that I knew not.

43. .55:21 The words of his mouth were smoother than butter, but war was in his heart: his words were softer than oil, yet were they drawn swords.

44. .62:4 They delight in lies: they bless with their mouth, but they curse inwardly.

45. .119:29,30 Remove from me the way of lying: and grant me Thy law graciously. I have chosen the way of truth: Thy judgments have I laid before me.

46. .119:128 Therefore I esteem all Thy precepts concerning all things to be right; and I hate every false way.

47. .119:163 I hate and abhor lying: but Thy law do I love.

48. .18:5 It is not good to accept the person of the wicked, to overthrow the righteous in judgement.

49. .19:5 A false witness shall not be unpunished, and he that speaketh lies shall not escape.

50. .24:28 Be not a witness against thy neighbor without cause; and deceive not with thy lips.

51. .28:13 He that covereth his sins shall not prosper: but whoso confesseth and forsaketh them shall have mercy.

52. .5:4,5 When thou vowest a vow unto God, defer not to pay it; for He hath no pleasure in fools: pay that which thou hast vowed. Better is it that thou shouldest not vow, than that thou shouldest vow and not pay.

53. .8:16 These are the things that ye shall do; Speak ye every man the truth to his neighbor; execute the judgement of truth and peace in your gates.

54. .19:18 Jesus said...Thou shalt not bear false witness.

55. .5:3,9 But Peter said, Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart to lie to the Holy Ghost, and to keep back part of the price of the land? Then Peter said unto her, How it is that ye have agreed together to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? behold, the feet of them which have buried thy husband are at the door, and shall carry thee out.

56. .9:1 I say the truth in Christ, I lie not, my conscience also bearing me witness in the Holy Ghost.

57. **COR.9:20,21 And unto the Jews I became as a Jew, that I might gain the Jews; to them that are under the law, as under the law, that I might gain them that are under the law; To them that are without law, as without law, (being not without law to God, but under the law to Christ,) that I might gain them that are without law.**

58. **COR.4:2 But have renounced the hidden things of dishonesty, not walking in craftiness, not handling the word of God deceitfully; but by manifestation of the truth commending ourselves to every man's conscience in the sight of God.**

59. CO.6:8b As deceivers, and yet true.

60. CO.8:21 Providing for honest things, not only in the sight of the Lord, but also in the sight of men.

61. .4:25 Wherefore putting away lying, speak every man truth with his neighbor: for we are members one of another.

62. .3:9,10 Lie not one to another, seeing that ye have put off the old man with his deeds; And have put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge after the image of Him that created him.

63. TH.4:6 That no man go beyond and defraud his brother in any matter: because that the Lord is the avenger of all such, as we also have forewarned you and testified.

64. TH.4:12 That ye may walk honestly toward them that are without, and that ye may have lack of nothing.

65. .13:8 Pray for us: for we trust we have a good conscience, in all things willing to live honestly.

66. JO.1:10 If we say that we have not sinned, we make Him a liar, and His Word in not in us.

(See also examples of "Deceivers Yet True"; GEN.12:10-20; GEN.20:1-18; GEN.30:25-43; GEN.38:1-26; GEN.42:1-24; GEN.44:1-17; EXO.1:15-21; EXO.2:1-10; EXO.3:19-22; EXO.8:20-29; EXO.10:8-11; EXO.11:1-3; EXO.12:31-36; JOS.2:1-22; JDG.16:21-30; RUT.3:1-18; ISA.19:8-18; ISA.21:10-15.)



He knew all men, and needed not that any should testify of man: for He knew what was in man
(Jn.2:24,25).

1. The heart of man is the same the world over, and his heartaches and sorrows and sins and pains and fear of death are the same!
2. There are 3 kinds of people in all types of organizations--rowboat people, sailboat people, and steamboat people. Rowboat people need to be pushed or shoved along. Sailboat people move when a favourable wind is blowing. Steamboat people move continuously through calm or storm. They are usually masters of themselves and their surroundings.
3. There are two kinds of people in one's life--people whom one keeps waiting--and the people for whom one waits.
4. Character is not cut in marble, but is living and changing, and subject to disease, as our bodies are.
5. Experience is always a good teacher, but she often has dull pupils.
6. People will buy anything that's one to a customer.
7. Everyone is interested in improving--his wife, his children, his company and his country.
8. All you have to do is make something illegal and everybody wants it!
9. It's when you're safe at home that you wish you were having an adventure. When you're having an adventure you wish you were at home.
10. The sweetest music in the World to every person is his own name.
11. It's always easier to tear down than it is to build! People are usually quicker to believe lies than the truth.
12. The man-worshippers of today will be the crucifiers of tomorrow!
13. Retired is being tired twice, I've thought!
First tired of working, Then tired of not.
14. Horse sense is something that horses have to keep them from betting on people.
15. Natives who beat drums to drive off evil spirits are objects of scorn to smart Americans who blow horns to break up traffic jams.
16. Too many people quit looking for work when they find a job.
17. We have not passed that subtle line between childhood and adulthood until we have stopped saying, "It got lost," and say, "I lost it."
18. People differ. Some object to the fan dancer, and others to the fan.
19. One trouble with the World is that so many people who stand up vigorously for their rights, fall down miserably on their duties.
20. The two kinds of people on earth are the people who lift and the people who lean.
21. The nearest to perfection most people ever come is when filling out an employment application.
22. Character is what you are in the dark.
23. The superiority of some men is merely local--they are great because their associates are little.
24. Birds of a feather flock together.
25. Unwelcome guests are often most welcome when they are gone.
26. As a rule man is a fool,
When it's hot he wants it cool,
When it's cool he wants it hot,

Always wanting what is not.

27. People are absolutely scared stupid of the quiet and the stillness, because they know the voice of God might come through!

28. Sign on office bulletin board: "In case of fire, don't panic. Simply flee the building with the same reckless abandon that occurs each day at quitting time."

29. Even in the heart of the jungles in the most savage tribes the general rules of human behaviour are very much the same. They know it's wrong to do certain things.

30. Very few men are so idealistic as to be willing to give up their own sins in order to please God, that they might try to save their fellowman!

31. You can conquer the city, the nation, the World, but until you can conquer your spirit, you're a loser.

32. Temperamental usually means more temper than mental.

33. Most people would learn from their mistakes if they weren't so busy trying to place the blame on someone else.

34. Seven-thirty is my time to rise,

But I'm seldom bright of eye.

Part of me says "Look alive!"

And the other part asks "Why?"

35. It's easier to believe a lie that one has heard a thousand times than to believe a fact that no one has heard before.

36. Remember, the two main factors that move worldly men to action: Desire for gain and fear of loss.

37. It is with narrow-souled people as with narrow-necked bottles--the less they have in them the more noise they make in pouring out.

38. Most people would rather be ruined by praise than saved by criticism.

39. Not what you have, but what you see;

Not what you see, but what you choose;

Not what seems fair, but what is true;

Not what you dream, but what you do;

Not what you take, but what you give;

Not as you pray, but as you live!

These are the things that mar or bless

The sum of human happiness.

40. --Oh, it's great to get up in the morning!

--But it's nicer to lie in bed!

(See also No.7, 12, 33, 159, 203, 208, 242, 250, 263, 297, 302B, 334A, 359, 502R, 529, 606, 629, 703, 845, 1019, 1032, 1372.)



God resisteth the proud, but giveth grace to the humble (Jam.4:6).

1. With Cain & Abel began the Battle Royal between pride & humility, between the damned religionists & the saved sinners, the perpetual warfare that has been waged ever since between the False Church & the True Church, the Whore & the Bride, Carnal Babylon & Spiritual Jerusalem, the Flesh & the Spirit, Works & Faith, Law & Grace, Self & God.

2. Truly great men are usually very humble men, & they don't have to brag about how great they are!

3. You glorify self when you talk about your faults!

4. Great men forget themselves. That is why they are remembered by others.

5. Only brokenness can give you humility.

6. It's a wonderful thing when you can see you're wrong!

7. The self-righteous hypocrite never blames himself.

8. You want to be humble, but you don't want to be humiliated.

9. Pride is love for yourself.

10. One of the worst kinds of pride in the world is pretending to have faith when you haven't got it.

11. People who are proud & selfish lay themselves wide open for the Devil!

12. Pride is at the bottom of all great mistakes.

13. Man's greatest pride is in his buildings--"the works of his hands," & they have always been his downfall.

14. Fame is fickle & triumph is only transitory.

15. Anybody can be a novice if you give them more than they can handle. If any job you get makes you proud, then you're a novice.

16. Sensitiveness is born of pride & pride is of the Devil!

17. Once the Lord humbles you, He has to keep humbling you--He's gotta keep you humble.

18. If you need love, say so!

19. When you get too proud & so smart that you can't stand to have somebody give you a suggestion or correction, you're in pretty bad shape!

20. Pride is something which none of us can really bear. Pride kills you!

21. Pride comes before a fall, & you're never so near the abyss as when you're on the brink!

22. He that is humble knoweth not that he is humble!

23. If you think you are humble, you probably aren't!

24. Love, humility, & prayer solve all problems!

25. God does some things to make you humble, other things to keep you humble & yet others to make sure you're still humble.

26. Sex, love & emotion humble, while intellectuality & knowledge bring pride.

27. One reason why you need to confess your sins is because it really helps to keep you humble.

28. The greatest saints were the greatest sinners who knew it & therefore depended totally on God.

29. An awful lot can get done if you don't care who gets the credit.

30. The quicker you learn that you don't know, the better off you are going to be, because only God has the answers.

31. Give Him all the glory for anything good about you, & yourself all the blame for anything bad! That's usually a pretty good rule, because it's usually right!

32. This is a war! We have little time for sensitivity, nursing our wounds & hurt feelings! We must fight on!

33. The very thing you're fighting is the thing God wants to use to humble & break you.

34. Humility is of the Lord. Pride is of the Devil.

35. It's not humility for you to take a back seat when you should have a front seat.

36. Love is humility & humility is love. They are totally inseparable.

37. The best way to get the last word is to apologise.

38. Great men are humble men.

39. Let me be when I am weary,

Just a little bit more cheery,

Think a little more of others,

And a little less of me.

40. Humility is a strange thing. The minute you think you've got it, you've lost it.

41. The less self-confidence you have, the more Christ-confidence you'll have, and the better you'll be.

42. It takes humility to give & to receive affection.

43. An admission of error is a sign of strength rather than a confession of weakness.

44. Whatever you would laugh at in others, laugh at in yourself.

45. A good man does not hesitate to admit he has been in the wrong. He takes comfort in knowing that he is wiser today than he was yesterday.

46. Pride's fear of failure or refusal often prevents us from making the first move.

47. Most people seem to want a good deed to be all their own idea so they can get all the credit for it, rather than to be asked to do it & thus have to share the credit with someone else's faith.

48. Better to ask the way than go astray.

49. "Only by pride cometh contention: but with the well advised is wisdom." (Pro.13:10)

50. It takes two to make a quarrel.

51. Humility before God is nothing if not proved in humility before men.

52. Don't refuse to accept criticism!--Get all the help you can!

53. Don't be afraid to ask dumb questions. They're easier to handle than dumb mistakes.

54. Be humble or you'll stumble.

55. Never be ashamed to ask for help or prayer when you need it.

56. A bigshot who has too big a shot of his own ego can't do as well as some little shots who have a big shot of the Holy Spirit!

57. The need for glamour & glory is an addiction as bad as drugs.

58. Death to self, death to sin, death to your own ideas, death to your own strength, death to your reputation, death to your pride--are hard to go through, but they're worth it because they bring out the life of Christ.

59. I need to confess my sins because it really helps keep me humble!

60. Only pride hurts!--Humility doesn't really feel it!

61. The minute you start patting yourself on the back, you're finished.

62. The basis of virtually all sin is pride!

63. The greatest men in the World are the most humble.

64. Confess your faults, never defend them.

65. He who is full of self is very empty.

66. The truly humble are truly loving, & the truly loving are truly humble.

67. Don't be too over-confident about some of your projects for which you may not have sufficient experience & knowledge, & for which you need better preparation & more thorough investigation.

68. Few people seem to be able to take power, prosperity, or popularity without being corrupted.

69. There's perfect rest in humility, because humility has love & faith without fear.

70. God can only use truly broken men & women!

71. There is no limit to what can be accomplished if you give the Lord all the glory for it.

72. "Pride goeth before destruction, & an haughty spirit before a fall." (Pro.16:18)

73. "Let another man praise thee & not thine own mouth, a stranger, & not thine own lips." (Pro.27:2)

74. "A man's pride shall bring him low: but honour shall uphold the humble in spirit." (Pro.29:23)

75. I have made mistakes but I have never made the mistake of claiming that I have never made one.

76. Success has made failures of many men.

77. It is indeed a desirable thing to be well descended, but the glory belongs to our ancestors.

78. Swallowing your pride occasionally will never give you indigestion.

79. As water seeks the lowest place, just so the glory & power of God flows in the humblest, lowliest hearts! This is real nobility in God's Kingdom!

80. In most instances, all an argument proves is that two people are present.

81. A fight starts only with a second blow.

82. The less there is of you, the more the light gets through!

83. Pride is increased by ignorance: Those assume the most who know the least.

84. He is not laughed at that laughs at himself first.

85. Pride was the beginning of all evil!

86. Pride is the spirit of the Devil!--Love is the Spirit of God!--And you can't have both.

87. If you're not big enough to stand criticism, you're too small to be praised.

88. One of the smartest things you can learn to say is, "I don't know!"

89. Stop & praise the Lord & have a good laugh at your own weaknesses & ridiculous inability to do anything or accomplish anything except for the Lord!

90. Humility & Love are synonymous. You cannot have real love & not be humble.

91. Not only wars, but slaughter on the highways, disease & accidents are caused by pride, selfishness & lack of love.

92. When a brother is easily offended it shows he's not very strong & pretty unspiritual.

93. The Lord only uses people who have been humbled, broken, melted & remade!

94. One of the Devil's favorite sins is pride, because this makes people want to cover up & not confess. Unless people will ask for help, how are you going to help them?

95. He is impossible to get along with who thinks he's impossible to get along without.

96. It's not easy to confess you've been wrong, but it's a lot easier than staying wrong or trying to support a false position!

97. People will die for pride!--Quicker than they'll die for money or power or territory!

98. Many suicides are a result of pride--people just can't face it--& war is suicide!

99. Suicide is a result of pride, people just can't face it, can't stand the scandal, the humiliation, the degradation.

100. Selfishness is pride. The selfish believe they deserve more than others, therefore they are unwilling to share.

101. There is no rest in pride, the proud are always afraid.

102. I never found any branch of the Lord's work where pride pays at all! Pride does not pay, & it doesn't pay the bills. We've got every reason in the World to ask for help for His Work.

103. Lack of power is the result of fear born of pride, fear of not succeeding, fear of being embarrassed, fear of being ashamed. Such fear always comes as the result of pride, because the proud are afraid of failure. The rich & the powerful are the most fearful people in the World.

104. Legalism & self-righteousness are manifestations of pride.

105. It's a sign of pride if we're too sensitive & we snap back or we feel hurt. Sensitiveness is born of pride & pride is of the Enemy.

106. If there's anything any soldier has got to learn to do, as you oughtta know, it's to be able to take a cussin' out by his commanding officer for his mistakes, & say, "Yes, sir; thank you, sir; & what next, sir?"--Even if it hurts! This is a war & we have little time for sensitivity & nursing our wounds or hurt feelings! We must fight on!

107. I've seldom found that silence breathes consent: It often breathes a smouldering, hidden resentment, which is fearful of being voiced & therefore says nothing.

108. When you have the "poor me's," you're usually just trying to get attention & sympathy! Your pride is wounded, your ego has been a little deflated, your self-confidence has been a little shaken, & you begin to feel sorry for yourself & wonder if you should quit. The cure is to forget yourself & love others.

109. As to sensitivity & hurt feelings: The Devil will try to tell you it's ok to be just a little bit down, a little bit sorry for yourself! After all, you deserve to enjoy just a little bit of discouragement so you can get a little bit of sympathy from others! Why not? Misery loves company! This is self-indulgence & must be resisted & lost in love.

110. Some people are so damn delicate they can't stand anything; they can't take the slightest pressure--they collapse because they're not holding on to the Lord, they're not standing on the Word, they're not believing in His promises! They're depending on some damn self-righteousness of their own, some depraved greatness they think they have! Let me tell you, that kind of sanctimonious hypocrisy can't stand the shock treatments of the Devil! It shatters very easily!

111. Only pride hurts!--Humility doesn't really feel it.
112. When a brother is easily offended, it shows he is not very strong & he is pretty unspiritual.
113. Not being able to take chastening in correction for your mistakes is a very poor example of humility.
114. You're glorifying Satan when you talk about your sins. You're glorifying self when you talk about your faults.
115. You have to find out the difference between reality & the imaginary--the truth & the lie.
116. Even an inferiority complex & really being bothered by it, in a way is pride. You're worried about what people think about you.
117. People who are inclined to have a rather superiority complex attitude usually underneath have an inferiority complex & they're very self-conscious about having any people around whom they do feel are superior.
118. Don't any of you get so damned cocky that you don't think you have to consult with others, or ask for counsel & advice, especially from the Lord & the local leaders who are familiar with the situation & the business & the law!
119. One of the safest ways to keep from being made a fool of by God is just to keep reminding everybody that you are a fool, & it's only the Lord that's doing it.
120. You're glorifying Satan when you talk about your sins. You're glorifying self when you talk about your faults, unless you are sincerely confessing them & asking for counsel or forgiveness.
121. The Devil can really tell you a lot of truth about yourself that's horrible, not to speak of the lies he tells you, so if you start listening to the Devil, there's no end to it.
122. When you're trying so much in your own righteousness, your own perfection, it becomes almost impossible to confess your mistakes & shortcomings because it destroys your self-confidence & it nearly shatters your self-reliance because it proves you're not perfect.
123. Pride makes it even harder to forgive yourself, even though you know God will forgive you.
124. Don't feel sorry for yourself & try to blame it on God, & quit. Self-pity is pride, hurt feelings are damnable stinking self, & at the root of every doubt there is sin--the heinous diabolical sin of rebellion against God's Will.
125. One of the biggest dangers you have is to begin thinking it's you instead of God's anointing. The minute you start patting yourself on the back, God will see to it that you're humbled to bring you out of it. He's a jealous God & He wants & deserves the glory & will have no other gods before Him.
126. People who are inclined to have a rather superiority complex attitude, usually underneath have an inferiority complex & they're very self-conscious about having any people around whom they do feel are superior.
127. If we'll just recognise that we're little children who don't know anything, & the Lord is the One Who knows it all, & that He's the only One Who is really wise & knows what He's doing, & that we must just follow Him, then He can really show His power.
128. As long as you're calling, you can expect God to answer. As long as you're seeking, God will show the way. As long as you admit that you're empty, you'll be able to be filled.
129. The hardest words to say in any language are, "I was wrong." If you are not willing to admit you are wrong and confess that you need help & an answer & solution to your problem, God will never have an opportunity to do the miracle you need. That takes humility of the kind only God can give.
130. When Saul became proud & dependent upon himself & his own wisdom & his own arm of the flesh instead of upon the Lord, the Lord had to abase him.
131. If you're sensitive & easily hurt, that shows how proud you are. Some people are actually proud of being sensitive. Some people think that being sensitive is a good thing.
132. When a brother is easily offended, it shows he's not very strong & pretty unspiritual. He was offended about something, which gave him a sense of self-righteousness which ministered to his pride.
133. False prophecies & false interpretations of the Bible are often a result of spiritual pride & the frustrated temptation to want to be a spiritual leader.
134. "Be not as the Old Church, which doth wear clothes which are for show & to protect herself from Me, but bare thyself unto Me in humility & in love... For I will have a new bride, who will love Me & will do My Will & will bear Me children, no longer barren as she (the Old Church) was."
135. That was Saul's main problem, he was a man-pleaser. To make the people happy, to please the people, he disobeyed the Lord.
136. If you have even one talent & God calls on you to do something with it, don't be afraid of what people will think or whether you'll succeed: Just obey! Don't just sit there & do nothing: Stand up & be counted, & let God be the judge!

137. Be sure that your anger is in the right spirit with the meekness & gentleness of a tender & gentle & loving & contrite heart in all humility.

138. The more guilty you are, the more you defend yourself. It's a form of self-righteous pride.

139. The best people are the ones who are willing to do anything that needs to be done! If you're too good to wash dishes or sweep floors or pull weeds or anything that needs to be done when there's nobody else to do it, then you're too good for us!

140. There's no job that should ever be beneath anybody or too low for anybody!

141. One reason why the Lord doesn't give special powers to more people is because they'd become very proud & they wouldn't be able to handle it. They'd become spiritually proud & try to show off.

142. It's your responsibility to stand up for what you feel is right, but the way you do it is what's important, whether in pride & argumentatively, or in humility.

143. Great men are truly humble men. They never pass up a little child without a smile or a kind word or a loving attitude & thoughtfulness.

144. It's better to be humble & bend gracefully when it storms, than to be proud & stiff & break when adversity comes.

(See also No. 75, 203, 287, 293, 302b, 312, 319, 328, 524, 531, 548, 559, 641, 698, 720, 721, 763, 784, 991, 996, 1032, 1112, 1126, 1339, 1372, 1436, 1438, 1547.)

145. 1Sa.2:3 Talk no more so exceeding proudly; let not arrogancy come out of your mouth: for the Lord is a God of knowledge, and by Him actions are weighed.

146. 1Sa.15:17 And Samuel said, When thou was little in thine own sight, wast thou not made the head of the tribes of Israel, and the Lord anointed thee king over Israel?

147. 1Sa.15:24 Saul said unto Samuel, I have sinned: for I have transgressed the commandment of the Lord, thy words: because I feared the people, and obeyed their voice.

148. JOB.6:24,25 Teach me, and I will hold my tongue: and cause me to understand wherein I have erred. How forcible are right words! but what doth your arguing reprove?

149. PSA.9:12b He forgetteth not the cry of the humble.

150. PSA 10:4 The wicked, through the pride of his countenance, will not seek after God: God is not in all his thoughts.

151. PSA 25:9 The meek will He guide in judgment: and the meek will He teach His way.

152. PSA.34:18 The Lord is nigh unto them that are of a broken heart; and saveth such as be of a contrite spirit.

153. PSA.37:11 But the meek shall inherit the Earth; and shall delight themselves in the abundance of peace.

154. PSA.51:17 The sacrifices of God are a broken spirit: a broken and a contrite heart, O God, Thou wilt not despise.

155. PSA.73:6 Therefore pride compasseth them about as a chain; violence covereth them as a garment.

156. PSA.199:78a Let the proud be ashamed.

157. PSA.131:1 Lord, my heart is not haughty, nor mine eyes lofty: neither do I exercise myself in great matters, or in things too high for me.

158. PSA.147:6 The Lord lifteth up the meek: He casteth the wicked down to the ground.

159. PSA.149:4 For the Lord taketh pleasure in His people: He will beautify the meek with Salvation.

160. PRO.11:2 When pride cometh, then cometh shame: but with the lowly is wisdom.

161. PRO.13:10 Only by pride cometh contention: but with the well advised is wisdom..

162. PRO.14:3 In the mouth of the foolish is a rod of pride: but the lips of the wise shall preserve them.

163. PRO.15:33 The fear of the lord is the instruction of wisdom; and before honour is humility.

164. PRO.18:12 Before destruction the heart of man is haughty; and before honour is humility.

165. PRO.21:4 An high look, and a proud heart, and the plowing of the wicked, is sin.

166. PRO.22:4 By humility and the fear of the Lord are riches, and honour, and life.

167. PRO.25:6,7 Put not forth thyself in the presence of the king, and stand not in the place of great men: For better it is that it be said unto thee, Come up hither; than that thou shouldest be put lower in the presence of the prince whom thine eyes have seen.

168. PRO.26:12 Seest thou a man wise in his own conceit? there is more hope of a fool than of him.

169. PRO.27:2 Let another man praise thee, and not thine own mouth; a stranger, and not thine own lips.

170. PRO.28:21 To have respect of persons is not good: for for a piece of bread that man will transgress.

171. PRO.28:25 He that is of a proud heart stirreth up strife: but he that putteth his trust in the Lord shall be made fat.

172. PRO.29:23 A man's pride shall bring him low: but honour shall uphold the humble in spirit.

173. ISA.2:11,12 The lofty looks of man shall be humbled, and the haughtiness of men shall be bowed down, and the Lord alone shall be exalted in that day. For the day of the Lord of hosts shall be upon every one that is proud and lofty, and upon every one that is lifted up; and he shall be brought low.

174. ISA.5:21 Woe unto them that are wise in their own eyes, & prudent in their own sight!

175. ISA.57:15 For thus saith the High and Lofty One that inhabiteth eternity, whose name is Holy; I dwell in the high and holy place, with him also that is of a contrite and humble spirit, to revive the spirit of the humble, and to revive the heart of the contrite ones.

176. JER.45:5a Seekest thou great things for thyself? seek them not.

177. DAN.4:30-33,37 The king spake, and said, Is not this great Babylon, that I have built for the house of the kingdom by the might of my power, and for the honour of my majesty? While the word was in the king's mouth, there fell a voice from Heaven, saying, O king Nebuchadnezzar, to thee it is spoken; The kingdom is departed from thee. And they shall drive thee from men, and thy dwelling shall be with the beasts of the field: they shall make thee to eat grass as oxen, and seven times shall pass over thee, until thou know that the most High ruleth in the kingdom of men, and giveth it to whomsoever He will. The same hour was the thing fulfilled upon Nebuchadnezzar: and he was driven from men, & did eat grass as oxen, and his body was wet with the dew of Heaven, till his hairs were grown like eagle's feathers, and his nails like bird's claws. Now I Nebuchadnezzar praise, extol and honour the King of Heaven, all Whose works are truth, & His ways judgment: and those that walk in pride He is able to abase.

178. DAN.5:18,20,21 O thou king, the most high God gave Nebuchadnezzar thy father a kingdom, and majesty, and glory, and honour. But when his heart was lifted up, and his mind hardened in pride, he was deposed from his kingly throne, and they took his glory from him: And he was driven from the sons of men;...till he knew that the most high God ruled in the kingdom of men, & that He appointeth over it whomsoever He will.

179. OBA.3 The pride of thine heart hath deceived thee, thou that dwellest in the clefts of the rock, whose habitation is high; that saith in his heart, Who shall bring me down to the ground?

180. MIC.6:8 He hath shewed thee, O man, what is good; what doth the Lord require of thee, but to do justly, and to love mercy, and to walk humbly with thy God?

181. MAT.5:5 Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the Earth.

182. MAT.18:4 Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the Kingdom of Heaven.

183. MAT.19:30 But many that are first shall be last; and the last shall be first.

184. MAT.21:5 Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Behold, thy king cometh unto thee, meek, and sitting upon an ass, and a colt the foal of an ass.

185. MAR.12:38-40 And He said unto them in His doctrine, Beware of the scribes, which love to go in long clothing, and love salutations in the market places, And the chief seats in the synagogues, and the uppermost rooms at feasts: Which devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayers: these shall receive greater damnation.

186. LUK.1:48 For He hath regarded the low estate of His handmaiden: for, behold, from henceforth all generations shall call me blessed.

187. LUK.10:21b Thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes.

188. LUK.14:10a When thou art bidden, go and sit down in the lowest room; that when he that bade thee cometh, he may say unto thee, Friend, Go up higher.

189. LUK.22:25-27 He said unto them, The kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them; and they that exercise authority upon them are called benefactors. But ye shall not be so: but he that is greatest among you, let him be as the younger; and he that is chief, as he that doth serve. For whether is greater, he that sitteth at meat, or he that serveth? Is not he that sitteth at meat? but I am among you as He that serveth.

190. JOH.1:27 He it is, who coming after me is preferred before me, whose shoe's latchet I am not worthy to unloose.

191. JOH.5:44 How can ye believe, which receive honour one of another, and seek not the honour that cometh from God only?

192. JOH.12:43 For they loved the praise of men more than the praise of God.

193. JOH.13:5 After that He poureth water into a basin, and began to wash the disciples' feet, and to wipe them with the towel wherewith He was girded.

194. ACT.12:21-23 And upon a set day Herod, arrayed in royal apparel, sat upon his throne, and made an oration unto them. The people gave a shout, saying, It is the voice of a god, not of a man. And immediately the angel of the Lord smote him, because he gave not God the glory: and he was eaten of worms, and gave up the ghost.

195. ROM.2:11 For there is no respect of persons with God.

196. ROM.12:3 For I say, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think; but to think soberly, according as God hath dealt to every man the measure of faith.

197. ROM.12:10b,16 In honour preferring one another. Mind not high things, but condescend to men of low estate. Be not wise in your own conceits.

198. ROM.14:2,3 For one believeth that he may eat all things: another, who is weak, eateth herbs. Let not him that eateth despise him that eateth not; and let not him which eateth not judge him that eateth: for God hath received him.

199. 1CO.3:18 If any man among you seemeth to be wise in this World, let him become a fool, that he may be wise.

200. 1CO.4:6,7 And these things, brethren, I have in a figure transferred to myself and to Apollos for your sakes; that ye might learn in us not to think of men above that which is written, that no one of you be puffed up for one against another. For who maketh thee to differ from another? and what hast thou that thou didst not receive? now if thou didst receive it, why dost thou glory, as if thou hadst not received it?

201. 1CO.8:2 If any man think that he knoweth any thing, he knoweth nothing yet as he ought to know.

202. 1CO.10:12 Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall.

203. 2CO.10:17,18 But he that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord. For not he that commendeth himself is approved, but whom the Lord commendeth.

204. 2CO.12:7 And lest I should be exalted above measure through the abundance of the revelations, there was given to me a thorn in the flesh, the messenger of Satan to buffet me, lest I should be exalted above measure.

205. GAL.1:10 For do I now persuade men, or God? or do I seek to please men? for if I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ.

206. GAL.6:14 But God forbid that I should glory, save in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom the World is crucified unto me, and I unto the World.

207. EPH.5:21 Submitting yourselves one to another in the fear of God.

208. EPH.6:6 Not with eyeservice, as menpleasers; but as the servants of Christ, doing the will of God from the heart.

209. PHI.2:3 Let nothing be done through strife or vainglory; but in lowliness of mind let each esteem other better than themselves.

210. PHI.2:5-8 Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus: Who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God: But made Himself of no reputation, and took upon Him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men: and being found in fashion as a man, He humbled Himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross.

211. COL.3:12 Put on therefore, as the elect of God, holy and beloved, bowels of mercies, kindness, humbleness of mind, meekness, longsuffering.

212. 1TI.3:6 Not a novice, lest being lifted up with pride he fall into the condemnation of the Devil.

213. 2TI.2:25a In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves.

214. JAM.2:1 My brethren, have not the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Lord of glory, with respect of persons.

215. JAM.4:6b God resisteth the proud, but giveth grace unto the humble.

216. JAM.4:10 Humble yourselves in the sight of the Lord, and He shall lift you up.

217. 1PE.3:4b The ornament of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price.

218. 1PE.5:5,6 Likewise, ye younger, submit yourselves unto the elder. Yea, all of you be subject one to another, and be clothed with humility: for God resisteth the proud, and giveth grace to the humble. Humble yourselves therefore under the mighty hand of God, that He may exalt you in due time.

219. JUD.16 These are murmurers, complainers, walking after their own lusts; and their mouth speaketh great swelling words, having men's persons in admiration because of advantage.

(See also DEU.8:12-14; 2KI.5:10-14; MAT.6:1-4; LUK.18:13,14; 22:14-17; JOH.13:14-16; ROM.11:17-21; PHI.2:3-11.)



A Merry heart doeth good like a medicine (Pro.17:22).

1. A sense of humour is a great asset in life!
2. Men show their character in nothing more clearly than by what they think laughable.
3. Laughter is a tranquilizer with no side effects.
4. One of the greatest assets any missionary can have is a strong sense of humour which can help relieve the tension in many a tight situation!
5. Get a big laugh out of yourself! Help others to laugh at you, too!
6. You may be taking the whole thing too seriously, it may not be half as bad as you think, and it might be better just to see the funny side of it all!
7. It's good to be able to laugh at yourself & your ridiculous plans, when God shows you a better way.
8. Humor is enjoying the contrast between the way things are & the way they ought to be, & being able to laugh about it.
9. My mother was always telling funny stories about herself & the crazy things she did, to remind herself & others that the only good thing about her was God!
10. A sense of humour is the ability to see the funny side of a serious situation and to laugh at things when they're not the way they ought to be.
11. Keep humble with a good humour! Laugh at yourself!

(See also No. 20, 34, 35, 49, 142, 159, 198, 237, 240, 338, 353, 640, 1338.)

12. Pro.15:13 A merry heart maketh a cheerful countenance: but by sorrow of the heart the spirit is broken.
13. Pro.15:15 All the days of the afflicted are evil: but he that is of a merry heart hath a continual feast.
14. Pro.17:22 A merry heart doeth good like a medicine: but a broken spirit drieth the bones.



Whatsoever thy hand findeth to do, do it with thy might. But it is good to be zealously affected always in a good thing, & not only when I am present with you (Ecc.9:10; Gal.4:18).

1. Nothing great was ever achieved without inspiration & enthusiasm.
2. Without the spirit you're dead, you stink, it smells, & everybody can sense it!
3. The worst bankrupt in the world is the man who has lost his inspiration. Let him lose everything but inspiration & he will come through again to success.
4. Every calling is great when greatly pursued for God's glory.
5. Every production of genius must be the production of inspiration.
6. Inspiration is the propelling force that is necessary for climbing the ladder of success in any ministry, in any field!
7. No wild enthusiast ever yet could rest,
Till half mankind were like himself possessed!
8. If you'll just fill your heart with the Lord, when you open your mouth it's like just turning it on!
9. The only thing more infectious than enthusiasm is a lack of it.
10. A man who works with his hands is a laborer; a man who works with his hands & his brain is a craftsman; but a man who works with his hands & his brain & his heart is an artist!
11. John Wesley, the founder of the Methodist Church, was once asked how he got his crowds. He replied, "I set myself on fire, & the people come to see me burn."
12. Without any emotion, you're not going to get any motion!
13. If I can just set you on fire, I know you'll set the World on fire!
14. Duty without inspiration becomes laborious, duty with inspiration becomes glorious!
15. Any mountain--the mountain of this life, the mountain of accomplishment, the mountain of obstacles, the mountain of difficulty--if you're going to climb it, has to be worth dying for!
16. If you have lost that compulsion that you just have to make progress & keep moving, that you'd rather die for something rather than live for nothing, then you've lost the martyr spirit.
17. Don't try to get away with operating in your own flesh! You'll show what an absolute fool you are without the Spirit!
18. Whole-heartedness is contagious. Give yourself, if you wish to gain others.
19. What makes you really great is the greatness God gives you--the spirit, the inspiration!
20. What a difference the Spirit makes! It's the emotional thing that really counts, not the technical perfection.
21. When God has given you a role to play & you can play it with divine anointing & real inspiration of the Lord & by the power of His Spirit, you become that creation of God!
22. Faithy sings with authority! It's such divine conviction, nothing & nobody can shake it!
23. God makes the difference between lifeless clay & the alive pulsating energetic body of a human being! It's the breath of God, the anointing & power of God that makes the difference!
24. Without Him you're nothing! You'll fall flat as a flounder!
25. It doesn't matter how technically perfect these bands are, they can be dead as a doornail if they lack the power--that supernatural thing--that mysterious mystical power that really turns people on & makes them trip out!

26. That's what's wrong with the churches today: They've got everything, but they're one helluva failure because they've lost the Spirit--no anointing or power, no real emotion, no dramatic mystical charisma.--The fire's gone out!

27. What good is the furnace when its fire goes out?--It's cold & dark & useless! It's not the furnace, remember, it's the fire that makes it hot!

28. I don't care how much education you have or how much of an orator you are, if you haven't got the fire, it profits nothing!

29. If you haven't got the fire, it's just cold dead icicles--no warmth, no heat!

30. God can inspire you!--Anything you do, washing dishes, taking care of babies, no matter what it is, you can do it in the Spirit!

31. If you just have the letter of the law of duty only, it drags you down & turns you off!

32. If you've got that divine anointing, it makes every little task wonderful!

33. "You've got to have a glory in the thing you do, an everlasting glory that'll carry you through!"

34. If your music doesn't affect people, you're just in the entertainment business!

35. If your witness doesn't make them glad or mad or sad, it's just so much hot air & a waste of time!

36. You can be an anointed worm & become a glowworm for God! Without the anointing you'd just be an ordinary little bug! But with the anointing you become a firefly lighting up the night for God!

37. Every task, whatever it is, without the Spirit is dead & will eat your heart out & kill you! But the Spirit can make anything glorious!

38. The Spirit can turn it on, no matter what it is or who it is, & give it glory & glamour & beauty & joy & life & heat & everything!--You name it! It's the Spirit that makes the difference.

39. Has your singing, music or whatever you do got the power, the fire of God?--If not, it's dead works!--And it'll never set anyone else on fire either! God help you to have the fire-power of God's Spirit in all you do!

40. Don't try to work up glamour--pray down glory!

41. Some people quote Scriptures like so many words without meaning!--Words without music!--The letter without the Spirit! It just means nothing!

42. That's the spirit--sock it to'm! Only the Spirit brings life!

43. Sock it to'm in the Spirit, whatever you do! There's power in the Spirit! "Where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty!" (2Cor.3:17)

44. We've got nothing but God. Let's show them His Spirit, in the power & demonstration of the Spirit! That's all we've got! That's all that keeps us alive! Let's keep on burning, singing, preaching, praising & praying in the Spirit!

45. Whatever you do, for God's sake, do it in the Spirit--not in the flesh--for the flesh profiteth nothing!

46. Do it in the Spirit & it'll live in their hearts forever--by His Spirit!

47. You've got to put some gumption into it! You've got to put some real "umph" into it! Triumph is 10% "try" & 90% "umph"!

48. It's all in how you sing it, it's all in how you say it, it's all in what you put into it that counts!

49. Real inspiration comes with real feeling--really feeling a certain emotion, & both words & music will express it.

50. Please mean it with all your heart & soul & ask God to fill you with His Spirit & empower you to overflow until you absolutely explode!

51. You can't sell to others what you yourself are not sold on!

52. I believe in the one-take Revolution, just turn'm on & let'm go, & the Lord will take care of the inspiration!

53. The Spirit knows what they need, the Spirit knows what will touch their hearts--just let go & let God!

54. Open your mouth & He will fill it, if He's already filled your heart!

55. One who uses many periods is a philosopher; many question marks, a student; many exclamations, a World changer!

56. Mean it with all your heart & soul & ask God to fill you with His Spirit & empower you to overflow until you absolutely explode into your witnessing, litnessing, FFing, whatever it is, until you really explode by the powerful orgasm of the Spirit that'll sow those seeds where they can't get rid of them & they are bound to bring fruit whether they like it or not!

57. Call it what you like: Inspiration, charisma, enthusiasm, emotion, personality or the Spirit.--You've gotta have something that brings you to life, spurs you to action, moves you into motion!

58. Give us power in our witness & real anointing in our words so that we shall really excite them & thrill them & woo them & win them. Really pump it out of us & into them to bear lots of fruit, Lord, lots of real love babies, Thy children, true disciples.

(See also No. 32, 92, 328, 1002, 1091.)

59. 2CH.31:21 And in every work that he began in the service of the house of God, and in the law, and in the commandments, to seek his God, he did it with all his heart, and prospered.

60. ECC.9:10 Whatsoever thy hand findeth to do, do it with thy might; for there is no work, nor device, nor knowledge, nor wisdom, in the grave, whither thou goest.

61. 2CO.8:11,12 Now therefore perform the doing of it; that as there was a readiness to will, so there may be a performance also out of that which ye have. For if there be first a willing mind, it is accepted according to that a man hath, and not according to that he hath not.

62. GAL.4:18 But it is good to be zealously affected always in a good thing, and not only when I am present with you.

64. JEALOUSY --{page 534}--



Jealousy is cruel as the grave: the coals thereof are coals of fire, which hath a most vehement flame (SoS 8:6).

1. Jealousy is selfishness & pride, lack of humility, fear & lack of faith!
2. Jealousy is really a spirit of complaint & murmuring which is born of pride. You murmur because you feel you should be treated better.
3. Jealousy shoots at others & injures herself.
4. In jealousy there is more self-love than love.
5. Suspicion is far more apt to be wrong than right, oftener unjust than just. It is no friend to virtue, & always an enemy to happiness.
6. With people who are not willing to share what they have, it's a common practice for the Lord to often take it away completely, many times giving it to the one with whom they were not willing to share it!
7. Are you having problems in your part of the Father's Estate? Has the Evil Sorcerer sown the evil seeds of jealousy or contention in your Garden?--Are they growing into bitter nagging gnawing choking weeds of discontent, dissension, bitterness & strife?
8. Jealousy makes us smaller in the hearts of our friends, weaker in the eyes of our adversaries, & defenseless in the hands of our enemies.
9. With jealousy, if the Devil can just get you started worrying about or suspecting something, then everything that happens has a little meaning of its own which it was never intended to have or never did have, but the Devil plays it up & exaggerates it!
10. Blowing out the other fellow's candle won't make yours shine any brighter.
11. If love is the major virtue, then hatefulness & selfishness & jealousy must certainly be the major sins!
12. How foolish to throw away everything God gives you for envy & fear & pride!

13. "Thou shalt give unto him that asketh of thee & of him that would borrow of thee, turn not thou away."
14. How can you challenge God's right to supply others in their need when God has so mercifully supplied you in your need?
15. Jealousy turns to hatred of the one you're jealous of.
16. Twinges of jealousy are similar to twinges of selfishness. Let's face it, jealousy is selfishness!
17. Indeed beauty is thine like a rare & priceless jewel, but wouldst thou keep it for thyself alone to enjoy its beauty? The beauty is only radiant when thou dost share its radiance with others, & hold it aloft that it may shine & all may see, & not cover & keep it for thyself alone! But thou must have help to hold up thy arm that its radiance may shine before all. O Jesus! Wouldst that thou shalt reveal Thy love & Thy life which Thou wouldst lay down for many! For she that withholdeth, it tendeth to poverty, but she that scattereth abroad, it increaseth.
18. Beware lest thou hinderest the sure mercies that I have given unto David, & beware lest thou shouldst assay to bottle up the love springs of his forgiveness!
19. Yet shall these same strands of that web that he weaveth entrap thine own heart if thou wilt not share & if thou sharest not thy possessions, but like the spider devourest thine own mate that dost help to weave this web for thee.
20. This web that I weave in My wisdom shall catch many. Be not thou selfish therefore, for there is room for many in the web that I weave for them all.
21. Beware lest thou become thyself entangled with thine own love, so thou canst no longer weave & thou canst no longer run to fix each strand upon the heart of another in the places I have ordained for them, & thou become entrapped in thine own web that I have made to catch the hearts of many.
22. There have been those who have become selfish & proud & jealous. Demanding their exclusive rights, they have lost everything because they weren't willing to share.
23. You can become like a dog in the manger, where you don't want him, but you don't want anybody else to have him either--& you'll lose everything!
24. Foolish, selfish & jealous people!--Do you know what they're willing to do? They're willing to even kill the thing they pretend to love just to keep it away from others! They would rather see it die than have anybody else have it!
25. They'd rather kill it than share it!--That's the ultimate in selfishness!
26. The proud, selfish & jealous kill rather than share! They'd rather kill it than let anybody else have it--which shows they don't really love it! They really only love themselves! That's the ultimate in proud selfish jealousy!
27. In the long run, you won't kill your competition by jealousy, but you'll kill the one you say you love! You may kill his love for you, his faith in you, & even his faith in himself!
28. Selfishness is one of the primary symptoms of insanity! In fact, selfishness really is insanity. The insane seldom think of others, they're usually only thinking of themselves & don't care what happens to other people. Insanity is almost totally selfish & self-centered.
29. "Unto him that hath it shall be given, but unto him that hath not, it shall be taken away even that which he thinketh he hath."
30. "Withhold thou not lest it tend to thy poverty, but scatter thou abroad, & the love which he hath for thee shall increase."
31. "Give & it shall be given unto thee, pressed down, shaken together & running over! And out of the fullness that I have given thee, shalt thou give forth unto many & shalt not covet, neither shalt thou be afraid."
32. "Give & it shall be given unto thee, & spread abroad, & thou shalt gather & share, & thou shalt increase."
33. "For I am He that giveth & will not withhold. Even so be thou like unto Me, for I give without measure & I withhold not."
34. "Therefore share thou & give thou, bestow thou & cast thou abroad among many, & thou shalt increase, for unto him which hath it shall be given! Wherefore, from him which withholdeth, it shall be taken away even that which he thinketh he hath. The more that thou givest, the more it shall be given thee."
35. "Give unto her that is athirst that thou mayest keep that which thou hast! From thy riches thou dost give a little to her who is poor, & from thy abundance & affluence thou shalt share with her that is athirst."
36. When you're jealous you're so God-damned afraid that somebody is going to have a little more than you have, a little of your share. You're so afraid that somehow or another he or she is going to get more attached to somebody else & you won't get your share & you won't be able to hang on & possess. It's just a very selfish egotistical proud jealous desire for private property rights.

37. If God puts you together, what God has put together let not man put asunder. What God has put together, I don't see how any man can put asunder. If God has put you together, nothing is going to separate you. And when anything or anyone says to you, "Oh this is going to separate you, this is going to take her away from you, you're going to lose her, she loves somebody else more than you, she gives him more time than she does you, she enjoys making love to him more than she does you," all these are absolute lies of the Devil!

38. We need to get over the idea that we have absolute ownership, total selfish possession & we don't have to share, when on the other hand we're preaching & practicing sharing all the time up to a point.

39. "Thou shalt not be selfish, but thou shalt share, & he that scattereth abroad, it increaseth, but he that withholdeth it tendeth to poverty."

40. That which you give you have power over.

41. You better be thankful for what you have, even if it's only a little. Be thankful you have to share once in awhile. Be thankful you're able to have something to share once in awhile. As Mrs. Billy Graham said when they asked her, "How can you stand to be married to a man who is gone most of the time?" She said, "I'd rather have a little bit of Billy Graham than a whole lot of somebody else."

42. Marriage makes no difference whatsoever when it comes to sharing each other & with the Lord & His Work & others. Our whole life is sharing. The whole principle of our whole Family is that we share.

43. It's the worst idolatry of all when you worship a person. God will not stand for your making an idol out of your wife!--That's spiritual sin & wickedness & idolatry & adultery & spiritual whoredom, to love your wife more than God! Spiritual adultery is the worst thing in the World, which makes it physical adultery because you withhold her from her own Husband unlawfully, who is God. Adultery is any illegal or unlawful or unloving marriage relationship. But any relationship which is motivated purely by the Lord of God & others, against such there is no law & it couldn't possibly be adultery. The Law of Love is supreme above all laws--the Law of Jesus Christ. Who is Jesus? He's the Bridegroom. Who is your wife? She's Jesus' wife. Then why does He let you have her? Why does He let you have His wife? Because He loved you & had compassion on you, so He loaned you His wife, His Bride!

44. If you're going to be so damned self-righteous & holier-than-thou & hypocritical as to think you're holier than your wife because she has sinned against you, but oh no!, you've never sinned, therefore you're not going to forgive her, then you're the biggest sinner of all! Because self-righteousness is the greatest sin of all!--The only unpardonable sin!

(See also No. 227, 287, 290, 507, 511, 512, 514, 572, 575, 603, 727, 984, 1295, 1378, 1395.)

45. PRO.6:34,35 For jealousy is the rage of a man: therefore he will not spare in the day of vengeance. He will not regard any ransom; neither will he rest content, though thou givest many gifts.

46. PRO.14:30 A sound heart is the life of the flesh: but envy the rottenness of the bones.

47. PRO.27:4 Wrath is cruel, and anger is outrageous; but who is able to stand before envy?

48. SOS.8:6 Set me as a seal upon thine heart, as a seal upon thine arm: for love is strong as death; jealousy is cruel as the grave: the coals thereof are coals of fire, which hath a most vehement flame.

49. MAR.15:10 For he [Pilate] knew that the chief priests had delivered Him [Jesus] for envy.

50. GAL.5:26 Let us not be desirous of vain glory, provoking one another, envying one another.

51. JAM.3:16 For where envying and strife is, there is confusion and every evil work.



Jesus Christ the same yesterday, & today, & forever (Heb.13:8).

1. Jesus is the ultimate of God's spiritual love!
2. Jesus never runs dry! He's a Fountain that flows forever!
3. Jesus is like a picture of God to show us what God is like!
4. God had to make a Man to show us what He was like--a Man of love, compassion, concern for the poor & the afflicted--humble, & yet a revolutionary that changed things which should be changed!
5. Jesus was a revolutionary, He was not a reformist!
6. Jesus is God, in a way, part of God, part of the Trinity or a part of the oneness of God, the same way we're one Family, where husband & wife are one but they're different personalities.
7. Jesus in a sense is the face of God, the manifestation of God. The only way we ever see God is in seeing Jesus.
8. Lift up Jesus, Who said, "If I be lifted up, I will draw all men unto Me!"
9. Jesus is our Message. If they don't want Jesus, they don't want us. They can't have us without Jesus.
10. Without the Way, there is no going;
Without the Truth, there is no knowing;
Without the Life, there is no living;
Without the Christ, there is no giving.
11. God is pictured in His Son Christ Jesus, a Man Who loved everybody, even His enemies. He went about all His life trying to do good & help others, sometimes even the Scribes & Pharisees who finally crucified Him for His dangerous doctrine of Love!
12. Jesus is the Lover of all lovers, Who came for love & lived in love & died for love, that we might live & love forever!
13. God's like a great Iceberg,
Deep beneath the sea,
And Jesus is the Tip,
The surface that we see.
14. It's almost presumptuous to talk to God: Jesus is my Mediator.
15. Rest of the weary, Joy of the sad,
Hope of the dreary, Light of the glad;
Home of the stranger, Strength to the end,
Refuge from danger, Savior and Friend!
16. Jesus was, most of all, the Word of God!
17. Jesus will meet all your needs and solve all your problems! He's just that wonderful, and it's all just that simple!
18. You can talk to God all you want, but it doesn't really ring a bell until you say Jesus!
19. Help us to bring the lonely people the Love that alleviates their loneliness!
20. He's big enough to rule the mighty Universe, yet small enough to live within my heart.
21. Jesus is our Defense Attorney before God, our Judge, defending us from all the fiery darts of the Evil one, that prosecuting attorney, the Accuser of the Saints, Satan himself.
22. We've picked a winner & we can't lose!--Christ Jesus!

23. Jesus was human. He got tired, He got hungry, He got sleepy, He got weary, all the things that happen to you & me. He was subject to all these things even as we are, yet without sin. He was tempted in all points such as we, yet without sin.--That He might be a good High Priest, have compassion on you, know how you feel, know when you're footsore & weary, understand when you've had enough.

24. Jesus was not only the Living Word, the Sermon, but He was also the Living Work, the Sample.

25. Like the Clown in "The Parable", Jesus, the very Son of God, the King of Heaven, ridiculous in human flesh & in the make-up of human society & custom, the Son of God in human flesh, more ridiculous than that good man in the clown suit, came down from the Halls of Heaven to join the circus of the World in order that He could go around & cheer people up & bring them everlasting peace & happiness.

26. Jesus Himself temporarily renounced the rights of His Citizenship in Heaven & became a Citizen of this World, & though He was rich, for our sakes He became poor that we through His poverty might become rich. He not only adapted Himself to our bodily form but also conformed to the human ways of life, custom, language, dress & living that He might understand & love us better & communicate with us on the lowly level of our own human understanding in order that He reach us with His Love, prove to us His compassion & concern & help us understand His message in simple childlike terms that we could understand.

27. Jesus made Himself of no reputation: He was a companion of drunks & harlots & publicans & sinners & was called a liar & a blasphemer & a glutton & a winebibber & demon-possessed!

28. To hell with the empty wind & lies of the Devil! He cannot win! He's already beaten by Christ on the Cross, risen from the tomb! Jesus is the victor over all!--Death & Hell & the grave & all the empty-windy lies of the Evil one!

29. Jesus had to get dirty so that you could be clean.

30. The only hope is Jesus & the only way out is up!

31. Turn your eyes upon Jesus

Look full in His wonderful face

And the things of Earth shall grow strangely dim

In the light of His glory & grace!

32. I know a Name That can still the raging tempest

I know a Name, That can calm the troubled sea.

I know a Name, That can drive away all sorrow.

I know a Name, That is greater than them all!

I know a Name from which comfort I may borrow

When others fail & the tears of anguish fall!

CHORUS:

I Know a Name, a wonderful Name!

That wonderful Name is JESUS!

(See also No.6, 20, 29, 35, 71, 113, 126, 306, 307, 317B, 345, 397, 527, 560, 564, 566, 583, 584, 590, 592, 594, 595, 605, 631, 633, 638, 641, 647, 648, 686, 699, 708, 714, 735, 772, 781, 882, 1120, 1305, 1328, 1348, 1360, 1371, 1390, 1509, 1515.)

33. ISA.9:6 For unto us a Child is born, unto us a Son is given: and the government shall be upon His shoulder: and His Name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace.

34. ISA.11:1-5 And there shall come forth a rod out of the stem of Jesse, and a Branch shall grow out of his roots: And the Spirit of the Lord shall rest upon Him, The spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and might, the spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the Lord; And shall make Him of quick understanding in the fear of the Lord: and He shall not judge after the sight of His eyes, neither reprove after the hearing of His ears: But with righteousness shall He judge the poor, and reprove with equity for the meek of the Earth: and He shall smite the Earth with the rod of His mouth, and with the breath of His lips shall He slay the wicked. And righteousness shall be the girdle of His loins, and faithfulness the girdle of His reins.

35. ISA.53:2-4 For he shall grow out before Him as a tender plant, and as a root out of a dry ground: He hath no form nor comeliness; and when we shall see Him, there is no beauty that we should desire Him. He is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from him: He was despised, and we esteemed Him not. Surely He hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem Him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted.

36. MAT.28:18 And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto Me in Heaven and in Earth.

37. LUK.19:10 For the Son of man is come to seek and to save that which was lost.

38. JOH.1:1-14 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God. All things were made by Him; and without Him was not any thing made that was made. In Him was life; and the life was the light of men. And the light shineth in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not. There was a man sent from God, whose name was John. The same came for a witness, to bear witness of the Light, that all men through Him might believe. He was not that Light, but was sent to bear witness of the Light. That was the true Light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the World. He was in the World, and the World was made by Him, and the World knew Him not. He came unto His own, and His own received Him not. But as many as received Him, to them gave He power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on His Name: Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God, And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld His glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father), full of grace and truth.

39. JOH.1:29 Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the World.

40. JOH.5:20a The Father...sheweth Him all things.

41. JOH.6:35 And Jesus said unto them, I am the bread of life: he that cometh to Me shall never hunger; and he that beliveth on Me shall never thirst.

42. JOH.8:12 Then spake Jesus again unto them, saying, I am the light of the World: he that followeth Me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life.

43. JOH.10:9 I am the door: by Me if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and find pasture.

44. JOH.10:11 I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth His life for the sheep.

45. JOH.13:3a The Father had given all things into His hands.

46. HEB.2:17,18 Wherefore in all things it behooved Him to be made like unto His brethren, that He might be a merciful and faithful high priest in things pertaining to God, to make reconciliation for the sins of the people. For in that He Himself hath suffered being tempted, He is able to succour them that are tempted.

47. HEB.4:14,15 Seeing then that we have a great high priest, that is passed into the Heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast our profession. For we have not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sin.

48. 1JOH.3:5 And ye know that He was manifested to take away our sins; and in Him is no sin.

(See also ISA.53; 54.)



...

2. The Jews are either the best or the worst, there's no in-between. They're all-out for whatever they're out for, whether it's money, sex or Jesus!

...

11. You can only be a true Jew by believing in Jesus, the Jewish Messiah, the Messiah of all--Jews & Gentiles!

...

39. The Israelis have done to the Palestinians exactly what they complained about Hitler doing to them!

...

47. Thank You Jesus for our Jewish Messiah, Jesus Christ. ...

...

55. There's nothing worse than a Godless Jew, & there's nothing better than a Godly one!

...

57. The epitome of the Jewish religion is self-salvation & always has been, Israel leaning on its own arm of flesh instead of trusting God.

...

64. Israel's right?--No!--Never!--Not in the least!--Negative! She's so deep in debt to God she'll never get out! She has no rights, God owes her nothing but trouble & judgement & Hell on Earth like she's given everybody else!

65. The only thing the [Israelis] understand is force!

...

79. The first Jew was Judah, because that's where the term Jew came from!

...

90. They're going to have to come the same way we did--through Jesus! No other Name! ...

91. "He is not a Jew which is one outwardly, but he is a Jew which is one inwardly, that circumcision which is of the heart!" (Ro.2:28,29)

...

95. "I will oppose them who would stone Me, & have heard of Me but have rejected Me, & hate Me, despise & curse Me, & wish not to know Me! But they honour the god of forces! They honour a god their fathers knew not! They glory in the power of their own might which shall fail them!"

...

97. We Jews have the brains, the drive, the fanatical religious fervour & the charismatic genius of inspiration that it takes to make anything a success, including a religion!

...

99. Israel is an integral part of Jewish America for which she will fight to the very death!

...

102. All through the Bible ... [w]hen they were good, they were very very good, but when they were bad, they were horrid!

...

105. The Jews were the first & greatest friends of Jesus Christ, but they were also the first & greatest enemies!

...

110. Virtually every book in the Bible was written by Jews! ...

...

112. The Jews have become the Nazis of Israel & are doing the same thing to the Palestinians that the Nazis did to them!

...

116. For the Jews who reject Jesus & do not believe in His blood, the Mosaic Law still holds, & He said without the shedding of blood there is no remission of sin.

...

119. The Israelis are as much prisoners of their country as any of those damned dissidents in Russia!

...

122. As far as God is concerned, they've had their chance! They cannot come any way but through Jesus. There is nothing special about them now. ...

...

131. All of us Jews have big mouths & we speak what we think!--Especially if we think we're right, & people listen!

...

142. The Jews are trying to erase the memory of Christ & His disciples & the events of the New Testament completely from everything in Israel, including road signs, town names, places, everything!

...

147. Led by Israel, the wasteful West will not only try to keep its foothold in the Mideast, but also try to gain even more room for its cruel boots as it tries to trample the rights of others in Israel's bid to lead the World to War & remain its rulers!

...

159. When we Jews are good, we're very very good!--With Jesus!

...

165. The wheels of God's Omnipotence turn on infinitesimally small pivots, such as Israel!

166. What happens in Israel affects World history!

167. Every great World Empire had to rule Israel or they had not really conquered the World!

168. Look how one little ... country can cause so much trouble & keep the World on the verge of War all the time! Israel is the focal point, the great problem & its greatest danger & nearly everybody knows it!

...

180. The Jews [are] hard to sell, [but] when sold they are the best, the most zealous & influential & terrific witnesses & soul-winners!--Like us!

...

[Bible verses:]

181. LEV.26:36 And upon them that are left alive of you I will send a faintness into their hearts in the lands of their enemies; and the sound of a shaken leaf shall chase them; and they shall flee, as fleeing from a sword; and they shall fall when none pursueth.

182. DEU.4:27 And the Lord shall scatter you among the nations, and ye shall be left few in number among the heathen, whither the Lord shall lead you.

183. DEU.9:6,7 Understand therefore, that the Lord thy God giveth thee not this good land to possess it for thy righteousness; for thou art a stiffnecked people. Remember, and forget not, how thou provokedst the Lord thy God to wrath in the wilderness: from the day that thou didst depart out of the land of Egypt, until ye came unto this place, ye have been rebellious against the Lord.

184. DEU.28:37 And thou shalt become an astonishment, a proverb, and a byword, among all nations whither the Lord shall lead thee.

185. 1KI.9:7 Then will I cut off Israel out of the land which I have given them; and this house, which I have hallowed for My Name, will I cast out of my sight; and Israel shall be a proverb and a byword among all people.

186. 2CH.7:20-22 Then will I pluck them up by the roots out of My land which I have given them; and this house, which I have sanctified for My Name, will I cast out of my sight, and will make it to be a proverb and a

byword among all nations. And this house, which is high, shall be an astonishment to every one that passeth by it; so that he shall say, Why hath the Lord done thus unto this land, and unto this house? And it shall be answered, Because they forsook the Lord God of their fathers, which brought them forth out of the land of Egypt, and laid hold on other gods, and worshipped them, and served them: therefore hath he brought all this evil upon them.

187. ISA.26:10 Let favour be shewed to the wicked, yet will he not learn righteousness: in the land of uprightness will he deal unjustly, and will not behold the majesty of the Lord.

188. ISA.65:2 I have spread out My hands all the day unto a rebellious people, which walketh in a way that was not good, after their own thoughts.

189. JER.8:5 Why then is this people of Jerusalem slidden back by a perpetual backsliding? They hold fast deceit, they refuse to return.

190. JER.16:18 And first I will recompense their iniquity and their sin double; because they have defiled My land, they have filled Mine inheritance with the carcases of their detestable and abominable things.

191. JER.18:15-17 Because my people hath forgotten Me, they have burned incense to vanity, and they have caused them to stumble in their ways from the ancient paths, to walk in paths, in a way not cast up; To make their land desolate, and a perpetual hissing; every one that passeth thereby shall be astonished, and wag his head. I will scatter them as with an east wind before the enemy; I will shew them the back, and not the face, in the day of their calamity.

192. JER.24:9 And I will deliver them to be removed into all the kingdoms of the Earth for their hurt, to be a reproach and a proverb, a taunt and a curse, in all places whither I shall drive them.

193. JER.32:31 For this city hath been to Me as a provocation of Mine anger and of My fury from the day that they built it even unto this day; that I should remove it from before My face.

194. JER.44:8 In that ye provoke me unto wrath with the works of your hands, burning incense unto other gods in the land of Egypt, whither ye be gone to dwell, that ye might cut yourselves off, and that ye might be a curse and a reproach among all the nations of the earth?

195. EZE.5:6 And she hath changed My judgments into wickedness more than the nations, and My statutes more than the countries that are round about her: for they have refused my judgments and My statutes, they have not walked in them.

196. EZE.5:14 Moreover I will make thee waste, and a reproach among the nations that are round about thee, in the sight of all that pass by.

197. EZE.22:4 Thou art become guilty in thy blood that thou hast shed; and hast defiled thyself in thine idols which thou hast made; and thou hast caused thy days to draw near, and art come even unto thy years: therefore have I made thee a reproach unto the heathen, and a mocking to all countries.

198. HOS.14:1 O Israel, return unto the Lord thy God; for thou hast fallen by thine iniquity.

199. MAL.3:7 Even from the days of your fathers ye are gone away from mine ordinances, and have not kept them. Return unto Me, and I will return unto you, saith the Lord of hosts. But ye said, Wherein shall we return?

200. MAT.8:11,12 And I say unto you, That many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven. But the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

201. MAT.23:31-35 Wherefore ye be witnesses unto yourselves, that ye are the children of them which killed the prophets. Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers. Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell? Wherefore, behold, I send unto you prophets, and wise men, and scribes: and some of them ye shall kill and crucify; and some of them shall ye scourge in your synagogues, and persecute them from city to city: That upon you may come all the righteous blood shed upon the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel unto the blood of Zacharias son of Barachias, whom ye slew between the temple and the altar.

202. MAT.23:37 O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not!

203. MAT.27:22,24,25 Pilate saith unto them [the Jewish religious leaders], What shall I do then with Jesus which is called Christ? They all say unto him, Let him be crucified. When Pilate saw that he could prevail nothing, but that rather a tumult was made, he took water, and washed his hands before the multitude, saying, I am innocent of the blood of this just person: see ye to it. Then answered all the people, and said, His blood be on us, and on our children.

204. JOH.8:39-44 They answered and said unto Him, Abraham is our father. Jesus saith unto them, If ye were Abraham's children, ye would do the works of Abraham. But now ye seek to kill Me, a Man that hath told you the truth, which I have heard of God: this did not Abraham. Ye do the deeds of your father. Then said they to Him, We be not born of fornication; we have one Father, even God. Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye

would love Me: for I proceeded forth and came from God; neither came I of Myself, but he sent Me. Why do ye not understand My speech? Even because ye cannot hear My Word. Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.

205. JOH.8:47 He that is of God heareth God's Words: ye therefore hear them not, because ye are not of God.

206. ACT.7:51,52 Ye stiffnecked and uncircumcised in heart and ears, ye do always resist the Holy Ghost: as your fathers did, so do ye. Which of the prophets have not your fathers persecuted? and they have slain them which shewed before of the coming of the Just One; of whom ye have been now the betrayers and murderers.

207. ROM.2:28,29 For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh: But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God.

208. ROM.9:6-8 Not as though the word of God hath taken none effect. For they are not all Israel, which are of Israel: Neither, because they are the seed of Abraham, are they all children: but, In Isaac shall thy seed be called. That is, They which are the children of the flesh, these are not the children of God: but the children of the promise are counted for the seed.

209. ROM.10:21 But to Israel he saith, All day long I have stretched forth My hands unto a disobedient and gainsaying people.

210. 1CO.15:50 Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the Kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption.

211. GAL.3:29 And if ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.

212. 1TH.2:14b,15,16 Jews: Who both killed the Lord Jesus, and their own prophets, and have persecuted us; and they please not God, and are contrary to all men: Forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles that they might be saved, to fill up their sins alway: for the wrath is come upon them to the uttermost.

213. 2TH.2:10b-12 Because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: That they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness.

214. REV.2:9 I know thy works, and tribulation, and poverty, (but thou art rich) and I know the blasphemy of them which say they are Jews, and are not, but are the synagogue of Satan.

215. REV.3:9 Behold, I will make them of the synagogue of Satan, which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie; behold, I will make them to come and worship before thy feet, and to know that I have loved thee.

(See also DEU.28:14-68; ISA.1:4-7,21,22.)



It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God (Heb.10:31).

1. God judges the whole World according to how they treat His children.
2. Who are we, as weak mortals, to question the judgements of an almighty God?
3. This is God's usual pattern: Revival, Reaping, Persecution, Escape, & Judgement!
4. Earthquakes express God's displeasure! The Lord lets the Devil loose to shake people up to get them praying & seeking Him!
5. When God gets to the point that He laughs at His enemies, they're pretty close to the end--their end--& those who have opposed God's children & work have always come to their end.
6. God calls the wicked His sword to afflict His Own people for their sins.
7. Whenever throughout history His people stopped listening & stopped preaching, God stopped talking & leading!
8. God does not like to talk to either deaf, unbelieving, or unheeding ears. So He just shuts up.
9. God's wheels of judgement grind exceeding slow, but they grind exceeding fine.
10. "Damned" doesn't necessarily mean you're going to Hell, it means you're going to be judged!-- Punished!
11. God often delayed His judgements which He had predicted by the prophets until it looked like it wasn't going to happen & the prophet was made to look like a fool, so that the sheep would be divided from the goats, the believers from the scoffers.
12. The Lord can't really finish His job on the wicked until we've finished ours on the righteous!
13. We've been praying, "Stop, the World, we want to get off!" The Lord says, "Get off!--& I'll stop it!"
14. I believe in the justice of God as well as His love & mercy, & I don't think He lets anybody suffer more than they're able to bear or deserve.
15. God always judges His Own children more severely than He does the stupid idiotic dumb ignorant World, because His Own are the most enlightened, have had the most truth & the most Gospel & they are held the most responsible.
16. Lord, in a way You're really kind of waiting on us! So help us to do the job & get it done as soon as possible so You can wind things up.
17. Eight things there be a comet brings
When on high it doth horrid range:
Wind, famine, plague & death to kings,
War, earthquake, floods & direful change!
18. There is only one solution: The judgements of God upon the superpowers who are defiling, wasting, polluting & destroying the earth!
19. God moves kind of slowly, but He moves very thoroughly.
20. Watch out when God runs out of Words: He's about to swing a big stick!
21. The only time God ever really moves fast is in judgement! He gets fed up & then He cracks down & boom, He usually makes it fast & sudden!
22. I believe Russia & Communism are God's judgements on a wicked World!
23. God will judge you by your words! They are your message, your communication, the expression of your thoughts & conviction & will either save you or damn you, one or the other! (Mat.12:36,37)

24. There must be something wrong with the country that's not getting rain. That's a sign of the withdrawal of the blessing of God.--His judgements on the people.

25. God's judgements & justice are always totally righteous & absolutely justified & are given with the utmost perfection & always even tempered with mercy.

26. God is not only a God of love & mercy, kindness & patience & salvation, He's also a consuming fire! He's also a God of justice & destruction & doom for the wicked who do not repent.

27. He who laughs last, laughs best, & God will laugh last, when He heaps His Own judgements on this unrighteous, scornful & Christ-hating generation for their rejection of us & our message.

28. The Lord is shaking up the World through us now spiritually, & some day He is also going to do it literally!

29. God always punishes His Own children first, then He turns around & slaughters their enemies! He sends their enemies in on them to punish them, & then He turns around & punishes the enemies after His kids have had enough.

30. God can't give people the judgement they deserve until He gives them the warning they deserve, & you have the warning. If you don't give the warning, you're holding up history, because God has to postpone the judgement.

31. I don't believe in these theories of "natural disasters," that they're just caused by scientific means. They happen too often in just the right places at the right times to the right people. If thousands of people die, they must have been ripe for judgement or salvation somehow.

32. God usually deals more strictly with His Own children than He does with the World & the Godless, He deals more stringently with those that know better.

33. God deals more with the good people & the best people, the truly good people. He deals with them more strictly & chastises them more as His children than He does with the totally Godless anti-God wicked. They're not His sons, He doesn't even care for them. He doesn't have to destroy them, they destroy themselves.

34. When God allows some terrible disaster, He is either punishing the wicked or He's releasing & relieving the righteous out of this evil life, or both: To some as a punishment, to some as a reward, & it's a reward whether it's good or evil.

35. There comes a time when even good has to use force & violence against evil, & this is certainly clear throughout the Bible, because force & violence is almost the only thing that evil understands.

36. If worse comes to worst & there is no other way to stop your parents but for you to turn around & ask God to curse them so they'll stop bothering you, you'll have to do it.

37. Some of us must survive to be final witnesses to the wicked World in the days of some of its last judgements in the hopes that we may turn many to righteousness as they are stripped of their false security & the deceitfulness of riches & have nowhere to hide but in God! To these we shall be ministers of salvation, but to others we shall be ministers of damnation, only able to remind them why they are being judged & that we told them so & warned them of it long ago.

(See also No.120, 160, 162, 188, 269, 278, 280, 283, 295, 577, 610, 612, 613, 798, 801, 955, 959, 1191, 1192, 1193, 1194, 1195.)

38. 1SA.26:9b For who can stretch forth his hand against the Lord's anointed, and be guiltless?

39. PSA.7:11 God judgeth the righteous, and God is angry with the wicked every day.

40. JER.51:20,21 Thou art my battle axe and weapons of war: for with thee will I break in pieces the nations, and with thee will I destroy kingdoms; And with thee will I break in pieces the horse and his rider; and with thee will I break in pieces the chariot and his rider.

41. MAT.10:34 Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword.

42. JOH.3:18 He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.

43. JOH.12:47 And if any man hear my words, and believe not, I judge him not: for I came not to judge the world, but to save the World.

44. ACT.17:31 Because he hath appointed a day, in the which he will judge the world in righteousness by that man whom he hath ordained; whereof he hath given assurance unto all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead.

45. 1CO.5:5 To deliver such an one unto Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus.

46. HEB.9:27 And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment.

47. HEB.10:31 It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.
48. REV.20:12 And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works.

(See also DEU.21:18-21; DEU.28:14-68; ISA.1:5-7.)

68. KINDNESS & COURTESY --{page 570}--



Be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted (Eph.4:32).

1. It's not the things that can be bought
That are life's richest treasure.
It's just the little gifts of heart
That money cannot measure.
2. The kindly word that's sown today may bear its fruit tomorrow.
3. Only the best behaviour is good enough for daily use in the home.
4. There's a time to wink as well as to see.
5. One way to learn manners is from those who have none.
6. What is readily yielded to courtesy is seldom yielded to force.
7. Little deeds of kindness, little words of love
Help to make Earth happy, like the Heaven above.
8. Art thou lonely, O my brother?
Share thy little with another!
Stretch a hand to one unfriended,
And thy loneliness is ended.
9. Avoid witticisms at the expense of others.
10. Good manners are made up of petty sacrifices.
11. He who sows courtesy, reaps friendship, & he who plants kindness, gathers love.
12. One of the most difficult things to give away is kindness, for it is usually returned.
13. Kindness is a language the dumb can speak & the deaf understand.
14. Kindness is never wasted. If it has no effect on the recipient, at least it benefits the bestower.
15. The only ones you should try to get even with are the ones who have helped you.
16. Treat your friends with care, as if you know that he will one day become your enemy.
17. Even power itself hath not one-half the might of Gentleness.
18. Wherever there is a human being, there is an opportunity for a kindness.
19. Do all the good you can. By all the means you can. In all the ways you can. In all the places you can. At all the times you can. To all the people you can. As long as ever you can.

20. Did you waste the day, or lose it?
 Was it well or poorly spent?
 Did you leave a trail of kindness
 Or a scar of discontent?
21. The true spirit of conversation consists in building on another man's observation, not overturning it.
22. If you don't believe in carefully choosing your words, think of the difference between, "You look like the breath of spring" & "You look like the end of a hard winter".
23. I went to find a friend.
 But couldn't find one anywhere.
 I went to be a friend,
 And friends were everywhere!
24. Courtesy costs nothing, yet it buys things that are priceless.
25. What is compassion?--It is loving to the point of really helping. To be compassionate means to really care & be truly concerned, not just say "I love you" & then walk off & forget it.

(See also No. 50A, 962, 974, 997, 1549.

69. KINGS & SUPPORTERS --{page 572}--



If we have sown unto you spiritual things, is it a great thing if we shall reap your carnal things?
 (1Cor.9:11).

1. God's children & prophets have always needed powerful friends.
2. Let them minister to us of their carnal things, as we minister to them spiritually!
3. Our friends do need some explanation & a little encouragement to clear up some mistaken ideas!
4. You must be strong enough & diplomatic enough to stand up to kings when necessary.
5. Kings are nearly always more interested in preserving the tree & all the branches, than the unseen Sap!
6. We need friends in the System too!--Not all can be soldiers in the Army!
7. With all kings, it's not a matter of how far we can go with them--it's how far are they willing to go with us.
8. All kings eventually think, "Dump the prophet & keep the power & the people!" But God will not tolerate it!
9. Kings think they can have it all & not share it with God, so they wind up with nothing!
10. You must warn the king fairly & in advance that either he does it God's way with His leadership, or "We will not follow you!"
11. It's only fair to warn your kings!--That if they don't honour God's leadership & quit trying to compromise or suppress His message, they're going to lose everything!
12. A friend lost is usually an enemy gained!
13. No Home we establish is going to succeed without friends.
14. Kings love efficiency, they love success, they love to see you save their money, & they don't like waste. They like you to be good stewards of the kingdom.

15. Nothing encourages your donors to give, more than to see how meticulous you are!--To see what excellent care you take of things!
16. Kings always want to be prophets!
17. The prophets' biggest problems were their kings & queens.
18. No revolution has ever been able to get along without outside friends!
19. If they minister to you materially, you owe them a spiritual ministry of encouragement, inspiration, & fellowship.
20. Don't let yourself get into too great a bondage or obligation to anyone so much that you're not free to work as the Lord leads.
21. We must not neglect our friends & kings & queens! We must minister to them! They need our help spiritually. We need their help materially. We are in a bondage of obligation to each other.
22. With kings, when you lose a friend, you gain an enemy.
23. "There leave your blessing"--it's something that stays with people who receive you. (Mt.10:13)
24. Every prophet & man of God had to have their patrons, protectors & providers in order that they might accomplish God's work.
25. It's not easy to minister to kings! But if you want to be faithful to God, the King of kings, you must! Kings have a King over them, & He's your God, & they are His kings! If you want to be benefited & be faithful to God, you're going to have to be faithful to God's kings, & if you're not, you'll be sorry!
26. Kings live in the material realm & minister in the material kingdom, so they like the material rewards, & God gives it to them to share it with you!--So you must praise them for it! It's what every kind lives for, glory & honour!
27. Kings & queens that you only see when you need them, are not going to be your kings & queens very long. The thing that will please them is when they see you're not only interested in their kingdom or their money--but in them!
28. If you are good stewards of the king himself, his needs, his problems, etc., tomorrow you may be good stewards of his kingdom!
29. One of our biggest failings seems to be consideration for other people, especially our kings.
30. Kings love financial efficiency.
31. Kings love good leaders!
32. The very fact that they're willing to be connected with you is protection & support.
33. Somehow let kings know they are part & parcel of your work.
34. Unless you really minister to these kings, you're going to lose them.
35. The reason our kings are rich is because they hang onto it & value it.
36. You must have good communication with kings. Without communication the whole thing can go dead!
37. You have to live with some of these kings to bring them through.
38. We still don't have our literal kingdom yet, we haven't arrived at the Promised Land yet, & we are still dependent upon our kings & we need them! You'll probably always have to deal with kings.--So you might as well get used to it!
39. Kings are conscious of every little thing--that's how they got started & they never get over it. Nothing escapes the king.
40. Kings have their pets, the ones they love, & you can't shove the job on someone else or you'll hurt the king.
41. You have to first spend time with your King of kings, then your King, & then with your kings.
42. Religious kings are the hardest to get along with.
43. These helpers of ours are not neutral. They are pro-Family even if they don't join us.
44. Kings are sometimes our most neglected helpers.
45. It's more difficult for the rich & rulers to forsake all than anyone else, because they have the most to forsake.
46. Our kings are our biggest babies & require constant nursing.
47. If you're leaving the rich North to go to the poor South, raise your support at home first before you go.
48. The rich at home ought to support you. They owe it to you & the Lord & the unevangelised poor of the World.
49. Get your home folks to give to Missions like they ought to, & don't expect the poor peons of the World's undernourished millions to foot your bills!
50. If you can't be on the field, you can at least help the field.
51. If the field is too rough for you, then stay home & support the ones who can take it!

52. If you can't be serving the Lord full-time, at least you can be giving fulltime!
53. In the door-to-door ministry you can continue to minister to a variety of people & have a following better able to support you.
54. Sock it to the home folks & say, "You send me the money & support me!--That's the least you can do!"
55. People will give much more freely & willingly & are much more inspired to give to personalities than organisations. Keep those prayer letters goin'! It's your lifeline!
56. Those who actually visit the field & have seen the people & the need, how hard it is & how the missionaries really live sacrificially, they make the best givers.
57. If you're going to stay free & in fulltime service for the Lord, somebody's got to support you. You've got to be able to ask for it & not be ashamed to ask for it. You've got the worthiest cause in the World!
58. I'd rather have 10,000 little widows sending me a dollar a month, than one big rich man giving me \$10,000 a month, because then I have 10,000 little widows praying for me instead of one big rich man telling me what to do with his money!
59. Anybody that's investing in your business wants to see some results & some dividends, some profit: "What am I getting out of this?"--They want to see some souls saved, some lives changed. They want to see the pictures. They want to hear about what you're doing & you've got to tell them, because if you don't tell people, they're not going to know, & if they don't know, how are they going to support you?
60. People are just like kids when it comes to giving donations. Unless you keep telling them & telling them & telling them you need it, it doesn't sink in!
61. God is with our advocates. He makes them ten feet tall! They are become as the mighty men of David! They cannot lose!
62. When you are accepting a lot of help from others, you are making yourself obligated to them & you're no longer totally free. They receiver is servant to the giver, & the Scripture says, "The borrower is servant to the lender." (Pr.22:7)
63. One of the first things you need to learn if you're going to stay free & in full-time service to the Lord is that somebody's got to support you.
64. I would rather they wouldn't give us anything than to be obligated & bound to compromise for advantage.
65. The kings must not be allowed to overrule the prophets. Don't counsel with kings on spiritual issues. Just inform them.
66. Prophets must learn to work with & appreciate the kings, but not be run by them.
67. The spirit must dominate the flesh always. Don't ever let the physical overrule the spiritual.
68. Don't be so dogmatic about everybody forsaking all. God's got to let a few Systemites stick with it, so they can give their pants to clothe us & their bottom dollar to feed us, or their power & influence to protect us!
69. Although working with kings can create many problems for both you & the king, it can also solve many more.
70. God's children & prophets have always needed powerful friends, kings, protectors & patrons or they could seldom have survived in the face of the bitter opposition aroused by their message of God. God knows we need all the help we can get!
71. The rich are the most neglected class of people there are spiritually.
72. If you are a poor little Home that's starving to death, there's something wrong! God usually supplies His children abundantly! Most of all you probably didn't honour & cultivate your kings & queens & minister to them spiritually, share your spiritual riches with your system friends, so they could in turn share their material riches with you.
73. The poorest people in the World spiritually are the rich materially.
74. The rich materially are the hardest to reach because of our pride. We're ashamed to go to the rich for fear somebody will accuse us of wanting their money!--Why shouldn't we want their money for God's work?
75. The places where we are making the most progress are where we have reached the leaders & the rich first.
76. We should not always be expecting kings to forsake all their riches & their power, because if they did they wouldn't be able to help us any more!
77. We need to honour kings for what they are & where they are, as long as they share their riches with those of us that need them!
78. How are we going to help the poor unless we start with the rich & the powerful who can make it possible?
79. Keeping appointments with System kings is very important!

80. You should have some outstanding king in every area to help you get going: For provision, for good PR with the system, for protection & for defense. The very fact they're willing to be connected with you is protection & support!

81. Kings can become your worst enemies, so handle them prayerfully.

82. You've got to sell your work to the public, share your needs with friends. Tell them, "If God's called you to make money, why aren't you giving it to His work?"

83. Some of the most successful armies in the World have starved to death because they neglected their line of supply!

84. You should have regular meetings & projects for your kings & friends. There should be things they can do for you better than you can do for yourselves. It's easier for them to ask for help for you than for you to ask for help for yourself.

85. Some of the most pitiful people of history were the kings & queens who were the worst prisoners of all, released only by death! There's always a sword hanging over their head.

86. If we would help free our kings from their enemies, they would help free us from ours.

87. How many kingdoms could we be running now if we had taken care of the kings & their money & their equipment & houses they've given us!

88. If you don't use the one little talent your kings give you & invest it properly, they will take it away & give you no more!

89. Nothing escapes the king. They notice how you're dressed, the papers lying in the yard, & the junkers behind the garage!

90. You must do anything you have to do to win them: Bathe their feet or wash their clothes or cook their meals, or stand in for an employee that's sick, or answer the phone, to show them you're concerned about them & not just their kingdom.

91. If you would seek more after the will of your King of kings & the Words of your own King, God would give you more understanding & the love you need for your material kings also.

92. They've usually lived longer & usually know more about a lot of things than you do, & you might profit by their knowledge if you'd listen, even if they're not always right!

93. They may not always be right, but they're still your kings & queens.

94. Kings are seldom satisfied with being kings!--They want to be the voice of God as well.

95. Kings try their best to tell you what to do spiritually as well & that's where you, the prophet, have to draw the line!

96. Gently & tactfully decline when the king tries to tell you how to run the spiritual kingdom.--But try not to offend him.

97. This is a frequent problem with kings who want to be recognised as one of us & yet have not really fully become one of us the hard way as you have. As soon as you give them the slightest bit of recognition or authority to keep them happy, they try to start running the whole show, & then you have to put them down & risk losing them.

98. You need to ask God for wisdom to know how to handle these queens & kings in a diplomatic fashion which will retain their friendship & not lose their help, but still not give them the idea they can take over & run everything.

99. King Saul was God's classic dandy-bad example of a king who refused to obey God's prophet.

100. The rich young ruler is a classic example of a king who wouldn't pay the price of full discipleship.

101. When kings begin to be reluctant to follow the teaching, they'll soon renege on following the teacher as well.

102. Kings think they can have it all & not share it with God, so they wind up with nothing! But the prophet's mistake is not to give the kings fair warning of this.

103. Either kings have got to accept you & your message or reject both!--Including your leadership! They can't have their cake & eat it too!--They've got to share it!

104. Teach them how to live by teaching them how to give.

105. It's only because we minister to them of our spiritual riches that we can expect to receive of their material riches.

106. Most of these kings & queens are living behind the Green Door & are literally love-starved!

107. The less you have to ask for, the less you're obligated to do it their way, & the more freedom you'll have to do as God leads!

108. When you voluntarily withdraw & close up a public ministry, your supporters wonder why, when you were going great guns & they were giving you so much help & support, that you suddenly dropped everything &

retreated for no apparent reason. If they've already heard some of the criticism & scandalous reports, it's apt to make them think maybe they're true because you're on the run.

109. If they thought you were worth supporting, they'd be supporting you! If you'd keep in touch with them & let'm know what you're doing, they'd support you. If you'd write'm faithful prayer letters & thank-you's they'd support you. If you'd get out there & work right in your field & minister, even the poor would support you! And if all else fails & everybody else fails, if you're obeying God & preaching the Gospel & winning souls & disciples & doing His will, God will support you no matter what!

110. Every country has its rich! Every country has its big business moguls & governing kings & queens & princes & princesses who have lots of money & who would be happy to support you if you'd win'm to the Lord & win their love & their friendship & their interest to encourage them to support you.

111. There are plenty of rich people in every country who could help & support you if you would ask God to help you find them & get ahold of them in some way that they would be willing to help you.

(See also Nos. U, 27, 37, 61, 67, 193, 199, 211, 212, 217, 218, 311C, 312A, 333A, 571, 673, 783, 860, 922, 936, 1549.)

112. GEN.39:21 But the Lord was with Joseph, and shewed him mercy, and gave him favour in the sight of the keeper of the prison.

113. PRO.16:14,15 The wrath of a king is as messengers of death: but a wise man will pacify it. In the light of the king's countenance is life; and his favour is as a cloud of the latter rain.

114. PRO.21:1 The king's heart is in the hand of the Lord, as the rivers of water: He turneth it whithersoever He will.

115. ECC.8:2-4 I counsel thee to keep the king's commandment, and that in regard of the oath of God. Be not hasty to go out of his sight: stand not in an evil thing; for he doeth whatsoever pleaseth him. Where the word of a king is, there is power, and who may say unto him, What doest thou?

116. ISA.44:28 That saith of Cyrus, He is my shepherd, and shall perform all my pleasure: even saying to Jerusalem, Thou shalt be built; and to the temple, Thy foundation shall be laid.

117. ISA.45:5,6,13 I am the Lord, and there is none else, there is no God beside me: I girded thee, though thou hast not known me: That they may know from the rising of the sun, and from the west, that there is none beside Me. I am the Lord, and there is none else. I have raised him up in righteousness, and I will direct all his ways: he shall build my city, and he shall let go my captives, not for price nor reward, saith the Lord of hosts.

118. JOH.12:42 Nevertheless among the chief rulers also many believed on Him; but because of the Pharisees they did not confess Him, lest they should be put out of the synagogue.

119. 1TI.6:17,18 Charge them that are rich in this world, that they be not highminded, nor trust in uncertain riches, but in the living God, who giveth us richly all things to enjoy. That they do good, that they be rich in good works, ready to distribute, willing to communicate.



Love is the fulfilling of the law (Rom.13:10).

[HomeARC Note (03/04): *The Charter*, the policy statements, “God’s Law of Love” (01/04) and “Beliefs and Conduct Regarding Relationships and Sexuality” (01/04), and subsequent GNs state the Family’s policies and guidelines regarding sex and living the Law of Love.]

1. Jesus said you only need two laws now: Love God & love others!--God's only law is Love! (Mat.22:37-39)
2. Everything must be judged from the standpoint of love.
3. The Lord often gives room for exceptional cases & makes exceptions to His Own rules, in love & mercy & forgiveness.
4. The law is the standard, but there are always exceptions to the rules, particularly if God's the One Who makes the exceptions!
5. Love is more than righteousness, & mercy is greater than justice!
6. We believe in doing more than keeping the 10 Commandments: Jesus' Law of Love is much stricter & much more difficult!
7. When people are not willing to receive the revelations grace gives, the freedom that grace gives & the new wine that grace gives, they always turn back to their legalism & the law to prove their points, that it is not according to the law, the Bible, not according to Moses, or according to Paul!
8. The Lord is writing a New Testament for a new day & a new age, & we don't have to go by Paul any more!
9. You've either got to go all the way by grace or you've got to go all the way by law!
10. Whatever is done in love is right!
11. God now only judges us according to whether we have love or we don't have love!
12. We are free from Moses' Law because we have learned Jesus' love, which is greater than the Laws of Moses!
13. We believe that anything that is done in love & not strictly forbidden in the Scriptures is perfectly legitimate.
14. God's only law is love! As long as whatever you're doing is in love & not hurting anybody, how can you go wrong?
15. God makes the rules & He can make exceptions to them if He wants to, & do some very unusual things.
16. Apparently you can get away with anything if the Lord decides it's OK! But you'd better make sure He decides.
17. It's the liberating law of love that gives life!--Not the enslaving "letter of the law that killeth."
(2Cor.3:6)
18. What's done in love is not unlawful, according to the Word.--"Against such there is no law." (Gal.4:23)
19. There are always exceptions to every rule.
20. There's no law but Love in the Kingdom of Love, & there are no citizens but lovers! So whatsoever you do in word or in deed, do all to the glory of Love!
21. For those who are really in the Spirit, love is the only rule!
22. God makes the rules, but He also can break them if He wants to.

23. God Himself is violating His Own laws in saving us! He is declaring mercy instead of sacrifice, love instead of justice!

24. Here is the truth in a little creed.

Enough for all the road we go:

In love is all the law we need,

In Christ is all the God we know.

25. God's only law is love & His only Kingdom is Heavenly!

26. If you don't respond to God's new law of Love, He has to enforce His old law of justice.

27. Love is now the law!--God's only law is Love.

28. The Millennium is going to prove that you cannot legislate righteousness, even with the iron rule of Love!

29. It can be sin for others, but it can be righteousness for you! It's all really judged by the motive of your heart.

30. We are free from Moses' law because we have learned God's love.

31. If you go back to the law even on one point, you are obligated to keep the whole law! (Ja.2:10)

32. God's Law is love, not cold, rigid, traditional, self-righteous service.

33. The Love of God is greater than His Laws!--His mercy supersedes His justice!

34. Jesus just preached Love & He was trying not to hurt anybody.--But His very life & His Message exposed the hypocrites & the guilty ones, because it showed them up like black against white or light against darkness for what they really were.

35. Can you be trusted with total life, love, liberty & the freedom of the spirit, or do you have to be kept in the cage of the law, for the transgressors who are ruled only by their own carnal lusts & lack of love?

36. Is it good for God's work? Is it good for His Body? Is it good for you? Does it glorify God, His Body, & edify your own soul? Does it help you or someone else to do a better job for the Lord? Do you even need it for your own good?

37. Nothing that is done in love is wrong!--Whatever is done in love is right!

38. I don't believe in the Ten Commandments, I believe in Jesus' Law of Love! This is far greater & more difficult, & in fact you can't keep either the Ten Commandments or Jesus' Law of Love unless you have Jesus in you, the Spirit of God in you to give you the power & the strength to love others more than you love yourself.

39. By the Old Law, God showed man he couldn't do it by himself. By His new law of Love He showed even more that God was even more righteous than the Old Law, He had even more love & more mercy & it was even more impossible for man to be that good.

40. We have been freed from the bondage of the condemnation of sin by the Law of Love in Christ Jesus. So if it is in love, then it is lawful as far as God is concerned.

41. You've either got to go all the way by grace or you've got to go all the way by law. (Ro.11:6)

42. When it comes to the point that you even have to forego witnessing lest you cause some weak narrow-minded Christian to stumble, then that's where you have to draw the line & go ahead. If it means that you are going to be hampered & all kinds of obstacles put in your way to keep you from doing God's will just because of the petty peevishness of some persnickety narrow-minded self-righteous Christian, then forget it! You cannot stop saving souls just because some people condemn your method. You cannot stop your ministry, you cannot stop the message just because some people condemn your methods. If God has blessed the message with good fruit then the method is good.

43. Love is more than righteousness & mercy is greater than justice.

44. Are you so ruled by His Love that He can liberate you from the rules, or do you have to be kept under the law of works because you cannot be trusted with the liberty of His grace?--The answer is up to you!

45. Have you got enough love to be trusted with enough liberty to live life to the full?

46. It's impossible for anyone to be good according to the Mosaic Law!

47. There is now no other law but love. If it's done in love & all parties concerned are agreed because they love each other, then there is no sin.--It is love!

48. The law of Love supersedes all other laws! Jesus was trying to show how the law of Love was even more strict than the Mosaic Law. The law of Love supersedes the law of Jewish justice without mercy!

49. Church laws & some men's laws make of none effect the law of God, the law of Love.

50. If you know you're acting in love, then you can go ahead by faith according to God's Word & you don't need anything else.

51. You're not guilty of disobeying God's laws as long as whatever you're doing you're doing in love.

52. Man's laws don't always jive with God's laws, especially His Law of Love.

53. Whatsoever we do in word or in deed, we're to do all to the glory of God & we're to do it all in Love. (1Cor.10:31)

54. If we're keeping God's Law of Love, then we'll try not to hurt or offend anybody, & we'll do our best to try to live in Love.

55. Our whole doctrine of Love is contrary to the churches' doctrine of law, hate & enforcement of their doctrine of fear & terror.

56. We lovers of love and the Lord are bound to run afoul of the lovers of the Law & legalism & we cannot possibly please them.

57. Love is Love & law is law, & never the twain shall meet!

58. As far as we're concerned & as far as the New Testament says, for us there is no such thing anymore as adultery if all our sex is in His Love!

59. The only rule we can go by in every case is, is it Love?

60. Jesus said His Law of Love is now all the law, as well as all the prophets. (Mt.22:37-40)

61. Jesus said that the whole works, the whole Bible, is now all fulfilled in the Law of Love!

62. God's only Law is Love!--There is now no other law, no Mosaic Law, no church law, no law against sex. Those old laws don't exist as far as we're concerned. They are only to regulate the ungodly, as He says in 1Tim.1:9.

63. You have to judge every single case on its own merits & its own conditions, as to whether whatever is being done is done in love.

64. We who are Christians, who have God, who have His Love, are no longer under the law. But the sinner who is unsaved, who has rejected Jesus Christ, who does not have God & hasn't got God's Love in his heart, is still under that law. That's the difference.

65. The unsaved are still subject to the laws of the Old Testament, because the laws are for the ungodly & the unrighteous & for the lawbreaker! (1Tim.1:9)

66. We are free from the Law of Moses because we have learned love, which is greater than the Mosaic Law.

67. If we have love, God's Love, & we do everything we do in love, that's better than the Mosaic Law.

68. God's only law is Love, & as long as something is done in love, with real unselfish, even sacrificial love, God's Love, then it is absolutely lawful in God's eyes.

69. The Mosaic Law still exists for others who are still under it, because they don't have love.

70. The Love of God is greater than His laws. (Ro.13:10)

71. If you go back to the law even on one point, you are obligated to keep the whole law. (Ja.2:10)

72. The Lord really preferred the whole thing by grace & faith to begin with, that was His original plan, but He had to crack down with the rules because they didn't follow grace & faith & love. But keeping the rules didn't save them, they only showed them where they were wrong.

73. People who worship marriage are making it a god, & are worshipping the law & a form of legalism. It's a worship of law more than Love, forgiveness or mercy.

74. The worship of marriage laws is a legalism--it's saying that the law is inviolable! The legalists say that nothing can supersede it--not even the love, mercy or the grace of God!--And that if a person violates the law, he cannot be forgiven.

75. The Scribes & Pharisees worship the law more than love! They worship their own self-righteousness more than the righteousness of God! They worship judgement more than mercy, & when it comes right down to it, they worship vengeance more than love!

76. You cannot join the Family of Love without love, no matter who or what you are or what you have.

77. The law came by Moses, but grace, mercy, forgiveness, love & truth came through Jesus Christ, our Salvation. (Jn.1:17)

78. Jesus brought a new law of Love, God's only Law for the lovers of Jesus! Now God's only Law for us is Love, which more than fulfills the Mosaic law.

79. Jesus did not destroy the law, but He fulfilled it & He was the end of it! (Mat.5:17) Therefore, it passed away & is no more. We now only have to keep God's law of Love, His only law--Love!--A stronger law than Moses' law.

80. It all boils down to whether you're going to believe more in Moses or Jesus!

81. Jesus' Law of Love is greater & stricter even than the old Mosaic Law, because now everything you do must be done in His Love! You must have more mercy & more love than the law.

82. God, Who made the laws & the rules, wants you to have mercy & forgiveness & salvation!

83. We do not believe in keeping Moses' Ten Commandments!--We believe in keeping Jesus' Law of Love!

84. We believe in Christ's Law of Love: Love ye one another, & so fulfill ye the law of Christ. (Gal.5:14; 6:2)

85. There's no amount of love that could possibly be illegitimate to try to win a soul to Christ!

86. God's only Law is Love, & if what you're doing you're doing in love & you're not hurting any innocent party, then it is perfectly legal for you, according to God's Law of Love.

87. If a woman withholds herself from her husband, she is the guilty one for not giving that man his due, not the one who helps him in his need. The scripture explicitly forbids mates to withhold themselves from each other, so any woman withholding herself from her husband is breaking the Law of Love & the laws of the New Testament. (1Cor.7:3-5)

88. In sharing, if all parties are not agreed & consenting, then it's wrong. But if any part disagrees who is a guilty party themselves & part of the cause, then that's a very different story. You have to go entirely by love. You say, "But it's hurting the wife." Maybe she deserves to be hurt, maybe she needs it, maybe she denied him! Why is a man out seeking love somewhere else unless his wife is not giving him the kind of love he needs?

89. Any woman who withholds herself from her husband does not love her husband, so if he doesn't get love from his wife, he is free to find it somewhere else according to God's Law of Love! That's God's Word & that's the truth!

90. What difference does it make if a woman pretends openly that she's still a man's wife, if she is denying her husband sexually & is refusing him the rights of a husband. If she is refusing to be wife to him in bed, she is no wife!

91. If the wife herself is denying her husband his due, then it's her own fault if he looks for it somewhere else.

92. How can a woman give her husband unselfish love if she doesn't have the Love of God? And if she doesn't have that love, then it's all right if he gets it somewhere else, & it's her own fault & she's the guilty party.

93. If a woman really loves her husband & she can't give him what he needs, then she should want him to go someplace else where he can get it, if she really loves him.

(See also No.302A, 302C, 531, 576, 591, 592, 594, 635, 647, 648, 719, 1253.)

(See Verses on Law vs. Grace.)



Wherefore, my brethren, ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ (Rom.7:4).

1. Jesus fulfilled the Law, therefore He ended it.
2. The Devil is for justice, he's a legalist, he's almost like the police system, he enforces the law on the lawbreakers!
3. The law is not made for the lawkeepers but the lawbreakers! (1Ti.1:9)
4. If you make the rules too hard, then people get rebellious & throw it all to the wind.
5. Justice has no mercy. Justice just decides if a thing is right or wrong & that's it. But love & mercy, though they know the sinner's wrong, they forgive.
6. Laws too gentle are seldom obeyed; too severe, seldom executed.
7. Laws should be like clothes. They should be made to fit the people they are meant to serve.
8. We believe in obeying the laws of the land, every one we possibly can if we know about it. We believe in trying to be peaceful & not hurting anybody, but helping people. This is our way of life & our message.
9. If we stopped everything some people have doubts about, we couldn't do anything! If they doubt it, they shouldn't do it, but we have to carry on!
10. If you love God & you love others, what do you need with any other laws?--You're not going to do anything to hurt anybody.
11. We are only bound by God's law of love & this gives us a lot of freedom, but in another way it's the most binding law of all!--Because God's law of love not only says you can't steal, can't kill, can't do this, can't do that, but you've got to love everybody!--Which is one of the hardest things of all to do.
12. The law is our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ & the law is what we have to fall back on to solve a lot of situations when we don't have the love or the freedom we should have. If God could trust us with total freedom, if we had that much love & consideration & unselfishness & thoughtfulness & real concern for the other person & not wanting to hurt anybody, but love everybody, then God could trust us with more freedom, but usually He can't, because hardly anybody is that unselfish or loving or thoughtful.
13. There is only this law, the law of love: Love God with all your heart & thy neighbour as thyself.--The only part of the Ten Commandments that you have to keep now! Because if you keep that part, you keep all the rest. In fact, Jesus showed them they were not only keeping the Ten Commandments, but even more, because the Ten Commandments said that they were just to do that which was just & righteous, but under Jesus' Law of Love they were to do more than justice & righteousness, they were to have love & mercy, which is more than justice & righteousness.
14. Although God has given us all this freedom ourselves, we cannot be totally free, because we live in a World that's not free, & that has all kinds of laws against freedom! So you have to watch out you don't break those laws, or at least you have to watch out they don't catch you breaking them.
15. No one has ever been saved by anything but the grace of God through Jesus Christ, whether it was before or since Jesus Christ. We're all children of Abraham by faith. Abraham was saved by faith.
16. If you love your neighbour as yourself you'll put yourself in his place & wonder how you would feel if you were there & wonder what you would want & need to have fulfilled.
17. Love is greater than the law, because God is love. Love is God & God can do no wrong.
18. True love can do no wrong so how can it be under any law? How can it be against any law? He says, "Against such there's no law." (Gal.5:22-23) Against such love there is no law, so how can anything that you do in love be against the law? It may be against man's laws & church laws but it is certainly not against God's laws.

19. As far as God is concerned, there's no law but love except for the sinners who are outside of love & outside of faith & do not have God & reject Christ. They're under the old law, but not we who are believers & Christians & have faith & have Jesus Christ in our hearts & God in His love.

20. We are not judged by the old law, we are judged only by love, how much love we have & how much we give & how much we share.

21. The Lord really preferred the whole thing to be by grace & faith to begin with, that was His original plan. But He had to crack down with the rules because they didn't follow grace & faith & love. But keeping the rules didn't save them, they only showed them they were wrong.

22. We know that all Mosaic laws are null & void as far as we are concerned. Christ was the end of the law, He fulfilled the law & from then on we are no longer under the law.

23. It is impossible for anyone to be good according to the Mosaic Law. The Mosaic Law makes every one of us a sinner, because not one of us can keep it. Nobody has ever kept the Ten Commandments except Jesus Christ Himself, nobody, it's impossible. That's why Jesus had to die for us so that we could be forgiven & be saved by His grace & His mercy & His love without the Law.

24. By the law we are judged for our sins & condemned to die & suffer. But Jesus came to save us by love, by His grace, by His mercy, showing that love & mercy are greater than the law.

25. Our whole doctrine of love is contrary to their doctrine of hate, their doctrine of enforcement & their doctrine of fear & terror.--It's totally contrary to their whole way. Therefore, of course, we lovers of love & the Lord are going to run afoul of the lovers of the law & legalism & we cannot possibly please them, because, love is love & law is law & never the twain shall meet.

26. God's only law is love, there is now no other law, no Mosaic Law, no church law, no law against adultery.--Those laws don't exist as far as we're concerned. They are only to regulate the ungodly, as He says in 1Tim.1:9, & by which the unrighteous who are violating the law of God will be judged.

27. God's love is absolutely lawful in God's eyes no matter whether it be a sin in the eyes of the churches & a crime in the eyes of man, it's still absolutely innocent in the eyes of God if it's according to love.

28. God now only judges according to whether we have love or no love--whether we have love or hate--whether what we do is done in love or selfishness & lack of love. The one who had love & acted in love is the innocent party & the one who acted without love because he or she had no love is the guilty party.

29. If you know you're acting in love, then you can go ahead by faith according to God's word & you don't need anything else, you don't need any other laws to go by, you don't need any other laws to confirm it, you're not guilty of disobeying God's laws as long as whatever you're doing you're doing in love.

30. If you are strong enough in spirit & filled with His love, you can be trusted with this liberty as a useful tool to help others. But if you are weak in the flesh, full of selfish lusts & play with it foolishly like a dangerous toy, it will only harm you & others & hinder the work of God.

31. When people start going back to these old legalistic Scriptures, even some of the legalism of Paul, then they are turning their backs on the freedom of grace & the liberty which the Lord has given us & the new wine & the new truth & the new revelations which are for us today, here & now, not for Paul & his day, much less for Moses & his day.

32. Our only rule & God's only law is love. You must have the love of God in your heart, you must believe in Jesus His Son & you must love one another & your neighbour as yourself.

33. God's law is love, not a cold, rigid, traditional, self-righteous service according to false, unscriptural & ungodly rules of certain religions.

34. God can break His Own rules if He wants to. If in this last generation He wants to throw out the whole rulebook & give you a whole new set of love rules to go by, God is the One Who makes the rules--not men!

35. God threw out the whole Mosaic rulebook when He started the Christian revolution back in the time of the Apostles. He practically threw out most of the Old Testament, the Mosaic Laws & the Ten Commandments & the old legalism & started all over again with nothing but the rule of love!

36. Each generation of the Church has taken some new step toward freedom from such harsh restrictions of the law to the total freedom of love through the grace of God, from material symbolisms & mechanical ceremonialism to spiritual realities & total spiritual liberty--"the spirits of just men set free"!

37. The old Law of Moses spelled out in detail how & what you ought to do if you are loving & love others, that you won't do this & you will do that, etc. But once you've got the Spirit Herself, once you've got Love itself, you don't need that old Law because you just won't do those things you shouldn't do & you will voluntarily do those things you should do.

(See also No.S, 25, 45, 73A, 91, 121, 302C, 317B, 531, 576, 592, 594, 605, 635, 647, 648, 696, 999, 1004, 1253, 1439, 1500, 1548.)

38. MAT.5:17 Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill.

39. MAT.7:12 Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets.

40. LUK.11:41b Behold, all things are clean unto you.

41. JOH.1:17 For the law was given by Moses, but grace and truth came by Jesus Christ.

42. ACT.13:39 And by him all that believe are justified from all things, from which ye could not be justified by the law of Moses.

43. ROM.3:20 Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for by the law is the knowledge of sin.

44. ROM.6:14 For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace.

45. ROM.7:4 Wherefore, my brethren, ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ.

46. ROM.7:6 But now we are delivered from the law, that being dead wherein we were held; that we should serve in newness of spirit, and not in the oldness of the letter.

47. ROM.10:4 For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth.

48. ROM.13:8 Owe no man any thing, but to love one another: for he that loveth another hath fulfilled the law.

49. ROM.13:10b Love is the fulfilling of the law.

50. ROM.14:20 For meat destroy not the work of God. All things indeed are pure; but it is evil for that man who eateth with offence.

51. 1CO.6:12 All things are lawful unto me, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawful for me, but I will not be brought under the power of any.

52. 2CO.3:6b For the letter killeth, but the spirit giveth life.

53. GAL.3:24 Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith.

54. GAL.5:18 But if ye be led of the Spirit, ye are not under the law.

55. 1TI.1:9 Knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for manslayers,

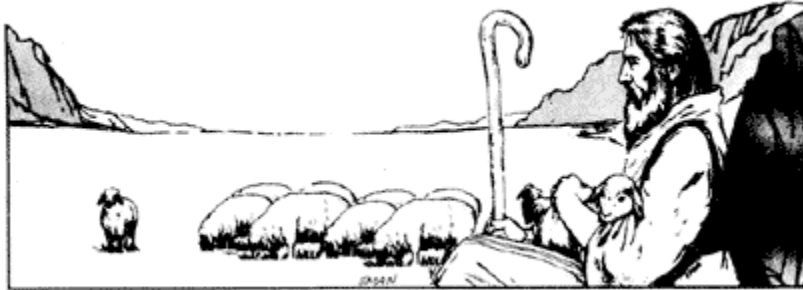
56. TIT.1:15 Unto the pure all things are pure: but unto them that are defiled and unbelieving is nothing pure; but even their mind and conscience is defiled.

57. HEB.10:9 Then said he, Lo, I come to do Thy Will, O God. He taketh away the first, that he may establish the second.

58. JAM.1:25 But whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth therein, he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed.

59. JAM.2:8 If ye fulfill the royal law according to the scripture, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself, ye do well.

(See also ROM.14:1-23; 1CO.8:8-13; HEB.10:1-5.)



Be thou diligent to know the state of thy flocks, & look well to thy herds (Pro.27:23).

1. Great leaders are usually the humblest of all people, willing to do anything, & really don't feel worthy of their great responsibility at all.
2. Some people don't want to be leaders because they'd have to make decisions which might be wrong & which they would be blamed for.
3. He is not truly great who is not greatly good.
4. Most of the inconspicuous gifts are the ones leaders need most--discernment, knowledge, wisdom & faith.
5. If you know His Word & how to wield this rod of His authority--you can use it to save your flock from the wolves & to lead your little lambs into the safety of His Fold forever!
6. Lead your sheep, don't drive them!
7. It takes a small man, insecure in his authority, to keep insisting on respect, loyalty and obedience, instead of inspiring it voluntarily in his followers' hearts by his own loving and considerate example.
8. If you want a place in the sun, you have to expect some blisters.
9. You can't be trusted to rule over the Kingdom of God if you haven't learned to rule your own family in love, in patience, in faith, in meekness, in gentleness & in quietness. (1Ti.3:5)
10. The greatest leaders that God has chosen usually don't want to be leaders--they are forced into it by the Lord!
11. Greatness in leadership starts with the ability to be a good follower.
12. Every good leader must be aware of the practical as well as concerned about the spiritual.
13. You'd better enjoy being a buck private while you can--with very little worry or responsibility, credit or blame, cursing or fame. One day you may be the general with most of the work, nearly all the worry--& usually, all the blame!
14. Don't envy your leaders!--Pity them!--Pray for them!--Help them!
15. If you're not afraid to face the music, you may some day lead the band.
16. You'll never fully appreciate your leaders till you have to join them in leadership!
17. Goats are very independent, whereas sheep are pretty helpless & can't exist without man. So let the goats take care of themselves, & you get busy taking care of the sheep!
18. Sheep cannot find the way without the Shepherd's voice.
19. It's much easier to be a prophet of doom than a healer of wounds and a feeder of sheep.
20. One of the signs of a good leader is always keeping your eyes open and checking to see that everything is running smoothly--that the snags are all ironed out--that everything is getting done that should be done!
21. Always remember, in whatever you do, that the mark of a good leader is to always consult with others. But be sure when you consult, to consult with the right people!
22. If the shepherd will feed the sheep, the sheep will feed the shepherd!
23. I'm a firm believer in dictatorship--you don't ask dumb sheep what to do, you tell them what to do!--But you do hear their bleatings!

24. You'll be much more merciful to those who follow you if you yourself realise how much you need mercy!
25. Jesus will still lead you after I'm gone. Don't worry about it. The same One that's the Head of us right now is still going to be the Head of you then, & that's Jesus!
26. Rank & riches are chains of gold, but still chains.
27. The quicker you leaders learn to confess your mistakes, the more others will trust & love you, & the more the Lord will use you.
28. Pastors have to be plodders with lots of patience, like farmers.
29. A guy who's a leader has gotta be a fighter, he's gotta take sides!--God's side!
30. A good leader should save himself for the major decisions and heavy burdens and responsibilities of leadership that only he can handle.
31. Any truly good leader welcomes questions, suggestions and even contrary ideas to his own!
32. A chain of command system is no stronger than its weakest link.
33. Most good leaders don't want to be leaders--they have to be!
34. Complete dependency on the Lord is the secret of good leadership.
35. The leader, above all, must be a man in tune with God.
36. The leader has to be thinking, praying, planning and deciding all the time, at least one jump ahead of his followers.
37. Let the leader choose his own team.
38. Titles somewhat clarify for all of us, including each of you, the extent of your authority & the size of your responsibilities, as well as their limitations.
39. Every great leader has had his Judases, including Jesus.
40. If the officer has a question or feels a doubt about executing an important order from a superior officer, then it is his responsibility to voice it to the superior officer. And if he won't listen, then go to a higher authority.
41. Good leaders are usually born--as well as made. They're the brief & final end product of God's infinite care, designing & preparation.
42. If there's anything leaders need, it's wisdom & knowledge! Wisdom is how to use the knowledge of God.
43. The boss has to be able to do everything, & he's not a good boss unless he's a servant of all & is able to do any task.
44. If you haven't learned to be a follower, you'll never be able to be a leader.
45. If the power of your position goes to your head so that you forget what you're there for, you're simply proving that you're still a novice, filled with pride & not ready to be a leader.
46. Your people, your flock, are only going to be as interested in the Word as you are, unless they're unusual.--And the flocks will usually be no better than their leadership.
47. Undershepherds who are so busy with the sheep that they haven't time to listen to the Shepherd's instructions are going to have nothing but trouble.
48. We might be able to do without an arm or a leg or a few fingers, but the Body will not survive very long without the Head!
49. The job of a leader is to try to get other people to do things.
50. One of the worst things in the World you can do, especially to a public leader or to a teacher or pastor or a father or a husband, is to undermine faith & confidence in his leadership.
51. The Lord never breaks His own chain of command, unless some link is failing.
52. I don't think you can ever be a good leader, a wise, humble leader, until you've pulled some awful boners & made some terrible mistakes & committed a few sins & really blown it a few times yourself. For one thing, you'll never be humble enough unless you do!
53. Most good leaders don't want to be leaders--they know what a big job it is & what a serious responsibility, & they often do not feel capable. These are the best leaders, because then they will not be cocky & self-confident, but depend on!
54. That's what it often costs to be a leader: "To live in fame & die in flame!"--Sometimes they have to live in flame & die in shame before the World.
55. Those four unseen gifts are the most important gifts that any leader can have: Knowledge, wisdom, discernment & faith. In fact as far as I'm concerned you can't even be a leader without those gifts, or at least some of them.
56. You'll never be a truly great shepherd until you learn to have compassion on the sheep--until you learn to have great love and great mercy.

57. A leader has two important characteristics: First, he is going somewhere. Second, he is able to persuade others to go with him.

58. When the leader's gone, if the cement of the Work was only his personality, the thing falls apart. But if the cement was strong teaching & doctrine to perpetuate the message & the method, then the work carries on pretty much as the leader founded it & led it.

59. Leaders have to face their fears & think about the worst thing that could happen & be prepared with an alternative.

60. A good executive is not a boss!--He is a servant!

61. Any general who doesn't listen to his officers & doesn't pay any attention to his men is going to be in trouble!

62. Only a novice wants to be the boss and order everybody around!

63. It is only the brand-new, not-yet-dry-behind-the-ears baby executive, who tries to run everything.

64. The executive hand is merely the power who helps to pump out the people-power!

65. A chief executive should only be a guide, who in turn is guided himself by God.

66. A tyrannical spirit makes a leader like the Devil, the first would-be dictator, who didn't want to listen to either God or the other angelic forces!

67. "He that is greatest among you must be servant of all!" (Mt.23:11)

68. As you love God and are thankful for Him, so you should love and be thankful for your leaders, for they care for your souls and have the burden of all of you. (Heb.13:17)

69. One of the greatest dangers of leadership is man-worship!

70. The job of a good leader is not a popular job. You need to teach them to love you, but also to fear and obey you.

71. Let them run themselves and tell themselves what to do, with your oversight and guidance and spiritual leadership.

72. You need to create a machine that can run itself, with you at the wheel and sometimes at the controls.

73. Every good leader is the servant of his people.

74. People get the kind of leaders they want and deserve.

75. "Blessed is he that loveth and ruleth My people well."

76. The boss may not always be right, but he still is the boss.

77. Little men want to do it all themselves. Big men get others to do it for them.

78. People are persuaded more by the depth of your conviction than by the height of your logic--more by your own enthusiasm than by any proof you can offer.

79. A leader shouldn't do anything he can get someone else to do for him--except to set an example.

80. We are now in our training period in this life in preparation for ruling the world in the next!

81. Leadership is the art of getting someone else to do something that you want done, because he wants to do it.

82. You can never become a leader without doing more than you are paid for.

83. The training of men is the chief job of any executive.

84. Be first a problem preventer, so you won't have to be a problem solver.

85. A great man shows his greatness by the way he treats little men.

86. Genius is 1% inspiration & 99% perspiration.

87. He who undermines his leader destroys his own house.

88. Holy Ghost power picks a leader for the hour!

89. There's no such thing as horizontal control in the Kingdom of God, it's strictly vertical from the top down!

90. God give us men! A time like this demands

Strong minds, great hearts, true faith & ready hands!

Men whom the lust of office does not kill,

Men whom the spoils of office cannot buy,

Men who possess opinions & a will,

Men who love honor, men who do not lie.

91. The price of greatness is responsibility.

92. That man is great who can use the brains of others to carry out his work.

93. Power may justly be compared to a great river; while kept within its bounds it is both beautiful & useful, but when it overflows its banks, it is then too impetuous to be stemmed; it bears down all before it, & brings

destruction & desolation wherever it comes. Power does not corrupt men; but fools, if they get into a position of power, corrupt power.

94. The Buck stops here!--With you!

95. One of the tests of leadership is the ability to recognise a problem before it becomes an emergency.

96. Nearly all men can stand adversity, but if you want to test a man's character, give him power.

97. By working faithfully eight hours a day, you may eventually get to be a boss & work twelve hours a day.

98. You can always tell who the boss is: He's the one who watches the clock during coffee breaks.

99. Censure is the tax a man pays to the public for being eminent.

100. It is better to have a lion at the head of an army of sheep, than a sheep at the head of an army of lions!

101. What a heavy burden is a name that has become famous!

102. Every noble crown is, & on earth will ever be, a crown of thorns.

103. "When you are tired you need to rest. When you are weary you need to retire from the fray & give the battle to others. You need to know when to fight & when to be still, when to give & when to save, when to work & when to play, when to feed & when to pray."

104. "As a shepherdess of the flock you must feed of the firstfruits, like the husbandman & the shepherd, for strength. You must feed of the flock as well as care for them, & they must care for you. They must minister to you as you minister to them."

105. "When you save others, indeed yourself you cannot save, but there are times when you must save yourself if you are going to save others & still others & yet others."

106. Men of force are men of faults, & their biggest fault is to keep on going in their own force, instead of letting the Lord do it!

107. Just conducting business & shearing the sheep & telling the tale of the wool is not all there is to being a shepherd. You have to take care of those sheep as well, feed them & protect them, provide for them, love them & keep them in fellowship with each other, or you are failing in your task as a shepherd!

108. If your preaching is not going to affect your living & the lives of others who live with you, if you're not meddling in their daily affairs & making sure to keep things straight, if you're not meddling in their spiritual life, if you're not meddling with their daily needs, if you're not meddling with whether they're happy & satisfied & contented & loved enough & whatever they need, then your preaching is just so much hot air! If your preaching hasn't gone to meddling, it's not good enough!

109. If we don't care for the lambs, the Words are of no avail.

110. Don't just take people's word for it--investigate yourself when there's trouble. As a leader, it's your business to get nosy & to poke & probe & question & find out what the problem is!

111. Don't let others drag you down to their level, you pull them up to yours!

112. Even an ordinary horse can be outstanding in his own field. If you're leading people to the Lord, you are a leader in soul-winning.

113. Sometimes you have to get a little tough to get action!

114. The crown so beauteous to them that behold it, is so heavy to them that wear it!

115. Responsibility can humble you quicker than anything!

116. It's my job just to give you the general picture in the general direction, & it's your job to figure out the details & the battles & the officers & the modes of attack & all the rest.

117. With the mantle of the office comes the anointing of power of the Spirit.

118. Every great world leader, every great man, was a fanatic that some people hated & some people adored.

119. Lives of great men all remind us

That we can make our lives sublime,

And when departing leave behind us

Footprints in the sands of time!

120. If much has been committed to you, much is going to be required of you. (Lk.12:48)

121. None knows the weight so heavy as he who wears the crown!

122. Great gifts are a great responsibility.

123. With great responsibility comes great grace.

124. If there is no truly controlling head but God, they cannot kill it.

125. Those who only follow a man go back when the man is gone. But those who follow the Spirit will go on forever!

126. Men of force are men of faults.

127. The greatest men in the Bible were guys that made terrible mistakes & realized they were sinners and that they needed God!

128. When the congregation falls asleep, there is only one thing to do--provide the usher with a sharp stick & have him prod the preacher!

129. I don't care how gifted, how talented, how artistic, how cultured, how beautiful, how strong, how educated you are, I don't care what you've got, if you're not 100% loyal, God can't use you!

130. A lot of people seem to like to scatter seed, but not many people seem to want to take care of the results--to patiently, painstakingly train these babes into good leaders!

131. The man-worshippers stop when the man stops!--The God-worshippers keep on going for God!

132. A speech is like a wheel--the longer the spoke, the greater the tire, which is reserved only for big wheels!

133. No one should have all the say, not even God does this!

134. It is a fine thing to have ability, but the ability to discover ability in others is the true test of leadership.

135. They that bear the cross shall wear the crown.

136. Saul's main problem as a leader was that he was a man-pleaser.

137. God's Word says not for the shepherd to follow the sheep, but for the shepherd to go forth & lead the sheep.

138. "Woe to the children of David that hear not the Word of their Shepherd & care not for the sheep!"

139. "Behold, I will hold thee accountable in the day of Judgement for this thing which thou hast done, to withhold the words of My Servant from them that die & are smitten & driven away!"

140. Over-leaders must love the sheep & care for the shepherds.

141. If a leader is anything at all, he is a leader of men, not a mere leader of papers!--But he must push papers too!

142. Young new novice leaders sometimes react rather suddenly & violently because they're unsure of themselves & insecure, so they think they have to put up a bold front of self-assurance. But to come in storming & berating somebody before you've heard all sides of the story is not a good sample, neither are you a very good judge or a good leader.

143. The reason the Ten Commandments are short & sweet is because they were handed down direct, not through several committees.

144. The test of a preacher is that his congregation goes away not saying, "What a lovely sermon," but saying, "I will do something!"

145. It's one thing to rule & win people with the love of the Lord, it's another thing to woo & win them just to yourself & the love of your carnal flesh.

146. Watch out about those man-worshippers who fall all over themselves to lick your boots. If something happens to you & you fall or go astray, they'll probably be the first ones to desert you & kick you with theirs!

147. The difference between a real shepherd & a hireling is simple: A hireling is there purely for selfish reasons for what he himself can gain out of it, whereas the true shepherd is willing to lose everything & lay down even his life for the sheep.

148. The worst thing leaders can do to each other is to cut each other down in public, because it destroys the confidence of the sheep.

149. Are you inclined to be too easy on people because you want them to be easy on you? Do you let them get away with more than you should? That's not fair to them--or yourself!

150. When you get so proud & so smart that you can't stand somebody making a suggestion or a correction, you're too proud & too smart!

151. Spiritual maturity is not a matter of years or time, although that helps, but it's just a matter of your connection with the Lord & His Word & your obedience & humility.

152. God has ways of putting people down who get too exalted about their position & their lofty ministry.

153. There is no army in the World, there is no organisation in the World, there is no business in the World, there is not even one family in the World that doesn't have to have a boss!

154. The shepherd, too, must sit upon the hillside & pipe sweet music unto his Creator in praises, to bring peace to his own soul, as well as his sheep.

155. The shepherd himself has to be fed with the Hand of his Creator & the Hand of his Shepherd, if he's going to feed the sheep & bring them the same peace.

156. You cannot even make a move until you first have found that place of rest & calm & sweet peace in the Lord, & have sat down & played your pipe to the Lord. It's all a spiritual thing. If you try to do it in the flesh, you might as well quit.

157. The sheep cannot lead themselves, they have to have a shepherd.
158. You have to learn how to first of all rest at the Lord's feet.
159. The secret of that calm & peace & rest & patience & faith & love is that resting in the Lord! Getting calm before the Lord & praising the Lord & seeking the Lord first. And then you just impart this to the sheep. It's a spirit you impart, that very same atmosphere.
160. They are the diamonds of dust, the smallest of all creations! They are the ones that shine! We are like the dirt on the floor which will catch them, & on which they can rest until Thy breath catches them & they float again into the sunlight. Help us to stay out of the limelight--help us just to be there to catch them when they fall--just to be there to give them a place to land.
161. The shepherd has got to not only lead the sheep, but if they don't follow, then he's got to get behind them & beat them with the rod & sic the dogs on them!
162. A speaker who does not strike oil in ten minutes should stop boring.
163. You cannot take a vacation for a minute when you're on duty & you're the shepherd of the flock!-- You've got to watch everything that's happening, you've got to look for trouble before it happens.
164. Spiritual leaders are called, as well as made. It's the Spirit that makes the choice. God's anointing is what makes the difference. You can teach a spiritual leader to be a little more practical & organized, but you can't make a person have that anointing & calling of a spiritual ministry. God does that.
165. Be a person who always tries to speak well of people & who casts a veil over countless sins. (1Pe.4:8)
166. You who have the burden of great responsibility & great decision-making which can influence a lot of people, watch out! Because if you make a mistake, unto you is the greater condemnation! (Jas.3:1) The higher you go, the longer & further you may have to fall!
167. In any new job a person has to be given a little time to learn, & you must forgive a few mistakes in the beginning.
168. A leader will keep on course & try to keep others on course in the direction he's going & pull them his way. But if you have a tendency to be pulled other ways by followers, then you're not much of a leader if you can't buck the tide!
169. Others may, you cannot. Other people might be able to get away with something, but because of your position you can't.
170. You can't treat everybody the same: Some people are so insensitive in the Spirit it takes an open rebuke, others are so sensitive it only takes a hint.
171. You can't run any kind of a family, you can't run a church, you can't run a Home or anything unless you have leaders who are firm & forceful & can see that the job gets done, or make people do the job, & tell them to get out if they don't want to do it.
172. You need to relegate more authority & responsibility to others so that you don't carry such a heavy load yourself. Do only those things no other can do.
173. If the loads get too heavy or hard, it's because you're allowing yourself to be burdened & yoked to heavy responsibilities you should not have, & that others should share or carry. For "My yoke is easy & My burden is light" Jesus says!
174. Sometimes you give people jobs because you know they are capable of handling them. Other times you give people jobs to give them an opportunity to prove if they can handle them, & sometimes you give people jobs to see if they can't handle them. And sometimes you give people jobs hoping they will learn them even in spite of a few mistakes.
175. I don't usually like to give orders, I just drop hints. If they don't take the hint, then I make a suggestion. But if they don't take the suggestion, then I give an order!
176. The main job of a shepherd is to keep in touch with the Lord--to begin the day with sweet music, praise & fellowship.
177. It is the attending shepherd's God-given responsibility for his flock's sake to discern, question & judge outcoming prophecies.
178. If the leader has doubts, his underleaders are bound to suffer, they're bound to feel it & know it & communicate it right on down the line.
179. I don't appoint a team, I appoint a man to choose his own team & I hold him responsible to work out the details.
180. You've got to be up on your data & your stats to know your stock & the stats of your flocks! God's Word says a good shepherd knows the state of his flocks, (Pr.27:23) & you need to have these stats in mind.

181. If you are not leading anybody else but a sister with a child or children, you have become a spiritual leader whether you like it or not & whether you know it or not. And you must learn how to govern your own family or you will never learn how to govern the Family of God.

182. It's always easier for you or your favourite few to do it than to teach somebody else. You'd rather have the ones you've already trained, the chosen few you've had at it months or years, even when the job gets bigger than they can handle.

183. God gives us a lot of leeway & choice, believe it or not; so I think we ought to try to do the same with others, if possible. You'll get a lot better cooperation that way, & go a lot further in the long run than just commandeering forces, & shanghaiing labourers for your job, without consultation or sufficient prayer & consent!

184. I frankly believe that people should usually start at the bottom of the ladder & work their way up to the top through every rung in between, & where we have not followed this procedure, we have suffered from inexperienced & insufficiently trained leadership later.

185. The forty days & nights that Moses spent on the mountain solved more problems than all the months he spent sitting personally on his throne trying to judge all of their affairs himself.

186. When Moses finally saw what a hopeless mess it was & that he could never solve all the problems, he went alone on a mountain & virtually solved all the nation's problems for centuries by getting two tablets of stone & writing it down! Those written laws did more good than all the yakking at them had done for years.

187. Deliver us Lord from this spirit of "busyness"--too busy for You, & too busy for your Prophet.

188. If you keep running around trying to see everybody & do everything, you're in trouble.

189. You have to die to self & some of the things you want to do & say "Lord, I'm going to have to leave that up to someone else in order to do the things You want me to do!"

190. We have to shepherd the Family. And part of the Shepherd's job is not only feeding the Sheep, but shearing the sheep, & in some cases milking the sheep. He's also got to lead them & guide them with definite administration & oversight.

191. Even in the Early Church they had bishops & elders & deacons & overseers & apostles, prophets, pastors, evangelists, teachers, all kinds of officers & officials that had to shepherd the sheep. So we have to not only publish materials to feed the Family, but we have the responsibility of leading them, overseeing them & administering them right down to the local level.

192. "What is this in thy hand, Son, but the rod of authority of My Word that I have given thee that thou shalt use with love in Jesus' name."

193. If you just let people run around without any supervision, without any reports, without any check-up on what they're accomplishing, they're apt not to accomplish anything.

194. As John Kennedy said about the Bay of Pigs invasion, "It doesn't matter who's to blame, I'm the boss, so it's my fault!"

195. We've just got to get the job done, & we can't have people working for us that can't do it or won't do it or don't do it!

196. With some people you have to say, "You've got to get it done by this time & that's it!--Or else we'll get somebody else to do it! People need deadlines & ultimatums.

197. No leader, no matter who they are, should get the idea that they can get up & walk out on the Lord, that they have more important business to do than fellowshiping with the Lord & listening to the Lord & hearing the Word & fellowshiping with the rest of their family & setting a good example to the rest of the sheep.

198. If you are going to do any kind of public speaking, do your studying beforehand. Read, study, think, pray & get totally full of the subject so that when you stand up to speak, out of the fullness of the heart the mouth will speak.

199. If you're ever going to speak in front of an audience, get full of your subject, don't worry about notes & speak out of the fullness of your heart & God will inspire you & lead you.

200. To get the whole story on a subject you've got to put everybody's story together & you've got to have everybody's opinion. You must be tolerant of the opinions of others.

201. Always qualify your lessons & always say, "Well, maybe none of this is going to work for you. Maybe none of this is true in your case or that of your disciples or your children. But this is the way it happened to me, this is the way it happened to So-&-so & this is the way it happened to most of them & therefore this is the way it will probably happen." Get away from dogmatism. Get away from rigidity, get away from dictatorship. Get away from systematic, rigid, formal, frozen conventionalism. You must allow for differences & freedom.

202. Do what is most important that you have to do first, & the most important thing is for you to keep other people busy, to keep them on their job & doing what they're supposed to be doing.

203. The job of a deacon is to tend the tables, to see the need. It's their job to look at the waves to see how high they are & how deep they are & how bad the storm is & let us know. It's our job as spiritual leaders to keep our eyes on the Lord & find out the answers. We're the Apostles of God, the leaders, & the ones who should be giving our time to the Word & prayer & getting answers from God!

204. One man or woman of God, inspired by the Spirit of God, can have better wisdom to run whole countries of this World than any of their present Worldly politicians.--And one of these days that's what you're going to be doing!

205. When the Lord gets sick & fed-up with all the bigshots who are now running the World, He's going to toss them all in the ash can & use you to run it!

206. Let the Letters be the leaders! Let the local areas operate on their own. Let them take care of their own finances & their own supervision & their own leadership & their own government.

207. Job 9:20 applies to a situation where you are wrong but you're trying to prove you're right. It should not be used as an excuse for keeping people from giving a legitimate humble explanation for their actions in a certain situation.

208. Leaders ought to certainly be thinking about the work they're doing & how to save time & money & work & personnel, how to make shortcuts, cut downs, cut outs in some cases. Leaders should do that sort of thing in their particular area of responsibility, whatever it may be.

(See also No.18, 24, 25, 26, 31, 38, 39, 47, 48, 49, 52, 71, 75, 98, 113, 124, 126, 127, 143, 154, 154A, 156C, 161, 210, 213, 233, 244, 263, 297, 302B, 315A, 328C, 329C, 337A, 354, 546, 606, 653, 662, 674, 675, 734, 813, 962, 974, 985, 1001, 1002, 1250, 1367, 1380, 1442, 1547.)

209. DEU.1:17 Ye shall not respect persons in judgment; but ye shall hear the small as well as the great; ye shall not be afraid of the face of man; for the judgment is God's: and the cause that is too hard for you, bring it unto me and I will hear it.

210. JDG.21:25 In those days there was no king in Israel: every man did that which was right in his own eyes.

211. 2SA.23:3,4 The God of Israel said, the Rock of Israel spake to me, He that ruleth over men must be just, ruling in the fear of God. And he shall be as the light of the morning, when the sun riseth, even a morning without clouds; as the tender grass springing out of the earth by clear shining after rain.

212. PSA.75:6,7 For promotion cometh neither from the east, nor from the west, nor from the south. But God is the judge: He putteth down one, and setteth up another.

213. PRO.20:28 Mercy and truth preserve the king; and his throne is upholden by mercy.

214. PRO.27:23 Be thou diligent to know the state of thy flocks, and look well to thy herds.

215. PRO.29:14 The king that faithfully judgeth the poor, his throne shall be established for ever.

216. JER.3:15 And I will give you pastors according to Mine heart, which shall feed you with knowledge and understanding.

217. JER.23:4 And I will set up shepherds over them which shall feed them: and they shall fear no more, nor be dismayed, neither shall they be lacking, saith the Lord.

218. MAT.20:26,27 Whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister; And whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant.

219. MAR.9:35 And he sat down, and called the twelve, and saith unto them, If any man desire to be first, the same shall be last of all, and servant of all.

220. MAR.10:42-45 But Jesus called them to Him, and saith unto them, Ye know that they which are accounted to rule over the Gentiles exercise lordship over them; and their great ones exercise authority upon them. But so shall it not be among you: but whosoever will be great among you, shall be your minister: And whosoever of you will be the chiefest, shall be servant of all. For even the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give His life a ransom for many.

221. LUK.15:4 What man of you, having an hundred sheep, if he lose one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wilderness, and go after that which is lost, until he find it?

222. JOH.10:4 And when He putteth forth His own sheep, He goeth before them, and the sheep follow Him: for they know His voice.

223. JOH.10:12 But he that is an hireling, and not the shepherd, whose own the sheep are not, seeth the wolf coming, and leaveth the sheep, and fleeth: and the wolf catcheth them, and scattereth the sheep.

224. JOH.10:14,15 I am the good shepherd, and know My sheep, and am known of Mine. As the Father knoweth Me, even so know I the Father: and I lay down My life for the sheep.

225. JOH.21:16b Lovest thou Me? He saith unto Him, Yea, Lord; Thou knowest that I love Thee. He saith unto him, Feed My sheep.

226. ACT.15:36 And some days after Paul said unto Barnabas, Let us go again and visit our brethren in every city where we have preached the Word of the Lord, and see how they do.

227. ACT.20:28 Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which He hath purchased with His Own blood.

228. 1CO.4:10 We are fools for Christ's sake, but ye are wise in Christ; we are weak, but ye are strong; ye are honourable, but we are despised.

229. 1CO.6:3 Know ye not that we shall judge angels? how much more things that pertain to this life?

230. 2CO.6:3 Giving no offence in any thing, that the ministry be not blamed.

231. GAL.6:1 Brethren, if a man be overtaken in a fault, ye which are spiritual, restore such an one in the spirit of meekness; considering thyself, lest thou also be tempted.

232. 1TH.2:7 But we were gentle among you, even as a nurse cherisheth her children.

233. 1TH.2:10,11 Ye are witnesses, and God also, how holily and justly and unblameably we behaved ourselves among you that believe: As ye know how we exhorted and comforted and charged every one of you, as a father doth his children.

234. 1TH.5:12,13 And we beseech you, brethren, to know them which labour among you, and are over you in the Lord, and admonish you; And to esteem them very highly in love for their work's sake. And be at peace among yourselves.

235. 1TI.3:2-7 A bishop then must be blameless, the husband of one wife, vigilant, sober, of good behaviour, given to hospitality, apt to teach; Not given to wine, no striker, not greedy of filthy lucre; but patient, not a brawler, not covetous; One that ruleth well his own house, having his children in subjection with all gravity; (For if a man know not how to rule his own house, how shall he take care of the church of God?) Not a novice, lest being lifted up with pride he fall into the condemnation of the Devil. Moreover he must have a good report of them which are without; lest he fall into reproach and the snare of the Devil.

236. 1TI.5:1 Rebuke not an elder, but intreat him as a father; and the younger men as brethren.

237. 1TI.5:8 But if any provide not for his own, and specially for those of his own house, he hath denied the faith, and is worse than an infidel.

238. 1TI.5:17-19 Let the elders that rule well be counted worthy of double honour, especially they who labour in the Word and doctrine. For the Scripture saith, Thou shalt not muzzle the ox that treadeth out the corn. And, The labourer is worthy of his reward. Against an elder receive not an accusation, but before two or three witnesses.

239. 2TI.2:2 And the things that thou hast heard of me among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithful men, who shall be able to teach others also.

240. 2TI.2:24 And the servant of the Lord must not strive; but be gentle unto all men, apt to teach, patient.

241. 2TI.4:2b Reprove, rebuke, exhort with all longsuffering and doctrine.

242. TIT.1:7-9 For a bishop must be blameless, as the steward of God; not selfwilled, not soon angry, not given to wine, no striker, not given to filthy lucre; But a lover of hospitality, a lover of good men, sober, just, holy, temperate; Holding fast the faithful Word as he hath been taught, that he may be able by sound doctrine both to exhort and to convince the gainsayers.

243. HEB.13:7 Remember them which have the rule over you, who have spoken unto you the Word of God: whose faith follow, considering the end of their conversation.

244. JAM.3:1 My brethren, be not many masters, knowing that we shall receive the greater condemnation.

245. 1PE.5:2,3 Feed the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight thereof, not by constraint, but willingly; not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind; Neither as being lords over God's heritage, but being ensamples to the flock.

(See also EXO.19:7,8; JOS.1:1-9; JDG.6:11-16; 2CH.1:6-12; ROM.13:1-7.)

